

This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + Refrain from automated querying Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at http://books.google.com/

HN 3KN3 3 DIGITO CHARGE SCHOOL

REVISED

OLLENDORFF METHOD

CLEARNING SPANISH

OCCURRED CONSCIDENCES

KD 23465

25 25 1920 1875 1899

Grace Sproue

- کرنے کیٹرڈ کر - معالم میں ایک

46

THE

REVISED OLLENDORFF METHOD

AN EASY SYSTEM FOR LEARNING TO READ, WRITE, AND SPEAK

THE SPANISH LANGUAGE

WITH A SUCCINCT STATEMENT OF THE ELEMENTS OF SPANISH GRAMMAR; TOGETHER WITH TABLES OF ALL THE DECLENSIONS AND CONJUGATIONS, AND A COMPLETE LIST OF IRREGULAR VERBS

BY

M. VELÁZQUEZ AND T. SIMONNÉ

NEW YORK AND LONDON

D. APPLETON AND COMPANY

1916

KD 23465



COPYRIGHT, 1901,
By D. APPLETON AND COMPANY.

Printed in the United States of America

CONTENTS

Introduction	•							•	•	. 1-8
LESSONS I TO	LXX	ΚXV				•	•	•	•	. 9–325
Some Pract	ical]	ldiom	8		•				•	. 325-330
Modelos de	Cart	as Me	rcan	tiles						. 831–337
Cartas Fam	iliar	98								. 837-341
ELEMENTS										. 845
Preliminary	Rer	narks							•	. 845
THE ARTICLE										. 845-847
THE NOUN										. 847-854
Gender										. 847-350
Formation of	of the	Fem	inin	e of N	Touns	desi	gnati	ng P	erson	s 851-852
Number										. 352–354
THE ADJECTION	VE									. 354-365
Number								•		. 354–355
Gender							_			. 355-356
Apocopation	n of	Adiec	tives	١.				•		. 356-357
The Positio		•								. 357-358
Comparison			•				•		•	. 358–362
Numerals				•	•	•	•	•	•	. 362–364
Fractionals		•		•				•	•	. 364
Multiplicati	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	. 365
THE PROPORTS		•	•	•	•	•				. 865–383
The Person	•	ง กากการ		•	•	•	•	•	•	. 865–869
Pleonastic 1			-	•	•	•	•	•	•	. 869-870
The Reflexi				10	•	•	•	•	•	. 370–371
The Possess				•	•	•	•	_	•	. 372–374
The Demon				· nn	•	•	•	•	•	. 374–375
The Relativ				um	•	•	•	•	•	. 375–377
The Interro			•	·	•	•	•	•	•	. 377–378
The Indefin	_				•	•	•	•	•	. 378–388
+ 40 THROUGH	IVO I	TOHOL	ш	•	•	•	•	•	!!!	~
								Digiti	ized by	Joogle

											PAGE
	E VERB .		•	• .	•	•	•	•		•	383-429
	Conjugation o					er, tei	ner, s	er, es	tar	-	383–385
	Peculiar Uses		е Го	ur Ve	rbs	•	•	•	•	•	385–387
	The Regular			•		•	•	•	•	•	387
	${f Terminations}$							•	•		387–388
	The First Co							•	•	-	389–392
	The Second C									•	392– 395
	The Third Co			Parad	igm	vivi	r.	•	•		395–398
	Inflectional V				•	•	•				399-402
	Passive Conju				•	•	•	•	•		403-407
	Reflexive Cor		n	•	•	•	•	•	•		407-411
,	Impersonal V	erbs		•			•				411-418
	Irregular Ver	bs .	•	•	•		•	•	•		418
	Four Stems o			Verbs			•		•		418-414
	Irregular Imj	perative	8.				•				415
	Preterits Irre	gularly	Acc	ented	•	•	•	•			415
	Irregular Fut			•		•	•		•		415
	Regular Irreg	gular Ve	erbs	•				•	•		416
	First Class .	•	•		•				•		416-417
i	Second Class			•		•		•	•		417-418
	Third Class.	•		•	•	•	•	•			418
	Fourth Class		•	•		•		•	•		419
	Fifth Class .			•	•			•			419-420
	Sixth Class .							•			421-422
	Seventh Class	в.			•		•				422
	Conjugation	of very	Irres	gular '	Verk	8.	•				422-429
	E ADVERB .		. `	•							429-436
	Peculiar Use	of Certa	ain A	dverb	8						433-435
	Comparison o	f Adve	rbs	•							435-486
	E PREPOSITIO										437-439
-	IE CONJUNCTI										440-441
	ie Interject						•				441
	LPHABETICAL		ENCE	LIST	OF	ALL	THE	IRRI	EGULA	R	
	Verbs .		•		•		•	•			443
Ť		•	-	-	•	•	•	-	-		ARR

INTRODUCTION

ORTHOGRAPHY AND PRONUNCIATION

THE ALPHABET

THE Spanish alphabet consists of twenty-eight letters.

Ch, ll, and rr, though double in form, are single letters, and may not be separated. W is found in foreign words only, and is pronounced as in English.

The student should not at first attempt to learn the Spanish names of the letters, but merely their sounds, or orthographical force.

This is the alphabet:

f

A,	a,	ah.	M,	m,	ěm'-may.
В,	b,	bay.	N,	n,	ěn'-nay.
C,	c,	thay.	Ñ,	ñ,	ěn'-yay.
Ch,	ch,	tchay.	Ο,	ο,	ō.
D,	d,	day.	Ρ,	p,	pay.
E,	е,	ay.	Q,	q,	kõo.
F,	f,	ĕf'-fay.	R,	r,	ér'-ray.
G,	g,	hay.	S,	s,	ĕs'-say.
Н,	h,	ăt'-chay.	Т,	t,	tay.
I,	i,	ē.	U,	u,	<i>∞</i> .
J,	j,	hō'-tah.	V,	٧,	vay.
K,	k,	kah.	. X,	x,	ĕh'-kee s.
L,	l,	ěľ-lay.	Υ,	y,	ē-gree-ay'-gah.
LL,	11,	ĕl'-yay.	Z,	z,	thay'-tah.

The vowels have but one quality of sound.

A ordinarily has the sound of a in land; as, animal, ano; but when it is followed by two consonants in the same word, or stands at the end of a word and is unaccented, it has a slightly broader sound, as a in father; as, martes,

carta, botica. Care must be taken to maintain the vocal organs in such a position as not to permit the slightest variation in similarly placed a's.

B, when correctly sounded, is the same as in English; but it is frequently given the sound of English v, caused by the failure to place the lips closely together during utterance. This should be avoided.

C is hard, like k, when followed by a, o, u, or any consonant; as, caballo, coronel, cura, criatura; before e and i it has the sound of th in think; as, cera, gracia. A very common fault in the pronunciation of soft c (i. e., c before e and i) and c obtains extensively outside of Spain, they being given the sound of s in us.

When c occurs before the diphthongs ua, ue, or ui, it has the sound of q; as, cuando, cueva, cuidado.

Ch, a single consonant, which may not be divided, has the sound of ch in chess; as, chico, muchacho. In old Spanish it had the sound of k in certain words taken from Hebrew or Greek, in which case the succeeding vowel was marked with the circumflex accent, as archd'ngel, chi'mica; this custom has been abandoned, and such words are now written with a c before a, o, and u, and qu before e and i; as, arcángel, quimica.

D has two sounds: between two vowels and at the end of words, it has the sound of th in that; as, ido, amad; but care must be had not to give this d the sound of th in thick. In all other cases d has the same sound as in English; as, dar, divino, Andrés.

E ordinarily has the sound of e in they; as, era, pero; but in a closed syllable—that is, one which terminates in a consonant—it has the sound of e in rest; as, el, es, sed. An exception to this is found in certain words of more than one syllable which end in s or z, preceded by an accented e, as inglés, Andrés, where the e has the sound of e in they, even though it occurs in a closed syllable.

F has the sound of the English f, is invariable, and is now used to replace ph; as, filosofo, instead of philosopho.

G has two distinct sounds: before a, o, u, or another consonant, it has the simple, easy sound of g in good, get; as,

gato, gota, gusano, grito, grupa; before e and i it is a guttural, having no equivalent in English, but most nearly approached by the strongly aspirated h, as in such words as hot, holy, yet this only approximates the sound; as, gente, giro.

H is always silent; as, hace, Habana; which are pronounced exactly as if no h were present. It is supposed to be preserved as a sign to indicate the origin of words, yet it is even now omitted from many words in which it was formerly used; as, teatro, Cristo. It is always written before words beginning with the sounds ue and ui, and, with three exceptions (uaránido, uarano, ualita), before ua.

I is invariable in sound, and is the same as i in machine; as, alli, sino.

J is always a guttural, and has the same sound as the Spanish g before e and i. (See letter G.)

K is placed in the Spanish alphabet, though it is properly not a Spanish letter, since it occurs in foreign words only. It has the same sound as in English; as, kilogramo.

L is the same as in English; as, lana, luna, ala.

LL is a single letter, and may never be divided. In the conservative circles of Spain it has a liquid sound, similar to ll in brilliant, billiand; as, caballo, brillante; but just as the soft c and z have changed elsewhere, so the ll has undergone a change and now very generally has the sound of y with a slight rough breathing; as, saltillo, pronounced sal-ti-yo.

M and N are the same as in English; as, mano, normal. \tilde{N} has the sound of ni in the English word opinion; as, cafion, can-yōn'.

O is invariable in sound, and is like the o in lord—not the o of note nor that of top, but a medial between these; as todo, amo.

P has the sound of p in English.

Q is now used before ue and ui only, where it has the force of k; as, queso, quiza; in all other cases it has been replaced by c; as, cuanto, cuando.

R between two vowels has the same sound as the English r save that it is softer. It can be acquired only by

close attention; as, pero. At the beginning or end of a word, and when it occurs as the initial letter of the second section of a compound word, or when it follows another consonant, it must be trilled. This is done by forcing the breath through the mouth while the tongue is being vibrated against the gums and upper teeth; as, rio, amar, Monterey, fruto, tres.

RR is a single letter, and must not be divided. It is always trilled, as described above; as, hierro, perro.

S has the sound of s in say and is invariable; as, sabio, mesa. The Spanish s never has the English z or sh sound which is so common in such words as houses, pension.

T is the same as in English.

U is invariable in sound and is like the u in rule; as, luna, duro; it is silent in the syllables gue, gui, except when it has a dieresis; as vergüenza. It is always silent in the syllables que and qui; as, queso, quien.

V has the sound of the English v. (Compare B.)

X at the close of a syllable has the sound of the x in tax; as, exposición. At the beginning of a word or syllable x has the sound of the Spanish j; as, Oaxaca. (Compare letter J.) In old Spanish and among the illiterate today we find x, when it comes before a consonant, often replaced by s; as, estranjero for extranjero. This is not authorized by the grammar of the Spanish Academy.

Y, when it stands at the beginning of a word or syllable, is a consonant and has the sound of the English y in the same position; as, Yucatán, yegua; it is a vowel when it stands alone, and when it takes the place of i at the end of words in the combinations ai, ei, oi, ui; as, verdegay, rey, soy, muy. In old Spanish such words commonly ended in i.

Y was formerly used as a vowel at the beginning of certain words, and especially in script; as, yglesia, Yrapuato; but in such cases the y has given place to i; as, iglesia, Irapuato.

Z has the sound of the Spanish soft c, that is, c before e or i; in fact, it is the same letter; and in modern orthography takes the place of soft e before e, e, e and certain

consonants. Like the soft c it has undergone a change of sound in many countries and localities. In correct Castillian it has the sound of th in thistle; this is often changed to that of s in last; as, corazón, hizo. Z should never be given the sound of the English z, nor that of the English s in has.

The student should note that there are no silent letters except h in the Spanish language.

VOWELS

The vowels, the sound of which must always be brought out with accuracy and precision, are as follows:

a, e, i, o, u, and y (in certain positions). (See letter Y above.)

SYLLABLES

Only such syllables are given here as might give rise to uncertainty in spelling or pronunciation.

ca,	que,	qui,	co,	cu,
kah.	<i>kay</i> .	<i>kee</i> .	<i>ko</i> .	<i>koo</i> .
za,	ce,	ci,	zo,	zu,
thah.	thay.	thee.	thō.	thoo.
az,	ez,		oz.	uz,
ath.	ěth.	eeth.	oth.	ooth.
ga,	gue,	gui, ghee.	go,	gu,
gah.	gay.		<i>go</i> .	goo.
ja,	ge,	gi,	jo,	ju,
hah.	hay.	hee.	<i>ho</i> .	<i>hoo</i> .
уа.	ye.	yi.	yo.	yu.
cha,	che,	chi,	cho,	chu,
tchah.	<i>tchay</i> .	<i>tchee</i> .	<i>tcho</i> .	<i>tchoo</i> .
lla,	lle,	lli,	llo,	llu,
<i>lyah</i> .	<i>lyay</i> .	<i>lyee</i> .	<i>lyo</i> .	<i>lyoo</i> .
ña,	fie,	Ni,	ño,	ñu,
nyah.	<i>nyai</i> .	nye.	<i>nyo</i> .	<i>nyoo</i> .
cua.	cue,	cui,	cuo,	
<i>kwah</i> .	<i>kway</i> .	<i>kwee</i> .	<i>kwo</i> .	
gua,	güe,	güi,	guo,	
gwah	<i>gway</i> .	<i>gwee</i> .	<i>gwo</i> .	

DIPHTHONGS

ai,	as in	dabais,	dah'-bah-eess.	You gave.
ay,	44	hay,	ah'-ē.	There is.
au,	"	pausa,	pah'-oo-sa.	Pause.
61,	"	veis,	vai'-eess.	You see.
ey,	44	ley.	lai'-ē.	Law.
eu,	u	deuda,	dai'-oo-da.	Debt.
ia,	"	gracia,	grah'-thē-a.	Grace.
ie,	"	cielo,	thē-ai'-lo.	Heaven.
io,	"	precio,	prai'-thē-o.	Price.
iu,	u	ciudad,	thē-oo-dath'.	City.
oi,	"	sois,	80'-ee88.	You are.
oy,	"	voy,	vo'-e.	I go.
ua,	"	fragua,	frah'-gwah.	Forge.
ие,	"	dueño,	doo-ain'-yo.	Owner.
ui,	"	ruido,	roo-ë'-do.	Noise.
uy,	"	muy,	moo'-ë.	Very.
160,	"	arduo,	ar'-doo-o.	Arduous.

Triphthongs

iai,	as in	preciáis,	prai-thē-ah'-eess.
iei,	"	vaciéis,	vah-thē-ai'-eess.
uai,	"	santiguáis,	san-tē-gwah'-eess.
uay,	"	Paraguáy,	pah-rah-gwah'-ē.
uei,	44	averigüéis,	ah-vai-rē-gwai'-eess,
uey.	4	buey,	bwai'-ē.

DOUBLE LETTERS

C, e, i, and n are the only letters that may be doubled in simple words. It should be remembered that ll and rr are not double letters, though double in form.

SYLLABICATION

Accuracy in pronunciation depends much on the method followed in the division of words into syllables, and on precision of vocal utterance. Let the following rules be observed:

- 1. Nearly all syllables begin with a consonant, and words should be so divided, both in speech and writing, as to conform to this rule; as, se-nor, pa-tio.
- 2. Ch, ll, and rr, as well as all diphthongs and triphthongs, must never be divided in writing.
- 3. Special effort should be made to place the stress sharply on the accented syllable, and to sever the different syllables, particularly when a preceding syllable closes, and the following one begins with a consonant; as men-te, car-ta.

PUNCTUATION AND CAPITALS

Spanish is not so lavish in its use of either punctuation marks or capitals as English. The marks of punctuation are the same as in English, with the addition of the inverted signs of interrogation and exclamation, which are placed at the beginning of interrogatory and exclamatory sentences, phrases, and words; as i Es usted rico? Are you rich? and i Qué noche tan obscura! What a dark night!

Proper nouns begin with capitals, but proper adjectives such as *el ruso*, the Russian, do not. The names of the months and the names of the days of the week begin with small letters.

ACCENTUATION

The following are the rules for accent:

- 1. A word which ends with a vowel is accented on the syllable next to the last; as, mano, hand.
- 2. A word which ends with a consonant is accented on the last syllable; as, amar, to love, animal, animal.
- 3. When the accent falls elsewhere than as indicated above, the syllable so accented must have a graphic (written) accent; as. alii, there; huerfano, orphan (a departure from Rule 1); miércoles, Wednesday (a departure from Rule 2).
- 4. When n or s stands at the end of a word, it is treated as a vowel; and any word terminating in either of these letters, and accented on any other than the syllable next to the last, must have a graphic accent; so, germen, germ, antes, before, have not a written accent; while corazón, heart, and interés, interest, have.

- 5. When ia, io, ua, uo, or ie stands at the end of a word of more than one syllable, it is treated as a simple vowel for purposes of accent, and falls under Rule 1; as, hacia, toward, continuo, continuous. Note, however, that this is not true of ea, eo, oa, or oe.
- 6. A word terminating in ia, io, ua, uo, or ie, and accented on the first vowel, has a graphic accent; as, dia, day, envio. I send.
- 7. A written accent is placed on one of the vowels of a diphthong or triphthong, to indicate that this vowel is accented and not another, on which the accent would naturally fall; as, oido, heard, pais, country.
- 8. A written accent is used to distinguish from each other a few words which, though similar in form, have a different meaning; as, $m\acute{a}s$, more, from mas, but; $t\acute{u}$, thou, from tu, thy; el, the, from $\acute{e}l$, he; and $s\acute{t}$, yes, from $s\acute{t}$, if.
- 9. When an adverb, ending in -mente, is formed from an adjective which bears a written accent, this accent must be preserved in the adverb; as, práctico, practical, prácticamente, practically. The two words carácter and régimen are irregularly accented in the plural, as they become caracteres and regimenes.

OLLENDORFF'S SPANISH METHOD

FIRST LESSON—Lección Primera

The.
Of or from the.
To or at the.
Have you?
Yes, Sir, I have.
The hat.

Have you the hat?
You (sing.).

El (masc. sing.).

Del (contr. from de el).

Al (contr. from á el).

Tiene usted f

Sí, señor; yo tengo.

El sombrero.

Tiene usted el sombrero f

Usted.

Usted, you, contracted from vuestra merced, your honor, is the usual pronoun of the second person, serving as a term of address in direct discourse, though in reality it is a third person and always takes the third person of the verb. This is easy to comprehend when the original meaning is kept in mind; as, Usted habla mucho, Your honor speaks much, where the third person of the verb is used to agree with honor: nevertheless the modern idea of this word is simply you. It is the commonest modern term of address between social equals in both speech and literature. At present it is used invariably, except in the following cases: in the family circle. among intimate friends, in the address of the master to the menial servant, and usually in poetry, where tú, for the singular, and vosotros, for the plural, are used. Tu and vos are also used in addressing the Deity. Vosotros is the form employed by the public speaker in addressing his hearers as a mass, or tu when he would single out and apostrophize one of them.

Vos was formerly current among all classes of society as a term of individual address; this is now limited to persons of exalted rank.

Corporations and those of high title are often addressed as usias, your lordships, as also in speaking to those of elevated title, as usia.

When one is in doubt as to what form to use in conversation, let him adopt *usted*, as this is always appropriate and can not give offense.

In translating ancient history into Spanish usted must be avoided, since it is a comparatively modern word. You in such cases must be rendered by tú, vosotros, vos, vuestra merced, etc.

Usted, which will be written in full in the first few lessons of this method, is commonly abbreviated thus: V., Vd., Ud. for the singular, and Vds. and Uds. for the plural.

I.
The bread.
The cane.
The soap.
The sugar.
The paper.
Have you the paper?
Yes, Sir, I have the paper.
Have you my hat?
Yes, I have your hat.
My.

El pan.
El bastón.
El jabón.
El azúcar.
El papel.
Tiene usted el papel ?
Sí, señor, yo tengo el papel.
Tiene usted mi sombrero ?
Sí, yo tengo su sombrero de usted.

Mi (masc. and fem.).

Yo.

Your Su de usted su is used with either masculine El de usted or feminine nouns.

Have you your cane?
I have my cane.
Have you my paper?
I have your paper.

What hat have you?
What or Which?
Which bread have you?
I have my bread.
Which cane have you?

I have your cane.

Tengo mi bastón.

Tiene usted mi papel?
Yo tengo su papel de usted, or el papel de usted.

Qué sombrero tiene usted?
Qué pan tiene usted?
Yo tengo mi pan.
Qué bastón tiene usted?
Tengo el bastón de usted, or
Tengo su bastón de usted.

▲ Tiene usted su bastón ?

CONVERSACIÓN—Conversation

1. ¿ Tiene usted el sombrero? Tengo mi sombrero. 2. ¿ Tiene usted mi pan? Tengo el pan de usted. 3. ¿ Qué pan

tiene usted? Tengo su pan de usted. 4. ¿ Tiene usted su jabón? Sí, señor, tengo mi jabón. 5. ¿ Qué azúcar tiene usted? Yo tengo el azucar de asted. 6. ¿ Tiene usted el papel? Si, señor, tengo el papel. 7. ¿ Tiene usted su sombrero? Sí, señor, tengo mi sombrero.

EXERCISE

1. Have you the hat? Yes, Sir, I have the hat. 2. Have you my hat? I have your hat. 3. Have you the bread? I have the bread. 4. Have you your bread? I have my bread. 5. Have you my cane? I have your cane. Which cane have you? I have your cane. 7. Which soap have you? Your soap, Sir. 8. Have you my paper? I have your paper. 9. Which sugar have you, Sir? I have my sugar. Sir.

SECOND LESSON—Lección Segunda

Have you the paper ? A Tiene usted el papel? Have you it? Lo tiene usted ? I have it. Lo tengo.

Tt. Lo, (this pronoun usually goes before the verb).

Tiene usted mi sombrero ! Have you my hat?

Yes, Sir, I have it. Sí, señor, yo lo tengo. The cloth. El paño.

The shoe. El zapato. The dog. El perro. El caballo. The horse.

The leather. El cuero.

Have you my good cloth ? Tiene usted mi buen paño ?

Bueno becomes buen before a masculine singular noun. Bad.

Malo mal

Bonito. Pretty. Handsome or fine. Hermoso.

Feo. Ugly. . Old. Vieio, anciano.

A Tiene usted el perro bonito 9 Have you the pretty dog! No. Sir. No. señor.

I have not it. No.

Not.

I have not. Have you my old hat?

I have not your old hat.

Which paper have you? I have the good paper. Have you my good soap ? I have it not.

Have you the paper hat? Of.

Yo no lo tengo.

No.

No, (when it comes before a verb and is not followed by a comma).

Yo no tengo.

Tiene usted mi sombrero viejo ? Yo no tengo su sombrero viejo de

Qué papel tiene usted ? Yo tengo el buen papel.

A Tiene usted mi buen jabón ?

No lo tengo.

¿Tiene usted elsombrero de papel ? De.

Since the Spanish has no possessive case corresponding to the English 's, possession, source, material, etc., are indicated by the preposition de and a substantive: Cervantes's works, las obras de Cervantes.

This is likewise true of those cases where in English a noun is used as an adjective, which the Spanish does not permit: A brick house, una casa de ladrillo.

The leather shoe.

The gun.

The iron.

The iron gun.

The cotton.

The cap, hood.

The cotton cap.

Have you the leather shoe ?

My old iron gun.

Your pretty cotton cap.

El zapato de cuero.

El fusil.

El hierro. El fusil de hierro.

El algodón.

El gorro.

El gorro de algodón.

Tiene usted el zapato de cuero f

Mi fusil viejo de hierro.

Su bonito gorro de algodón de

El bonito gorro de algodón de nstad.

CONVERSACIÓN

1. ¿ Tiene usted su zapato viejo? No, señor, no lo tengo. 2. ¿ Qué caballo tiene usted? Tengo el buen caballo de usted. 3. ¿ Tiene usted mi gorro? No lo tengo. 4. ¿ Tiene usted mi feo gorro de algodón? No, no lo tengo. 5. ¿ Tiene usted el buen paño? Sí, lo tengo. 6. ¿ Qué paño tiene usted? Yo tengo su bonito paño de usted. 7. ¿ Tiene usted mi buen jabón? 'No, señor, yo tengo el mal jabón de usted. 8. ¿ Tiene usted su buen fusil? Yo no lo tengo. 9. ¿ Qué fusil tiene usted? Yo tengo el viejo fusil de hierro. 10. ¿ Tiene usted el bonito zapato de cuero? No, yo no lo tengo. 11. ¿ Tiene usted su caballo viejo? No, no lo tengo. 12. ¿ Tiene usted mi perro viejo? No, señor, no tengo el perro viejo de usted; tengo su buen perro.

EXERCISE

1. Have you my fine horse? Yes, Sir, I have it. 2. Have you my pretty leather shoe? I have it. 3. Which shoe have you? I have my ugly leather shoe. 4. Have you your bad cap? Yes, I have it. 5. Which cap have you? I have the paper cap. 6. Have you my fine cloth? No, Sir, I have it not. 7. Have you your old soap? I have it not, Sir. 8. Which soap have you? I have your old soap. 9. Have you my old iron gun? I have it. 10. Have you my cloth cap? Yes, Sir, I have your pretty cloth cap. 11. Which leather shoe have you? I have the ugly leather shoe. 12. Which horse have you? I have my fine horse.

THIRD LESSON-Lección Tercera

Have you anything f
I have something.
Anything, something.
I have nothing.
I have not anything.

Tiene usted algo? or alguna cosa. Yo tengo algo.

Alguna cosa, algo.

Yo no tengo nada.

Yo nada tengo (or no tengo ninguna cosa).

Nothing, not anything.

Unlike English, the Spanish usually takes two negatives, one before and one after the verb. When *nada* is used alone it precedes the verb, otherwise it follows:

Nada.

I have nothing. Nada tengo (or no tengo nada).

The nominative personal pronoun is usually omitted, except when necessary for the sake of emphasis or clearness, as the form of the verb generally indicates the person.

The wine.
The money.
The gold.
The button.
The gold button.
The coffee.
The cheese.
The candlestick.
The gold candlestick.

The gold candlestick.

Have you anything good?

I have nothing good.

Are you hungry ?
I am hungry.

I am not hungry.

Are you thirsty?
I am not thirsty.
Are you sleepy?
I am sleepy.
Are you ashamed?
I am not ashamed.
What have you?

What good thing have you?

El vino.
El dinero.
El oro.
El botón.

El botón de oro. El café.

El queso. El candelero.

El candelero de oro.

Tiene usted algo bueno (or de bueno, or alguna cosa buena).
Yo no tengo nada de bueno (or

nada de bueno tengo).

**Tiene usted hambre f

Yo tengo hambre (or tengo hambre).

No tengo hambre, † Tiene usted sed † No tengo sed. † Tiene usted sueño † Tengo sueño.

¿Tiene usted vergüenza? No tengo vergüenza.

Qué tiene usted !

¿ Qué tiene usted de bueno?

When adjectives partake of the nature of nouns, as in the cases where the word *thing* is used in English in connection with an adjective, the proposition *de* is frequently used before the adjective:

What bad thing have you?

¿ Qué tiene usted malo ? (or de malo).

I have nothing bad.

No tengo nada malo (or de malo).

CONVERSACIÓN

1. ¿ Tiene usted el oro viejo? No lo tengo. 2. ¿ Qué tiene usted? Tengo el dinero. 3. ¿ Tiene usted mi queso añejo? (old). Lo tengo. 4. ¿ Tiene usted su feo botón de hierro? No, yo no lo tengo. 5. ¿ Tiene usted mi gorro de paño? No, no lo tengo. 6. ¿ Qué tiene usted feo? Tengo el perro feo. 7. ¿ Qué tiene usted bonito? Tengo el bonito

gorro de papel. 8. ¿ Tiene usted sueño? No, no tengo sueño; tengo sed. 9. ¿ Tiene usted algo bueno ? Sí, señor, tengo el buen pan de usted.

EXERCISE

1. Have you my good wine? I have it. 2. Have you anything? Yes, I have something. 3. Have you the gold candlestick? No, I have it not; I have nothing, Sir. 4. Have you anything bad? Yes, Sir, I have something bad; I have bad coffee. 5. What have you? I have the gold candlestick. 6. Have you anything handsome? No, Sir, I have something ugly. 7. Have you anything old? I have nothing old; I have something pretty. 8. Are you hungry? Yes, I am hungry. 9. Are you ashamed? No. I am sleepy.

FOURTH LESSON—Lección Cuarta

Have you that book? I have that book.

That.

That horse.

That money.

That cloth cap.

That old dog.

That pretty paper hat. Have you the bread of the baker? I Tiene usted el pan del panadero?

Of the tailor.

Of the neighbor.

Have you the cloth of the tailor! I Tiene usted el paño del sastre!

The tailor's cloth.

The neighbor's cap.

My tailor's dog.

That neighbor's horse.

Have you my neighbor's cap ?

Have you that tailor's cloth? Have you the neighbor's ? That of, or the one of, or the 's.

The neighbor's.

My tailor's.

Tiene usted ese libro ?

Tengo ese libro.

Ese.

Ese caballo.

Ese dinero.

Ese gorro de paño.

Ese perro viejo.

Ese bonito sombrero de papel.

Del sastre.

Del vecino.

El paño del sastre.

El sombrero del vecino.

El perro de mi sastre.

El caballo de ese vecino.

Tiene usted el gorro de mi ve-

cino 1

L'Tiene usted el paño de ese sastre?

I Tiene usted el del vecino ?

El del, or el de.

El del vecino.

El de mi sastre.

That tailor's.

Your brother's.

Brother.
The man.

El de ese sastre.

El de su hermano de usted

Hermano. El hombre.

Have you my bread or the baker's \dagger Tiene usted mi pan δ el del panadero \dagger

Or.

Ó, (ú before words beginning with o or ho).

I have your neighbor's. Have you yours or mine? I have mine; I have not yours. Yo tengo el de su vecino de usted. ¿Tiene usted el suyo ó el mío? Yo tengo el mío, no tengo el de

usted.

Mine, or my own. Yours. El mío. · El suyo (or el de usted).

Mio and suyo are used when the possessive pronoun stands alone, referring to some noun already mentioned or understood.

El suyo is used when usted has been expressed in the first part of the phrase; but el de usted must be used when usted has not been expressed.

Are you warm?
I am warm.
Are you cold?
I am not cold.
Are you afraid?
I am afraid.
That coal.
My friend.
The man's.

Tiene usted calor?
Tengo calor.
Tiene usted frio?
Yo no tengo frio.
Tiene usted miedo?
Tengo miedo.
Ese carbón.

Mi amigo.

El del hombre.

Calor, frio, miedo, and sueño are nouns, and can be qualified by adjectives only, and not by adverbs.

CONVERSACIÓN

1. ¿ Qué libro tiene usted? Tengo el del vecino. 2. ¿ Tiene usted su pan ó el del panadero? No tengo el del panadero; tengo el mío. 3. ¿ Qué caballo tiene usted? Tengo el del panadero. 4. ¿ Tiene usted el bonito botón de oro de mi hermano? No lo tengo. 5. ¿ Tiene usted mi gorro de paño ó el del sastre? No tengo el de usted; tengo el del sastre. 6. ¿ Qué café tiene usted? Tengo el del vecino. 7.

¿Tiene usted el dinero de su amigo? No lo tengo; yo tengo el mío. 8. a Tiene usted frío ó calor? Tengo calor.

EXERCISE

1. Have you that book? No, Sir, I have it not. 2. Have you my cane or that of my friend? I have your friend's. 3. Have you the neighbor's horse? No, I have not the neighbor's. 4. Have you your dog or the tailor's? I have my own. 5. Which button have you? I have my cloth button, 6. Have you my brother's horse or mine? I have your brother's. 7. Have you your dog or that of the man? I have the man's. 8. Are you afraid of that dog? No. Sir. 9. Are you sleepy? I am not sleepy; I am hungry. 10. Have you your paper or mine? I have mine. 11. Which hat have you? I have that man's. 12. Which soap have you? I have your brother's old soap. 13. Have you your gold button or mine? I have not yours. 14. Are you afraid of that man? No. Sir. I am not afraid of that man. 15. Have you that man's good horse? No. Sir. I have my own.

FIFTH LESSON-Lección Quinta

The merchant. Of the shoemaker. The boy. The pencil. The chocolate.

El comerciante. Del zapatero. El muchacho. El lápiz. El chocolate.

Have you the merchant's cane or & Tiene usted el bastón del comer-

I have neither the merchant's Yo no tengo ni el bastón del comerciante ni el mío.

cane nor mine. Neither-nor.

No-ni-ni.

ciante ó el de usted?

I have neither the bread nor the Yo no tengo ni el pan ni el cheese.

queso (or ni el pan ni el queso tengo).

When no is used, it stands before the verb; but when it is not used, ni-ni must be placed before the nouns, and then the verb is placed last.

Are you hungry or thirsty? Tiene usted hambre 6 sed? I am neither hungry nor thirsty. No tengo ni hambre ni sed.

Are you warm or cold?

I am neither warm nor cold.

Have you the iron or the gold & Tiene usted el botón de hierro 6 button ?

gold button.

Have you yours or mine ?

I have neither yours nor mine.

The cork.

The corkscrew.

That umbrella.

The Frenchman.

Of the carpenter.

The wine.

or I have nothing.

The hammer.

What is the matter with you?

What have you?

L'Tiene usted calor ó frío ?

Ni calor ni frío tengo.

el de oro t

I have neither the iron nor the Ni el botón de hierro ni el de oro tengo.

> ¿Tiene usted el suyo ó el mío ? No tengo ni el de usted ni el mío.

> > El corcho.

El tirabuzón ó sacacorchos.

Ese paraguas.

El francés. Del carpintero.

El vino.

El martillo.

} Qué tiene usted !

Nothing is the matter with me, No tengo nada (or nada tengo).

CONVERSACIÓN

1. ¿ Tiene usted su lápiz ó el del muchacho? Yo no tengo ni el mío ni el del muchacho. 2. ¿ Tiene usted su paño ó el del sastre? No tengo el del sastre; yo tengo el mío. 3. ¿ Tiene usted el botón de hierro ó el de oro? No tengo ni el botón de hierro ni el de oro. 4. ¿ Qué martillo tiene usted ? Tengo el martillo de hierro. 5. ¿ Tiene usted el sombrero ó el gorro? No tengo ni el sombrero ni el gorro. 6. ¿ Tiene usted mi gorro de paño ó el de mi hermano? No tengo ni el de usted ni el de su hermano. 7. ¿ Qué libro tiene usted ? Tengo el de usted. 8. 1 Tiene usted algo bueno ó malo ? No tengo nada, ni bueno, ni malo.

EXERCISE

1. Have you my shoe or the shoemaker's? I have neither yours nor the shoemaker's. 2. Which pencil have you? I have that of the merchant. 3. Have you the bread or the wine? I have neither the bread nor the wine. 4. Which cork have you? I have my neighbor's. 5. Have you my hammer or the carpenter's? I have neither yours nor the carpenter's. 6. What have you fine? I have the Frenchman's fine umbrella. 7. Which gun have you? I have my friend's. 8. Have you the book of the Frenchman or that of the merchant? I have neither the Frenchman's nor the merchant's. 9. What is the matter with you? I am cold and hungry. 10. What has the Frenchman? He has the good corkscrew.

SIXTH LESSON—Lección Sexta

The ox. The biscuit. Of the captain. Of the cook. Have I I. You have. You have not. Am I hungry ? You are hungry. You are not hungry. Am I afraid? You are afraid. You are not afraid. You are right. I am right. You are wrong.

I am wrong. Am I right or wrong ? You are neither right nor wrong. Usted ni tiene razon ni deja de

Are you right or wrong? I am neither wrong nor right.

El buey. El bizcocho. Del capitán. Del cocinero. A Tengo yof Yo. Usted tiene. Usted no tiene. Tengo yo hambre! Usted tiene hambre. Usted no tiene hambre. I Tengo yo miedo? Usted tiene miedo. Usted no tiene miedo. Usted tiene razón. Yo tengo razón.

Usted no tiene razón.—Usted hace mal. Yo no tengo razón.—Yo hago mal.

A Tengo yo razón, ó no?

tenerla.

A Tiene usted razón, ó no? Ni tengo razón ni dejo de tenerla.

I am wrong is rendered in Spanish by I am not right, or I do ill -Yo no tengo razón, or Yo hago mal. Are you right or wrong? by Are you right, or not? Tiene usted razon, o no? and, You are neither right nor wrong, word for word is, You have neither reason nor fail to have it-Usted ni tiene razón ni deja de tenerla.

Have I the nail? You have it.

¿Tengo yo el clavo? Usted lo tiene.

You have it not.

Have I anything good ?

You have nothing good.

Have I the carpenter's hammer?

You have it not.

Have you it?

I have it not.

The mutton.
The knife.

Have you the fine one?

Have I the ugly one?

The fine one.

The ugly one.

Which one have you?
Which one have I?

Which, or which one?

Am I afraid or ashamed !

You are neither afraid ashamed.

Have I my knife or yours?

Usted no lo tiene.

Tengo yo algo (de) bueno? Usted no tiene nada (de) bueno.

¿Tengo yo el martillo del carpin-

Usted no lo tiene.

Lo tiene usted?

To tone

Lo tengo.

No lo tengo.

El carnero.

El cuchillo.

¿Tiene usted el hermoso?

¿Tengo yo el feo ?

El hermoso.

El feo.

¿Cuál tiene usted?

¿Cuál tengo yo ?

¿ Cuál 1

¿Tengo yo miedo ó vergüenza?

nor Usted no tiene ni miedo ni verguenza.

Tengo yo mi cuchillo ó el de usted?

You have neither yours nor mine. Usted no tiene ni el suyo ni el mío

CONVERSACIÓN

1. ¿ Tiene usted vergüenza? No tengo vergüenza. 2. ¿ Tiene usted mi carnero ó el del cocinero? No tengo ni el de usted ni el del cocinero. 3. ¿ Tengo yo hambre ó sed? Usted no tiene ni hambre ni sed. 4. ¿ Tengo yo algo bueno? Usted no tiene nada bueno? 5. ¿ Tengo yo el paño de usted ó el del sastre? Usted no tiene ni el mío ni el del sastre. 6. ¿ Tengo yo razón? Usted tiene razón. 7. ¿ Tengo yo el buen café ó el buen azúcar? Usted no tiene ni el buen café ni el buen azúcar. 8. ¿ Qué tengo yo bonito? Usted tiene el perro de mi amigo. 9. ¿ Tengo yo el sombrero viejo? Sí, señor, usted lo tiene. 10. ¿ Tengo yo el cuero? Sí, usted lo tiene.

EXERCISE

1. Have you my knife? Which one? The fine one. 2. Have I your biscuit? You have it not. 3. Am I afraid?

You are not afraid. 4. Which pencil have I? You have that of the Frenchman. 5. Have I your iron gun? You have it. 6. Am I right or wrong? You are neither right nor wrong; you are afraid. 7. What have I? You have nothing. 8. Which corkscrew have I? You have the old one. 9. Have I the shoemaker's leather shoe? You have not the shoemaker's; you have the captain's. 10. Has the carpenter the iron nail? He has it.

SEVENTH LESSON-Lección Séptima

Who!

Who has the pencil ?

Has the boy it?

Has he it not?

He.

¿Quién ?

¿Quién tiene el lápiz ?

¿Quién lo tiene?

Lo tiene el muchacho?

Él no lo tiene.

No lo tiene él ?

Él.

Él is the masculine pronoun of the third person singular, and is distinguished from el, the definite article, by the written accent.

Has he the hat?

He has it.

I have. You have.

He has. Have I¶

Have you !

The chicken.

The chest, the trunk.

The bag.

The waistcoat.

The ship.

The young man.

Has the young man ?

Has my friend?

Has that baker !
The rice.

The countryman, the peasant.

The servant,

L'Tiene él el sombrero ?

Él lo tiene.

Yo tengo. Usted tiene.

Él tiene.

, Tengo yo i

Tiene usted ! Tiene él.

El pollo.

El cofre, el baúl.

El costal or saco.

El chaleco.

El barco.

El joven or mozo.—Mozo means also servant, waiter, boy.

Tiene el mozo ?

Tiene mi amigo ?

¿ Tiene ese panadero ?

El arroz.

El aldeano, el paisano.

El criado,

Is the peasant hungry?
He is hungry.
Is your brother warm?
Is he ashamed?
What has he?
What has my friend?
What have I?
Has he his shoe?
Yes, Sir, he has his shoe.
His.
His bird.
His foot.

His or his own.

Which book has that man ?

His eye.

He has his own.

Has he his or mine? He has neither his nor yours.

Has he his money? Yes, he has his own. Has anybody my money?

No, Sir, nobody has it. Somebody, anybody. Some one, any one. Nobody, not anybody. No one, not any one. ¿Tiene hambre el aldeano?

& Tiene calor su hermano de usted?

¡Tiene él vergüenza? ¡Qué tiene él ?

¿ Qué tiene mi amigo ?

Qué tengo yof

¿Tiene él su zapato? Sí, señor, tiene su zapato.

Su. (Adjective pronoun.)

Su pájaro. Su pie.

Su ojo.

¿ Qué libro tiene ese hombre ? Él tiene el suyo (or el suyo propio).

El suyo, or el suyo propio. (Absolute possessive pronoun.)
L' Tiene él el suyo ó el mío?

£ no tiene ni el suyo ni el de usted.

¿ Tiene él su dinero ? Sí, tiene el suyo.

Tiene alguno (or alguien) mi dinero †

No, señor, ninguno lo tiene.

Alguno.
Alguien.
Ninguno.
Nadie.

Alguno, Alguien, Ninguno, and Nadie are indefinite pronouns which usually represent persons. See Elements.

Has anybody my bird? Somebody has it.

Nobody has it.

¿Tiene alguno mi pájaro? Alguno lo tiene. — Alguien lo

tiene.

Ninguno lo tiene.—Nadie lo tiene.

CONVERSACIÓN

1. ¿ Tiene él sed ó hambre? No tiene ni sed ni hambre. 2. ¿ Tiene mi barco el capitán? No lo tiene, 3. ¿ Tiene él miedo? No tiene miedo. 4. ¿Tiene él mi caballo? No, no lo tiene. 5. ¿Qué tiene el amigo de usted? Tiene su buen dinero. 6. ¿Quién tiene frío? Nadie tiene frío. 7. ¿ Tiene el mozo mi libro? No lo tiene. 8. ¿Tiene mi paraguas? No lo tiene. 9. ¿Tiene el panadero de usted mi pájaro ó el suyo? No tiene el de usted; tiene el suyo. 10. ¿ Quién tiene miedo? El muchacho del sastre tiene miedo. 11. ¿ Tiene mi dinero el aldeano? No lo tiene. 12. Qué tiene feo? No tiene nada feo. 13. ¿ Qué paño tiene? Tiene el de mi hermano.

EXERCISE

1. Who has my trunk? The boy has it. 2. Who has my waistcoat? The young man has it. 3. Who has the knife? Which knife? Mine. The servant has it. 4. Who has the countryman's rice? My servant has it. 5. Who has my old shoe? The shoemaker has it. 6. Who has it? The young man has it. 7. Has any one my gun? No one has it. 8. Has he the hammer or the stick? He has neither the hammer nor the stick. 9. Who has the peasant's bag? The old baker has it. 10. What is the matter with him? Nothing. 11. Has your neighbor anything good? He has nothing good. 12. Has the merchant my cloth or his? He has neither yours nor his. 13. Has your brother his wine or the neighbor's? He has neither his nor the neighbor's. 14. Who has my button? Your good boy has it. 15. Are you afraid or ashamed? I am neither afraid nor ashamed. 16. Have you my bread or my cheese? I have neither your bread nor your cheese. 17. Has any one my gold button? No one has it.

EIGHTH LESSON--Lección Octava

The sailor. El marinero.

His tree. Su árbol.

The mirror. El espejo.

Your mattress. Su colchón de usted, or el col-

chón de usted.

The stranger. El extranjero.

The foreigner. El extranjero or forastero

The garden. El jardín. My glove. Mi guante. This ox. Este buey. This hav. Este heno. That friend. Ese amigo. That man. Aquel hombre. This. Este.

That. Ese, aquel. Este refers to the persons or things nearest to the speaker or

writer; ese to the persons or things nearest to the person spoken or written to; and aquel is used to point out persons or things distant. both from the speaker or writer and from the person spoken or written to. It is also employed when speaking of events, etc., long passed; as, In that day, en aquel día.

Have you this or that book? A Tiene usted este libro ó aquél ? I have this one, I have not that Tengo este; no tengo aquél. one.

This one.

Éste.

That one.

Aquél.

One in such cases is not translated; we say only this or that.

Have I this one or that one? You have this one, you have not Usted tiene este; no tiene aquél. that one.

I Tengo yo éste ó aquél ?

Has the man this hat or that one? Tiene el hombre este sombrero ó aquél ?

But.

Sino, pero.

He has not this one, but that one. El no tiene este, sino aquél. He has this one, but not that one. Él tiene éste, pero no tiene aquél.

The billet. El biilete. El desván. The garret. The granary. El granero. The donkey. El burro.

The corn (wheat). El grano, el trigo.

aquél.

Have you this billet or that one? Tiene usted este billete o aquél? I have not this one, but that one. No tengo este, pero tengo aquél. I have this one, but not that one Tengo este, pero no tengo aquél. Has the neighbor this mirror or & Tiene el vecino éste espejo ó

that one? aquél ?

He has this one, but not that El tiene este, pero no tiene

one.

Have you the billet that my & Tiene usted el billete que mi hermano tiene? brother has?

I have not the billet which your Yo no tengo el billete que su herbrother has.

Which, that,

mano de usted tiene.

Que. (Relative pronoun.) Have you the horse which I have? I Tiene usted el caballo que vo

tengo ? I have the horse which you Tengo el caballo que usted tiene.

I have not that which you have. Yo no tengo el que usted tiene. That which, the one who, or El que.

which.

Have I the glove which you have? I Tengo yo el guante que usted tiene ?

You have not the one which I Usted no tiene el que yo tengo. have.

That which he has.

El que él tiene.

The one which you have.

El que usted tiene.

Que, which, that, as a relative pronoun does not bear the written accent.

Since the student is now familiar with the word usted, it will be abbreviated hereafter into V. for the singular and Vds. for the plural.

CONVERSACIÓN

1. ¿ Tiene el marinero mi espejo ? No lo tiene. 2. ¿ Tiene V. el heno de mi jardín ó el del de V.? No tengo el de su jardín de V. ni el del mío; sino el del extranjero. 3. ¿ Qué guante tiene V.? Yo tengo el del marinero. 4. ¿ Quién tiene mi buen billete? Este hombre lo tiene. 5. ¿ Quién tiene mi guante? Ese criado lo tiene. 6. ¿ Tiene el paisano este buey ó aquél? No tiene ni éste ni aquél; pero tiene el que su muchacho tiene. 7. ¿ Tengo vo el heno de V. ó el de él? V. no tiene ni el mío ni el de él; pero tiene el del amigo de V. 8. ¿ Tiene el extranjero mi pájaro ó el suyo ? Tiene el del capitán. 9. ¿ Tiene el marinero este pájaro ó aquél? No tiene éste, sino aquél. 10. ¿ Tengo este cuchillo ó aquél? V. no tiene ni éste ni aquél. 11. ¿ Qué caballo tiene V.? Tengo el que su hermano de V. tiene. 12. ¿ Qué costal tiene el aldeano? Tiene el que su muchacho tiene.

13. ¿ Quién no tiene razón ? Su amigo de V. no tiene razón. 14. ¿ Tiene el francés el buen bizcocho ? No lo tiene, pero su vecino lo tiene.

EXERCISE

1. Which hav has the stranger? He has that of the peasant. 2. Have you the hay of my garden or that of yours? I have neither that of your garden nor that of mine, but I have that of the stranger. 3. Which gun has the sailor? He has his own. 4. Have you the corn of your granary or of mine? I have neither that of your granary nor that of mine, but I have that of my merchant. 5. What has your servant? He has the tree of this garden. 6. Has this donkey his hay or the horse's? He has neither his nor that of the horse. 7. Have you this horse's hav? I have not his hay, but his corn. 8. Have you the tree of this garden? I have it not. 9. Has your servant this sack or that one? He has this one, but not that one. 10. Am I right or wrong? You are neither right nor wrong, but your good boy is wrong. 11. Have you the chest which I have? I have not that which you have. 12. Has your friend the mirror which you have or that which I have? He has neither that which you have nor that which I have, but he has his own. 13. Have you my waistcoat or that of the tailor? I have neither yours nor that of the tailor. 14. Is your friend afraid or ashamed? He is neither afraid nor ashamed, but he is sleepy. 15. Has the captain the ship which you have or that which I have? He has neither that which you have nor that which I have. 16. Has the Frenchman anything good or bad? He has neither anything good nor bad, but he has something pretty.

NINTH LESSON—Lección Novena

THE DEFINITE ARTICLE

MASCULINE PLURAL

The. Los. Of the, from the. De los. To the, at the. Á los.

THE FORMATION OF THE PLUBAL

Nouns ending in an unaccented vowel form their plural by adding s to the singular; as, book, libro, books, libros.

With a few exceptions, nouns ending in an accented vowel, or in a consonant, or in y, add es to make the plural; as, bashaw, bajá, bashaws, bajáes, captain, capitán, captains, capitanes, law, ley, laws, leyes.

Those ending in z change it to c and add es; as, light, luz, lights, luces.

The book.	El libro.	The books.	Los libros.
Good.	Bueno.	Good books.	Buenos libros.
The walking stick.	El bastón.	The walking sticks.	Los bastones.
The ox.	El buey.	The oxen.	Los bueyes.
The judge.	El juez.	The judges.	Los jueces.

The books.	Los libros.
The good books.	Los libros buenos.
Of the books.	De los libros.
The canes.	Los bastones.
The good canes.	Los bastones buenos.
Of the canes.	De los bastones.
The neighbors.	Los vecinos.
The good neighbors.	Los vecinos buenos.
The friends.	Los amigos.
The old friends.	Los amigos viejos.
The pretty dogs.	Los perros bonitos.
The ugly hats.	Los sombreros feos.
The woods (forest).	Los bosques.
The Frenchmen (the French).	Los franceses.
The Englishman.	El inglés.
The Englishmen (the English).	Los ingleses.

Adjectives agree in gender and number with the nouns or pronouns which they qualify, and form their plural like substantives.

The place, the places.	El lugar, los lugares.
The nail, the nails.	El clavo, los clavos.
Have you the books?	Tiene V. los libros ?
I have the books.	Yo tengo los libros.
Who has the hats?	Quién tiene los sombreros ?
He has the hats.	Él tiene los sombreros.

Have I the birds? Yes, Sir. Have you my knives? I have not your knives. Tengo yo los pájaros ? Sí, señor. & Tiene V. mis cuchillos? No tengo sus cuchillos de V.

PLURAL.

Sus de V.

Los de V.

Vuestros.

Nuestros.

Mis.

Sus.

Sus.

SINGULAR. Mi. Mv. Su de V. El de V. Your. Vuestro. His or her. Su. Nuestro. Our. Su. Their.

These adjective pronouns, like true adjectives, agree in gender and number with the nouns which they qualify, and not with their antecedents.

His or her books. Our book, our books. The work (labor). The works. Our gloves. Small. Large.

Which hats ? Which ones ? These books. Those books. These.

Those.

These or those books. Have you these or those books?

These birds or those. Have I these or those birds ?

The eyes. The donkeys. Which horses have you? Have you the fine horses of your & Tiene V. los caballos hermosos good neighbors ?

Sus libros.

Nuestro libro, nuestros libros.

El trabajo. Los trabajos.

Nuestros guantes. Pequeño (sing.). Pequeños (plur.) Grande (sing.). Grandes (plur.).

LCuáles sombreros ?

L Cuáles ? Estos libros.

Esos libros, aquellos libros.

Estos.

Esos, aquellos.

Estos libros ó aquéllos.

¿Tiene V. estos libros ó aquéllost

Estos pájaros ó aquéllos.

¡ Tengo yo estos pájaros ó aquéllos 1

> Los ojos. Los burros.

¿ Qué caballos tiene V.?

de sus buenos vecinos ?

Digitized by Google

Have I his small gloves ? You have not his small gloves, but you have his large hats.

Has your brother his iron guns ?

He has not his iron guns. Which ones has he?

Of my gardens.

Of your pretty horses.

Of my woods.

Of your fine trees.

Have you the Frenchmen's fine & Tiene V. los hermosos paraguas umbrellas f

have their fine canes.

dens ?

I have not the trees of your gar- Yo no tengo los árboles de sus

Have you my leather shoes?

I have your cloth caps.

The bread, the loaves.

¿ Tengo yo sus guantes pequeños ? V. no tiene sus guantes pequenos, pero tiene sus sombreros grandes.

Tiene el hermano de V. sus fusiles de hierro ?

No tiene sus fusiles de hierro.

¿Cuáles tiene él ?

De mis jardines.

De sus bonitos caballos de V. The Frenchmen's fine umbrellas. Los hermosos paraguas de los

franceses. De mis bosques.

De los hermosos árboles de V.

de los franceses ?

I have not their umbrellas, but I Yo no tengo sus paraguas, pero tengo sus hermosos bastones.

Have you the trees of my gar- I Tiene V. los árboles de mis jardines ?

jardines de V.

Tiene V. mis zapatos de cuero 🕯

I have not your leather shoes, but Yo no tengo sus zapatos de cuero de V., pero tengo sus gorros de paño.

El pan, los panes.

CONVERSACIÓN

1. ¿Tiene V. mis guantes? No, no tengo los guantes de V. 2. ¿ Qué libros tengo yo? V. tiene los bonitos libros de sus amigos. 3. ¿ Tiene su vecino los árboles de sus jardines de V.? No tiene los árboles de mis jardines, pero tiene los hermosos bosques de V. 4. ¿ Qué tiene el marinero? Tiene sus hermosos barcos. 5. Tiene el muchacho del francés mis buenos paraguas? No tiene sus buenos paraguas de V., sino sus buenos bastones. 6. ¿ Qué colchones tiene el marinero? Tiene los buenos colchones de su capitán. 7. ¿ Qué tiene el muchacho de V.? Tiene sus bonitos pájaros. 8. ¿ Tiene él

Digitized by Google

nuestros clavos ó nuestros martillos? No tiene ni nuestros clavos ni nuestros martillos; pero tiene nuestros buenos panes. 9. § Tiene nuestro amigo nuestros hermosos lápices? No tiene nuestros hermosos lápices. 10. § Tiene el amigo de V. los pequeños cuchillos de nuestros comerciantes? No tiene los pequeños cuchillos de ellos, sino sus candeleros de oro. 11. § Tiene él su libro de V. ó el del amigo de V. ? No tiene ni el mío ni el de mi amigo; tiene el suyo. 12. § Tiene V. el costal que tiene mi criado? No tengo el costal que tiene el criado de V.

EXERCISE

1. Have you the gloves? Yes, Sir, I have the gloves. 2. Have I your pretty books? You have not my pretty books. 3. Who has our fine horses? Nobody has your fine horses. but somebody has your fine oxen. 4. Has your tailor my fine gold buttons? He has not your fine gold buttons, but your fine gold candlestick. 5. Who has the tailor's good waistcoats? Nobody has his waistcoats, but somebody has his gold buttons. 6. What has the captain? He has his good sailors. 7. Which servants has the Englishman? He has the servants of the Frenchman. 8. What has the baker? He has our fine donkeys. 9. Which biscuits has the baker? He has the biscuits of his friends. 10. Which sticks has your servant? He has the sticks of his good merchants. 11. Has the man this or that billet? He has neither this nor that. 12. Which wine has he? He has that of his merchants. 13. Is the peasant cold or warm? He is neither cold nor warm.

TENTH LESSON—Lección Décima

Those of. Los de.

Have you my books or those of 5 Tiene V. mis libros \(\delta \) los del the man.

I have not your books; I have No tengo los libros de V.; tengo those of the man. los del hombre.

The ones which.

Los que.

Have you the books which I have † Liene V. los libros que tengo † I have the ones which you have. Yo tengo los que V. tiene.

Has the Englishman the knives . Tiene el inglés los cuchillos que which you have, or the ones that I have?

have nor the ones that I have.

Which knives has he? He has his own. Have you mine? No, I have not yours.

V. tiene, ó los que yo tengo?

He has neither the ones that you No tiene ni los que V. tiene, ni los que yo tengo.

¿ Qué cuchillos tiene él ?

Tiene los suvos. L'Tiene V. los míos ?

No, no tengo los de V.

POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS

Mine. Yours. His, hers (his own, her own).

Ours. Theirs (their own). Have you yours or mine ? I have not yours, I have mine.

These (plur. of this one). Those (plur. of that one). I have neither these nor those. Have I these or those ? You have these; you have not V. tiene éstos; no tiene aquéllos. those.

or those of the English? You have neither the former nor V. no tiene ni aquéllos, ni éstos.

the latter.

The former. The latter.

Have you my canes or my guns? Tiene V. mis bastones ó mis fu-

the former.

Has the man these or those i Tiene el hombre éstos ó aquellos trunks ?

He has these, but not those.

SINGULAR. PLURAL. El mío. Los míos.

El suyo. Los suyos. El de V. Los de V.

El vuestro. Los vuestros.

El suyo. Los suyos. El nuestro. Los nuestros.

El suyo. Los suyos. ¿Tiene V. los suyos ó los míos?

No tengo los de V.; tengo los mios.

Éstos.

Esos, aquéllos.

Yo no tengo ni éstos ni aquéllos. ¿Tengo yo éstos ó aquéllos ?

Have I the mirrors of the French & Tengo yo los espejos de los franceses, ó los de los ingleses?

Aquél (sing.). Aquéllos (plur.). Este (sing.). Estos (plur.).

siles 1

I have the latter, but I have not Yo tengo éstos, pero no tengo aquéllos.

baúles ?

Tiene ésos, pero no aquéllos.

Have you your guns or mine? but those of our good friends.

Tiene V. sus fusiles ó los míos? I have neither yours nor mine, Yo no tengo ni los de V. ni los míos, pero los de nuestros buenos amigos.

AUGMENTATIVE AND DIMINUTIVE NOUNS

Augmentative and Diminutive nouns, in Spanish, are those which by the addition of a certain termination increase or diminish the meaning of their primitives.

Augmentative nouns are formed by adding on, ote, azo, or onazo to the masculine nouns, and ona, ota, aza, or onaza to the feminine; suppressing their last letter, should it be a, e, or o; as,

A girl. A bov. Un muchacho. Una muchacha. A big girl. Una muchachona. A big boy. Un muchachón.

On and ote, ona and ota are indicative of some quality in the nouns to which they are attached; azo, aza, onazo, onaza, most commonly refer only to size.

The termination azo frequently signifies the blow or injury caused by the object to which it is added; as,

> Whip. Látigo.

A very large whip. Un látigo muy grande. A stroke with a whip.

Un latigazo.

The termination azo added to the noun to express a blow, or injury, has no change when it is formed from a noun feminine; as,

Hand. Mano. A large hand. Manaza

A blow or stroke with the hand. Manotada.

١

The diminutive nouns are formed by adding ito, illo, uelo for the masculine, and ita, illa, uela for the feminine, to the noun, which drops its last letter if it be a, e, or o; as,

> Un muchacho. A boy. A little boy. Un muchachito. A girl. Una muchacha. A little girl. Una muchachita.

Ito and ita generally express complacency toward the object, and excellency in it; illo and illa sometimes signify pity, and sometimes contempt; uelo and uela were formerly used in the same sense as ito and ita.

Most nouns ending in án, in, on, che, ge, que, re, te, ve, affix cito, cillo, zuelo, or cita, cilla, zuela, and in such cases they do not drop the last letter: as.

Lion. León. Pretty little lion. Leoncito. Man. Hombre. Fine little man. Hombrecito. Woman. Mujer. Dear little woman. Mujercita. Nouns ending in z change it into c, and add ecito, ecita, etc.; as, Cruz. Little cross. Cross. Crucecita. Fish. Pez. Little fish. Pececito, pececillo,

Nouns ending in co or ca change this syllable into quito, quita; as,

Boat.Barco.Little boat.Barquito.Barge.Barca.Little barge.Barquita.

Nouns ending in go or ga drop the o and add uito, uita, etc.; as,

Friend. Amigo. Dear little friend. Amiguito. Friend. Amiga. Dear little friend. Amiguita.

Nouns ending in io, ia generally do not take the termination, and express the diminutive by a qualifying adjective; as, The little Claudius, El pequeño Claudio, or El niño Claudio. Sometimes they drop the last two vowels and add the regular termination; as, Julia, Julita; indio, indito. When the letter n precedes the said last syllables io, ia, it is generally changed into n; as, Antonio, Antonio.

CONVERSACIÓN

1. ¿ Tiene V. los caballos de los españoles ó los de los ingleses? Tengo los de los ingleses; pero no tengo los de los españoles. 2. ¿ Tiene su hermano los bizcochos de V. ó los míos? No tiene ni los de V. ni los míos. 3. ¿ Tiene su amigo mis libros ó los de él? No tiene ni los de V. ni los de él, pero tiene los del capitán. 4. ¿ Tiene V. los pájaros de los marineros? Yo no tengo sus pájaros, pero sí sus hermosos bastones. 5. ¿ Qué papel tiene el hombre? Tiene el nuestro. 6. ¿ Tiene su carpintero de V. nuestros martillos ó los de nuestros amigos? No tiene ni los nuestros, ni los de nuestros amigos. 7. ¿ Quién tiene los pollos del cocinero? Ninguno tiene sus pollos; pero alguien tiene su carnero. 8. ¿ Tengo yo el costal de aquel aldeano? V. no tiene su costal, sino su trigo. 9. ¿ Tiene él nuestros libros? No tiene los

Digitized by Google

nuestros, sino los que tiene su vecino. 10. ¿ Tiene él miedo ? No tiene miedo, sino vergüenza. 11. ¿ Tiene V. algo bueno ó malo ? No tengo nada bueno ni malo; pero tengo algo hermoso.

EXERCISE

1. Have you these or those notes? I have neither these nor those. 2. Have you the chests which I have? I have not those which you have, but those which your brother has. 3. Which horses has your friend? He has those which I 4. Have I our donkeys? You have not ours, but those of our neighbors. 5. Have I my shoes or those of the shoemakers? You have not yours, but theirs (those of the 6. Have you our bags or those of the stranshoemakers). gers? I have not yours, but theirs. 7. Has any one the ships of the English? No one has those of the English, but some one has those of the French. 8. Who has my old The sailor has it. 9. Which umbrellas has the Frenchman? He has those which his friend has. 10. Is your friend cold or warm? He is neither cold nor warm. 11. Which pencils has he? He has those of his old merchants. 12. Have you not their fine mutton? No, Sir, I have it not.

ELEVENTH LESSON—Lección Undécima

The comb.
The glass.
The glass (tumbler).

El vidrio.
El vaso.

§ Tiene V. mis peines chiquitos?

El peine.

Have you my small combs? { (or peinecitos). I have them. Yo los tengo.

Them. Los.

Los is a pronoun when it is the object of a verb, which it immediately precedes or follows; otherwise it is an article.

Has he my fine glasses f
He has them.
Have I them f
You have them.
You have them not.

Los tiene.
V. no los tiene.
V. no los tiene.

Digitized by Google

Has the man my pretty combs? Tiene el hombre mis bonitos peines? He has them not. No los tiene. Has the boy them? Los tiene el muchacho ? The men have them. Los hombres los tienen. Have the men them? Los tienen los hombres? They. Ellos. They have them. Ellos los tienen. Ellos no los tienen. They have not them. Who has them ? A Quién los tiene? The Germans. Los alemanes. The Turks. Los turcos. The Germans have ther Los alemanes los tienen. The Italians. Los italianos. The Spaniards. Los españoles. Some and any, used in an indefinite sense and followed by a noun, are usually not translated: Have you any wine? I Tiene V. vino? Tengo vino. I have some (wine understood). Sí, tengo. Sí, señor. No tengo vino. I have not any (wine understood). No tengo. No, señor. ¿Quiere V. enviar por vino? Do you wish to send for wine? Yo quiero enviar por vino. I wish to send for some (wine Sí, quiero. understood). Sí, sefior. No quiero enviar por vino. I do not wish to send for any No quiero. (wine understood). No. señor. Some, meaning a little, is expressed and translated by un poco. I have some (a little). Yo tengo un poco. Some or any wine. Vino. Some or any bread. Pan.

Te.

Botones.

Cuchillos.

Hombres.

Some or any tea. Some or any buttons.

Some or any knives.

Some or any men.

Have you any wine? I have some wine.

Has this man any cloth? He has some cloth. Has he any books?

He has some books.

Have you any money?

I have some money.

Some, a little.

Some, any. Some, ones.

I Tiene V. vino? Yo tengo vino, or Tengo un poco. La Tiene paño este hombre ? Tiene paño. A Tiene libros? (Tiene libros, or Tiene algunos libros. A Tiene V. dinero? Tengo dinero, or

Tengo un poco de dinero. Un poco.

Alguno. (Algún, before a masc. sing. noun.) Algunos.

Alguno, Algún, and Algunos are used in a limited sense.

Has he any paper? Have you any good paper? Have I any? Have you any good (paper) ?

No. Not any. None.

He has not any paper.

He has not any good paper.

He has not any.

4 have none.

He has none good.

Have you any paper? I have some. I have some good.

L'Tiene algún papel ? LTiene V. algún buen papel?

I Tengo alguno?

Tiene V. alguno bueno?

No.

Ninguno. (Ningún, before a masc. sing. noun.)

Ningunos.

Él no tiene ningún papel, or

Ningún papel tiene.

(See Lesson III.) (El no tiene ningún buen papel, *or*

Ningún buen papel tiene.

(Ninguno tiene, or No tiene ninguno.

Ninguno tengo (pl. ningunos

tengo).

He has not any of the good kind. \ No tiene ninguno bueno, or No tiene ningunos buenos.

> (Ninguno bueno tiene, or Ningunos buenos tiene.

Tiene V. algún papel? Tengo alguno (or un poco).

Tengo alguno bueno.

١

Some old wine. Vino añejo. Some bad cheese. Queso malo.

When malo (mal before a masculine singular noun) stands before a personal noun it refers to character; when after, it describes a bodily condition.

Any excellent coffee.

The painter.

The picture.

The picture (likeness).

El cuadro.

El retrato.

The painter has some pictures. El pintor tiene algunos cuadros.

CONVERSACIÓN

1. I Tiene V. los hermosos caballos de los ingleses? No los tengo. 2. ¿ Qué cuchillos tiene V.? Tengo los de sus amigos de V. 3. ¿ Qué barcos tienen los alemanes? Los alemanes no tienen barcos. 4. ¿ Tiene el capitán los bonitos libros de V.? No los tiene. 5. ¿ Tienen los turcos nuestros hermosos fusiles? No los tienen. 6. ¿ Los tiene él? Si; los tiene. 7. ¿ Tiene el sastre nuestros chalecos ó los de nuestros amigos? No tiene ni éstos ni aquéllos. 8. ¿ Tiene V. algunos bosques? Tengo algunos bosques. 9. ¿Tienen dinero sus amigos de V.? Tienen dinero. 10. ¿ Tiene paño el comerciante? No tiene paño, pero tiene bonitos zapatos. 11. ¿ Tiene buenos libros el comerciante? Tiene buenos libros. 12. ¿ Tienen ellos pájaros? No tienen pájaros, pero tienen cuadros. 13. ¿ Tienen los zapateros algunos buenos zapatos? Ellos no tienen buenos zapatos; pero tienen excelente cuero. 14. ¿ Tiene él los cuadros de los franceses ó los de los italianos? No tiene ni éstos ni aquéllos.

EXERCISE

1. Have you my fine glasses? I have them. 2. Who has my small combs? My boys have them. 3. Have you my pretty pictures, or those of my brothers? I have neither yours nor your brothers', but my own. 4. Have the cooks them? They have them. 5. Has the Italian them? He has them. 6. Has the German the pretty umbrellas of the Spaniards? He has them. 7. Who has them? The Turk has them. 8. Which dogs have you? I have those which

my neighbors have. 9. Have I any mutton? You have no mutton, but you have some cheese. 10. Have I any soap? You have no soap, but you have some coal. 11. Have you any good coffee? I have no good coffee, but some excellent wine. 12. Have the French any good gloves? They have some excellent gloves. 13. Who has the good biscuits of the bakers? The sailors of our captains have them. 14. What have the Spaniards? They have some fine donkeys. 15. Have your friends any coal? They have some. 16. Has the painter any umbrellas? He has no umbrellas, but he has some beautiful pictures. 17. Have the Russians (los rusos) anything good? They have something good. 18. Who has the peasants' fine chickens? Your cooks have them.

TWELFTH LESSON-Lección Duodécima

A or an, or one.

Of a, an, from a, an. To a, an, at a, an.

A man.

A book.

A stick (of wood).

A walking cane.

Of a boy.

Of a good sailor.

A small knife.

A large cap. One.

Two.

Three.

Have you any books? Yes, Sir, I have one. Have you a glass? I have no glass. I have one. Have you a good horse? I have a good horse. Un (from uno, which drops o before a masc. noun).

De un.

Á un.

Un hombre.

Un libro.

Un palo.

Un bastón.

De un muchacho.

De un buen marinero.

Un cuchillo pequeño.

Un cuchillito.

Un gorro grande.

Uno. Dos.

Numeral adjectives.

Tres.

¿Tiene V. algunos libros ?

Sí; tengo uno.

Tiene V. un vaso?

No tengo vaso. Tengo uno.

Tiene V. un buen caballo ?

Tengo un buen caballo.

Have you any good horses? I have two good ones. Have you two good horses? Yes, Sir, I have two good ones.

Four. Five.

Have you five horses? I have none, Sir. Have you a small lion ? I have one. Have you any good shoes? I have some good ones. I have some bad ones. Has your brother a friend?

He has a good one. Has he one? He has one. He has two good ones. He has two of them. Have you five good dogs? I have three good and two bad Tengo tres buenos y dos malos. ones.

Who has a pretty umbrella? My brother has one.

The hatter.

¿Tiene V. buenos caballos ? Tengo dos buenos.

I Tiene V. dos buenos caballos ? Sí; tengo dos buenos.

> Custro. Cinco.

I Tiene V. cinco caballos ? Ninguno tengo, señor. L'Tiene V. un leoncito ? Tengo uno. Tiene V. zapatos buenos ? Tengo algunos buenos. Tengo algunos malos. ¡Tiene algún amigo su hermano de V. Tiene uno bueno.

Tiene uno ? Tiene uno. Tiene dos buenos. Tiene dos.

¿Tiene V. cinco buenos perros?

¿ Quién tiene un bonito paraguas ? Mi hermano tiene uno. El sombrerero.

CONVERSACIÓN

1. ¿ Tiene V. algún café ? No tengo ninguno. 2. ¿ Tengo yo algún buen azúcar? V. no tiene ninguno bueno. 3. ¿Tiene algún dinero el americano ? Tiene alguno. 4. ¿ Quién tiene algún buen jabón? El comerciante lo tiene. 5. ¿ Tiene algún jabón? Sí; lo tiene. 6. ¿ Qué cuero tiene el zapatero? Tiene alguno excelente. 7. ¿ Tengo yo algunos zapatos? V. tiene algunos zapatos. 8. ¿ Tiene él algunos buenos bueyes? No tiene ningunos buenos. 9. ¿ Tiene el capitán algunos buenos marineros? Tiene algunos buenos. 10. ¿ Tiene algún pan? No tiene ninguno. 11. ¿ Tiene martillos? Tiene algunos. 12. ¿ Tienen los pintores hermosos jardines? Tienen algunos hermosos. 13. ¿ Quién tiene cinco buenos caballos? Nuestro vecino tiene seis. 14. ¿Tienen los aldeanos estos costales ó aquéllos? No tienen ni éstos ni aquéllos.

EXERCISE

1. Have you any wine? I have some. 2. Have you any good cloth? I have no good cloth, but I have some good paper. 3. Has he any good cheese? He has not any. 4. Have the English any good wine? They have no good wine, but they have some excellent tea. 5. Has the foreigner any woods? He has some. 6. What hay has the horse? He has some good hay. 7. Who has some nails? The merchant has some. 8. Has your friend any pretty knives? He has some pretty ones. 9. Who has some fine donkeys? The Spaniards have some. 10. Who has some good biscuits? The baker of our good neighbor has some. 11. Who has some excellent iron nails? The carpenter has some. 12. What is the matter with your brother? Nothing is the matter with him. 13. Is he ashamed? He is not ashamed. 14. Who has some fine pictures? The Italians have some. 15. Has the carpenter good or bad nails? He has some good ones. 16. Has the hatter any hats? He has some good French hats. 17. Have you a pencil? I have one. 18. Has your tailor a good coat? He has a good one. 19. Have your friends two fine horses? They have four. 20. Have I a friend? You have a good one.

THIRTEENTH LESSON—Lección Décimatercera

How much? L Cuánto? How many? ¿Cuántos? ¿Cuánto pan tiene V. ? How much bread have you? How much money? A Cuánto dinero? How many knives? ¿Cuántos cuchillos? How many men? ¿Cuántos hombres? How many friends ! ¿Cuántos amigos? (Sólo. Only. Solamente. (No (verb) sino. But, no more. No (verb) más que.

 $\mathsf{Digitized} \ \mathsf{by} \ Google$

I have but one friend. I have but one. I have but one good gun.

I have but one good one. The book is not mine, but yours. You have but one good one. How many horses has your ¿Cuántos caballos tiene su herbrother ?

He has but one.

He has but two good ones.

Tengo sólo un amigo. Tengo uno solamente.

No tengo más que un buen fusil.

Tengo solamente uno bueno. El libro no es mío, sino de V.

V. no tiene más que uno bueno.

mano de V. ?

No tiene más que uno.

El tiene solamente dos buenos.

Mús que, more than, is used with ordinary qualifying adjectives; más de, more than, is used with numerals in affirmative sentences; and más que with numerals in negative sentences.

Much. Many.

A good deal, very much. Much bread.

Many men.

A good deal of good bread. Have you much money? I have a good deal. Have you much good wine? I have a good deal.

Too much.

Too many.

You have too much wine. You have too many books.

Enough.

Enough money. Knives enough.

Small.

Of small quantity or number. A little.

A small room. A little wine.

Some friends.

Mucho.

Muchos.

Muchisimo. Muchisimos (pl.)

Mucho pan.

Muchos hombres.

Muchisimo pan bueno. ¿Tiene V. mucho dinero ?

Tengo muchísimo.

L'Tiene V. mucho vino bueno ₹

Tengo muchísimo.

Demasiado.

Demasiados.

V. tiene demasiado vino. V. tiene demasiados libros.

Bastante, bastantes.

Bastante dinero.

Bastantes cuchillos.

Pequeño.

Poco, pocos.

Unos pocos, unos cuantos.

Un poco (after a verb).

Un poco de (before a noun).

Un cuarto pequeño.

Un poco de vino. Unos pocos amigos.

Unos cuantos amigos.

Digitized by Google

Sólo —— un poco.

Muy poco. Sólo — pocos.

Muy pocos. No — mucho. No — muchos.

Solamente un poco.

Solamente unos cuantos.

V. no tiene mucho dinero.

Nosotros.

Nosotros tenemos pocos amigos.

But little. Only a little.

But few.

Not much. Not many.

You have not much money. We have few friends.

We. We have. Have we?

We have not.

Nosotros tenemos. I Tenemos nosotros ? Nosotros no tenemos.

The nominative personal pronoun is always omitted save when there is good reason to express it for the sake of emphasis or clearness.

Courage. Have we any vinegar?

We have some. We have not any.

They have but little courage. Have you very much money? I have but a little. You have but a little. He has but a little. We have but a little. Have you enough wine? I have only a little, but enough.

> Seven. Eight. Nine.

Ten. And.

Bread and meat.

Have you tea and coffee ?

The hatter. The joiner.

Valor, ánimo. *Tenemos vinagre?

Sí, tenemos, or tenemos un poco. No tenemos, or ninguno tenemos.

Tienen muy poco valor. & Tiene V. muchísimo dinero ? Sólo tengo un poco.

V. tiene sólo un poco. Él tiene solamente un poco.

Sólo tenemos un poco. ¿Tiene V. bastante vino?

Sólo tengo un poco; pero tengo bastante.

> Siete. Ocho. Nueve. Diez.

Y. Pan y carne.

Tiene V. te y café?

El sombrerero. El ensamblador.

CONVERSACIÓN

1. ¿ Tiene V. ocho buenos baúles? Tengo nueve. 2. ¿ Cuántos zapatos tiene el zapatero? Sólo cinco. 3. ¿ Tienen los españoles mucho dinero? Sólo tienen poco. 4. ¿ Qué tiene el americano? Tiene mucho azúcar. 5. ¿ Tiene mucho queso? Muy poco. 6. ¿ Tiene V. muchos hermanos? No tengo más que uno. 7. ¿ Tiene mucho queso el italiano? Tiene muchísimo. 8. ¿ Cuántos martillos tiene el carpintero? No tiene más que uno. 9. ¿ Cuántos bueyes tiene el alemán? Tiene ocho. 10. ¿ Cuántos libros tenemos? Sólo tenemos tres bonitos. 11. ¿ Tiene demasiado café nuestro amigo? Sólo tiene un poco; pero, tiene lo bastante. 12. ¿ Tiene el cocinero bastante azúcar? No tiene bastante. 13. ¿ Tiene mucho paño el comerciante? Tiene muchísimo. 14. ¿ Cuántos jardines tiene? No tiene sino dos.

EXERCISE

1. How many friends have you? I have two good friends. 2. Has the captain two good ships? He has but two good ones. 3. Have you much bread? I have very much. 4. Has the foreigner much corn? He has a great deal. 5. Has the peasant much rice? He has not any. 6. Have we much money? We have only a little, but enough. 7. Has our neighbor much hay? He has enough. 8. Has the painter's boy any pencils? He has some. 9. Has the cook much mutton? He has only a little mutton, but he has much ham. 10. Who has very many biscuits? Our sailors have very many. 11. Have our boys too many books? They have too many. 12. Have they many gloves? They have none. 13. Have you much soap? I have only a little. 14. Has the painter many gardens? He has not many. 15. Has the captain any fine horses? He has some fine ones, but his brother has none. 16. What chickens has our cook? He has some pretty chickens. 17. Has the joiner much work? He has not a great deal, but enough. 18. Has the Turk my small combs? He has them not. 19. Has the Frenchman this or that umbrella? He has neither this nor that

FOURTEENTH LESSON—Lección Décimacuarta

Some, or a few.

A few books.

Have you a few books?

I have a few.

You have a few. He has a few.

But a few.

I have but a few.

You have but a few books. He has but a few farthings.

I have but a few. You have but a few. He has but a few.

Algunos. Unos.

Unos pocos. Unos cuantos.

Algunos libros, or unos libros.

¿Tiene V. algunos libros? (Yo tengo algunos.

Tengo unos cuantos.

V. tiene algunos.

El tiene algunos.

Sólo (verb) algunos. Solamente algunos.

Sólo unos cuantos.

Solamente unos cuantos.

Sólo tengo algunos, or unos cuantos.

Yo tengo solamente algunos.

l No tengo más que algunos.

V. tiene solamente algunos libros. Él tiene solamente algunos cuar-

No tengo más que unos pocos. V. no tiene más que algunos. El no tiene más que unos cuantos.

PLURAL. PLURAL. A farthing. Farthings. Un cuarto. Cuartos. Reales. Un real. Reales. (Un peso. Pesos. A dollar. Dollars. Un duro. Duros.

The real has had a great variety of values; but to-day it is usually the eighth part of a peso, or a twentieth part of a duro, a dollar.

Other.

A real.

Another.

Have you another horse? I have another. No other horse. I have no other horse. I have no other.

Otro.

Tiene V. otro caballo? Yo tengo otro. Ningún otro caballo. No tengo otro caballo. No tengo otro.

Some other.	Otro.	
	Otros.	
Any other.	Algún otro.	
Any others.	Algunos otros.	
Have you any other horses?	§ Tiene V. otros caballos?	
liave you any other noises?	L'Tiene V. algunos otros caballos !	
I have some others.	Yo tengo otros.	
I have some others.	Yo tengo algunos otros.	
I have no others.	Yo no tengo otros.	
	No tengo ningunos otros.	
The arm.	El brazo.	
The heart.	El corazón.	
The foot.	El pie.	
The writing.	El escrito.	
The volume.	El tomo, el volumen.	
No other.	No (verb) otro.	
110 conci.	No (verb) ningún otro.	
Neither the one nor the other.	Ni el uno ni el otro.	
Mercher the one nor the other.	Ni uno ni otro.	
Neither the ones nor the others.	Ni los unos ni los otros.	
reliner the ones not the others.	Ni unos ni otros.	
What day of the month is it?	Que día del mes tenemos !	
What day of the month is it?	Que día es hoy ?	
The first.	El primero.	
The second.	El dos.	
The third.	El tres.	
What day of the month is this?	🛦 Á cuántos estamos 🕈	
The eleventh.	Á once.	

Except the first day of the month, all the other days are expressed by a cardinal number preceded by the article.

Which volume have you?	¿Qué tomo tiene V.?	
I have the fourth.	Tengo el cuarto.	

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
The first.	{El primero. } {El primer.1 }	Los primeros.
The second.	El segundo.	Los segundos.
The third.	El tercero. { El tercer.¹	Los terceros.

¹ Primero and tercero lose the o before a masculine noun.

But.

The American.

The Russian.

		SINGULAR.	PLURAL.	
The :	fourth.	El cuarto.	Los cuartos.	
The :	fifth.	El quinto.	Los quintos.	
The :	sixth.	El sexto.	Los sextos.	
The	seventh.	El séptimo.	Los séptimos.	
The	eighth.	El octavo.	Los octavos.	
The ninth.	El noveno.	Los novenos.		
	El nono.	Los nonos.		
The t	tenth.	El décimo.	Los décimos.	
The c	eleventh.	El undécimo.	Los undécimos.	
The t	twentieth.	El vigésimo.	Los vigésimos.	
The t	thirtieth.	El trigésimo.	Los trigésimos.	
have you the	first or second	l & Tiene V. el pri:	nero ó el segundo	
book ?		libro 🕈		
Which volumes	have you ?	¿Qué tomos tien	ıe V. ¶	
I have the first	two.	Yo tengo los do	Yo tengo los dos primeros.	
The t	twelfth.	El duodécimo.		
The t	thirteenth.	El décimotercero.		

Pero.

El americano, (pl.) los americanos.

El ruso, (pl.) los rusos.

Proper adjectives such as these begin with small letters in Spanish.

CONVERSACIÓN

1. ¿ Cuántos pollos tiene nuestro cocinero? Tiene seis. 2. ¿ Tenemos los caballos de los franceses ó los de los alemanes? No tenemos ni los unos ni los otros. 3. ¿ Quién tiene nuestros espejos? Los italianos los tienen. 4. ¿ Tiene V. muchos lápices? Sólo tengo unos cuantos. 5. & Tienen Vds. algunos cuartos? Tenemos unos pocos. 6. ¿ Qué tienen los alemanes? Tienen muchos duros (pesos, dollars). 7. ¿ Tiene V. mucho café? Tengo un poco, pero bastante. 8. ¿ Tienen papel los rusos? Tienen muy poco papel, pero mucho hierro. No tiene nuestro vecino otro caballo? No tiene otro. ¿ Cuántos pájaros más tiene? Tiene otros seis. 11. ¿ Tiene V. el segundo tomo? Lo tengo. 12. ¿ Qué tomo tiene su amigo de V.? Tiene el séptimo. 13. ¿ Tienen ellos nuestro oro? No lo tienen. 14. ¿Tiene V. otro bastón? Tengo Opro.

EXERCISE

1. Have you many knives? I have a few. 2. Has your boy a few farthings? He has a few. 3. How many reales has the Spaniard? He has not many, he has only five. 4. Have the Italians many horses? They have not many horses, but a great many donkeys. 5. Have we the umbrellas of the Spaniards? We have them not, but the Americans have them. 6. Has your servant many farthings? He has no farthings, but reales enough. 7. Who has very many dollars? The Germans have a great many. 8. Have I no other gun? You have another. 9. Have the shoemakers no other shoes? They have no others, 10. How many arms has this man? He has only one, the other is of cork. 11. Has your friend no other birds? He has some others. Which volume have you? I have the first. 13. Have we the fifth or sixth volume? We have the fifth, but we have not the sixth volume. 14. Who has our dollars? The Russians have them. 15. Have you the nails of the carpenters or those of the joiners? I have neither those of the carpenters nor those of the joiners, but those of my merchants. 16. Have you another walking cane? I have another. 17. Has your boy another hat? He has another.

FIFTEENTH LESSON-Lección Décimaquinta

(Ambor

Amoos.	
Uno y otro.	
Ni el uno ni el otro.	
¿Tiene V. el primero ó el segundo	
tomo de mi diccionario ?	
Tengo ambos, or los dos.	
¿Tiene V. mi libro ó mi papel?	
Yo no tengo ni el uno ni el otro.	
¿Tiene mi hermano mis guantes ó los suyos?	
¿Tiene él mis libros ó los de los españoles?	
Él no tiene ni los unos ni los	
otros.	

The Scotchman.
The Irishman.
The Dutchman.

The Russian.

Still, yet.

Yet, or still more. More wine.

More money.

A few more buttons.

Have you any more wine?
I have some more wine.
I have some more.
Has he any more money?
He has some more.
Have I any more books?
You have some more.

Not any more, no more. Much more. Many more.

Have no more bread.

He has no more money.

Have you any more wine?

I have no more.

We have no more.

Has he any more vinegar?

He has no more.

We have no more dogs.

He has no more dogs.

Not much more.

Not many more.

Have you much more wine ?

I have not much more.

Have you many more books?

I have not many more.

One other book.
One more book.
One more good book.

El escocés. El irlandés. El holandés. El ruso. Todavía.) Aún. Todavía más, or aún más. Más vino. Más dinero. Aún algún dinero. Algunos botones más. Todavía algunos botones. ¡Tiene V. todavía más vino? Tengo todavía más vino. Todavía tengo (or aún tengo). L'Tiene él más dinero? Tiene alguno. Tengo más libros? V. tiene algunos más. No (verb) más. Mucho más. Muchos más. Yo no tengo más pan. El no tiene más dinero. ¿Tiene V. aún más vino? No tengo más. No tenemos más. ¿Tiene él todavía vinagre? No tiene más. Nosotros no tenemos más libros. El no tiene más perros. No tiene más. No (verb) mucho más. No (verb) muchos más. ¿Tiene V. mucho más vino ? Yo no tengo mucho más. ¡Tiene V. muchos más libros ? No tengo muchos más. Otro libro más. Un libro más. Un buen libro más.

Four more books.
A few more books.
Have you a few dollars more?
I have a few more.
Have I a few farthings more?
You have a few more.
We have a few more.
They have a few more.

Cuatro libros más,
Algunos libros más,
Tiene V. algunos pesos más?
Tengo algunos más,
Tengo algunos cuartos más?
V. tiene algunos más.
Tenemos algunos más,
Ellos tienen algunos más,

CONVERSACIÓN

1. ¿ Cuántos tomos tiene su diccionario de V.? Tiene dos. 2. Tiene V. mi pan ó mi queso? No tengo ni el uno ni el otro. 3. I Tiene el escocés nuestros zapatos ó nuestros gorros? No tiene ni los unos ni los otros. 4. ¿ Qué barcos tienen? Los suyos. 5. ¿ Tiene aún más dinero su amigo de V.? No tiene más. 6. ¿ Tiene aún más cuadros el pintor? No tiene más cuadros; pero tiene más lápices. 7. I Tienen sus muchachos de V. más libros? No tienen más. 8. ¿ Tiene muchos pollos más nuestro cocinero? No tiene muchos más. 9. ¿ Tiene V. otro libro más ? Tengo otro libro más. 10. ¿ Tienen los escoceses algunos libros más? Tienen algunos más. 11. ¿ Tengo yo un poco más dinero? V. tiene un poco más. 12. ¿ Tiene él bastante azúcar ? No tiene bastante. 13. Tiene V. muchos guantes más? No tengo muchos más. 14. ¿ Tenemos los gorros de paño ó los de algodón? No tenemos ni sus gorros de paño ni los de algodón.

EXERCISE

1. Which volume of his dictionary have you? I have the first. 2. Has the foreigner my comb or my knife? He has both. 3. Has the Irishman our horses or our chests? He has both. 4. Have the Dutch our ships or those of the Spaniards? They have neither the one nor the other. 5. Has our merchant any more paper? He has some more. 6. Have you any more coffee? We have no more coffee; but we have some more chocolate. 7. Have the sailors any more biscuits? They have not any more. 8. Has the young man any more friends? He has no more. 9. Has the peasant much more hay? He has not much more hay; but he

has a great deal more wine. 10. Have we many more mirrors? We have many more. 11. Has our friend one more umbrella? He has no more. 12. Has your carpenter a few more nails? He has no more nails; but he has a few sticks more. 13. Have you a few more shillings? I have no more shillings; but I have a few more dollars. 14. Have you any more courage? I have no more. 15. Have we dollars enough? We have not enough. 16. Have you rice enough? We have not rice enough; but we have enough sugar. 17. Has he another bag? He has no other. 18. Has the peasant too much bread? He has not enough. 19. Have you any more bread? I have no more.

SIXTEENTH LESSON—Lección Décimasexta

Several. Varios (algunos, or muchos).
Several men. Varios hombres.
Several children. Algunos niños.
Several knives. Algunos cuchillos,

The father. El padre.
The son. El hijo.
The child, or babe. El niño.
The cake. El bollo.
Tea. Te.
As much. Tanto.

As many. Tantos.
As much (noun) as. Tanto (noun) como.
As many (noun) as. Tantos (noun) como.

As much bread as wine. Tanto pan como vino.

As many men as children. Tantos hombres como niños.

As many men as children.

Have you as much gold as lead? Tiene V. tanto oro como plomo?

I have as much of this as of that. Tengo tanto de éste como de aquél.

I have as much of the former as Tengo tanto de aquél como de of the latter. éste.

I have as much of the one as of Tengo tanto del uno como del the other.

Have you as many shoes as pan- Tiene V. tantos zapatos como taloons pantalones pantalones

I have as many of these as of Tengo tantos de éstos como de those. aquéllos.

I have as many of the latter as of Tengo tantos de éstos como de the former. aquéllos. Quite (or just) as much. Tanto. Quite (or just) as many. Tantos. I have quite as much of this as Tengo tanto de éste como de of that. aguél. Quite as much of the one as of Tanto del uno como del otro. the other. Quite as many of those as of Tantos de aquéllos como de éstos. these. Quite as many of the one as of Tantos de los unos como de los the other. otros. An enemy, enemies. Un enemigo, enemigos. The finger. El dedo. The eye. El ojo. More (noun) than. Más (noun) que. Than. Que. More bread than wine. Más pan que vino. More knives than forks. Más cuchillos que tenedores. More of this than of that. Más de éste que de aquél. More of the one than of the other. Más del uno que del otro. More of these than of those. Más de éstos que de aquéllos. More of the ones than of the Más de los unos que de los ofros. others. I have more of your sugar than Tengo más del azúcar de V. que del mío. of mine. He has more of our books than Él tiene más de nuestros libros of his own. que de los suyos. Less-Fewer. Menos. Less (noun) than. Menos (noun) que. Fewer (noun) than. Fewer or less than I. Menos que yo. Fewer or less than he. Menos que él. Fewer or less than we. Menos que nosotros. Fewer or less than you. Menos que vosotros. Fewer or less than you. Menos que V. Fewer or less than they. Menos que ellos.

As much as I.

As much as he.

As much as we.

As much as you.

Tanto como yo.

Tanto como él.

Tanto como nosotros.

Tanto como vosotros.

As much as you. As much as thev.

Coat (or garment).

A gun (a piece of artillery). A tooth.

Have you as much of your wine & Tiene V. tanto de su vino como as of mine?

of mine.

Tanto como V. Tanto como ellos. Vestido.

Un cañón. Un diente.

del mío 9

I have quite as much of yours as Tengo tanto del de V. como del mío.

CONVERSACIÓN

1. ¿ Quién tiene mis buenos bollos ? Algunos los tienen. 2. I Tiene este hombre un hijo? Tiene muchos. 3. I Tenemos tanto pan como vino ? Vds. tienen tanto del uno como del otro. 4. ¿ Tiene su padre de V. tanto oro como hierro? Tiene más de éste que de aquél. 5. ¿ Tienen sus hijos de V. tantos bastones como líbros? Tienen más de los unos que de los otros. 6. ¿ Cuántos dedos tiene ese hombre? Tiene varios. 7. ¿ Tiene el turco tanto dinero del de Vds. como del suyo. Tiene menos del suyo que del nuestro. 8. ¿ Tiene el carpintero tantos palos como clavos? Tiene tantos de éstos como de aquéllos. 9. ¿ Tiene el comerciante menos bueyes que nosotros? Tiene menos bueyes que nosotros, y el zapatero tiene menos que él. 10. ¿ Tienen los holandeses tantos jardines como nosotros? Nosotros tenemos menos que ellos.

EXERCISE

1. Have you a horse? I have several. 2. Have you as much coffee as tea? I have as much of the one as of the other? 3. How many children have our friends? They have many; they have ten. 4. Have we as many shoes as coats? We have as many of the one as of the other. 5. Has the foreigner as much courage as we? He has quite as much. 6. How many teeth has this man? He has but one. 7. Have my children as much courage as yours? Yours have more than mine. 8. Have I as many enemies as your father? You have fewer than he. 9. Have we fewer knives than the children of our friends? We have fewer than they. 10. Have I as many of your books as of mine? You have fewer of mine than of yours. 11. Has our cook as much bread as ham? He has as much of the one as of the other. 12. Have you more biscuits than glasses? I have more of the latter than of the former. 13. Has he as many horses as I? He has not as many horses as you; but he has more pictures. 14. Has your son one more coat? He has several more. 15. Have you as much courage as our neighbor's son? I have just as much.

SEVENTEENTH LESSON—Lección Décimaséptima THE CONJUGATIONS

There are in Spanish three conjugations, which are distinguished by the termination of the infinitive, viz.:

1. The infinitive of the first con-

jugation ends in AR; as:

Hablar, to speak; Comprar, to buy; Cortar, to cut.

2. The second ends in ER; as:

Vender, to sell;

Comer, to eat, to dine; Beber. to drink.

3. The third ends in IR: as:

Recibir, to receive;
Dividir, to divide;
Abrir, to open.

All verbs belong to one of these three conjugations. When the infinitive is known it is easy to determine the conjugation of any verb. Irregular verbs will be marked with an asterisk (*).

Fear. Miedo.
Shame. Vergüenza.
Right. Razón.
Time. Tiempo.
Courage, valor. Valor.
Desire, wish. Gana, deseo.

To be wrong. No tener razón de, or hacer mal

en.

To work. To speak.

Have you a wish to work? I am ashamed to speak.

> To cut. To cut it.

To cut them. To cut some.

Trabajar. Hablar.

¡Tiene V. gana de trabajar ? Tengo vergüenza de hablar.

> Cortar. Cortarlo. Cortarlos. Cortar alguno.

When an objective personal pronoun is governed by a verb in the infinitive, it is placed after the verb, and joined to it, so as to form a single word.

Still.

Aún, todavía.

Have you still a desire to buy it? I Tiene V. todavía deseo de comprarlo !

Have you time to cut the bread? Tiene V. tlempo para rebanar

I have time to cut it.

Has he a mind to cut the trees.

He has a mind to cut some.

To buv. To break, to tear.

To take up from the floor.

To mend. To repair.

To look for, to seek.

more horse ?

I have a wish to buy one more.

Have you a wish to buy some books?

I have a wish to buy some, but I have no money.

glasses ?

I am afraid of breaking them.

Has he time to work?

el pan f

Tengo tiempo para rebanarlo.

Tiene él gana de cortar los árboles?

Tiene gana de cortar algunos. Comprar.

Romper.

Alzar del suelo.

Remendar.*

Reparar. Componer.*

Buscar.

Have you a wish to buy one & Tiene V. gana de comprar todavía otro caballo?

> Tengo gana de comprar otro más.

¡Tiene V. gana de comprar libros ?

Tengo gana de comprar algunos, pero no tengo dinero.

Are you afraid of breaking the Tiene V. miedo de romper los vasos?

Tengo miedo de romperlos.

Tiene él tiempo para trabajar f

He has time, but no desire to Él tiene tiempo, pero no tiene work.

Tiene tiempo, pero no tiene gana de trabajar.

ganas. Él tiene tiempo, pero no tiene

gana de hacerlo (to do it).

To avoid the immediate repetition of a verb in the same mode or tense, it is common to suppress it, or to make use of the verb hacer in its stead, as in the foregoing example.

To be right. Am I right in buying horses?

Tener razón de, or hacer bien en. ¿Tengo yo razón de comprar caballos!

To be wrong.

No tener razón de, or hacer mal

You are wrong in buying one.

V. no tiene razón de comprar uno.V. hace mal en comprar uno.

A present participle preceded by a preposition must be rendered into Spanish by the infinitive preceded by a preposition: in buying, en or de comprar.

You (plur.).

Vds. (for ustedes). (See Less. I.)

CONVERSACIÓN

1. ¿ Tiene V. tiempo para trabajar? Tengo tiempo, pero no tengo gana de trabajar. 2. ¿ Tiene V. tiempo para cortar queso? Tengo tiempo para cortar un poco. 3. ¿ Tengo vo tiempo para cortar los árboles? V. lo tiene para cortarlos. 4. ¿Tiene V. miedo de hablar? No tengo miedo; pero tengo vergüenza de hablar. 5. ¿ Tiene V. deseo de hablar? Tengo deseo; pero no tengo valor para hacerlo. 6. ¿ Tiene el hijo de su amigo de V. deseo de comprar otro pájaro más? Tiene deseo de comprar otro más. 7. ¿ Tiene el zapatero tiempo para componer nuestros zapatos? Tiene tiempo; pero no tiene gana de remendarlos. 8. ¿ Qué tienen Vds. gana de comprar? Tenemos gana de comprar algo bueno. 9. ¿ Quién tiene gana de romper nuestros espejos? Nuestro enemigo tiene gana de romperlos. 10. ¿ Tiene V. gana de comprar mis hermosos cofres ó los del francés? Tengo gana de comprar los de V.; pero no los del francés. 11. ¿ Qué espejos tienen gana de romper los enemigos? Tienen gana

de romper los que V. tiene, los que yo tengo, y los que nuestros niños y nuestros amigos tienen. 12. ¿ Tiene razón el italiano en buscar su sombrero de V.? No tiene razón en buscarlo.

EXERCISE

1. Have you still a desire to buy my friend's horse? I have still a wish to buy it; but I have no more money. 2. Has he a wish to cut some bread? He has a wish to cut some, but he has no knife. 3. Has the tailor time to cut the cloth? He has time to cut it. 4. Has your captain time to speak? He has time, but no desire to speak. 5. Is your friend right in buying a great ox? He is wrong in buying one. 6. Have you the courage to cut your finger? I have not the courage to cut it. 7. Have you a desire to buy a few more horses? We have a desire to buy a few more, but we have no more money. 8. Who has a desire to mend our hats? The hatter has a desire to mend them. 9. Have you a wish to break my nail? I have a wish to pick it up, but not to break it. 10. Who wishes to buy my beautiful dog? Nobody wishes to buy it. 11. Which gloves have you a desire to seek? I have a desire to seek yours, mine, and our children's. 12. Am I right in picking up your canes? You are right in picking them up. 13. Has our enemy a desire to buy one more ship? He has a desire to buy several more, but he is afraid to buy them.

EIGHTEENTH LESSON—Lección Décimaoctava

To make.
To do.

To be willing, to wish, to desire, to will.

Do you will?

Are you willing?

Do you wish?

I will, I am willing, I wish.

Will he? is he willing? does he wish?

He wills, he is willing, he wishes.

We will, we are willing, we wish.

Hacer.*

Querer.*

Youere V.? Quereis vosotros?

Yo quiero.

Yo quiero.

Yo quiero.

Yo quiero.

Yo quiero.

Nosotros queremos.

You will, you are willing, you V. quiere (plur.), Vds. quieren, wish. vosotros queréis.

They will, they are willing, they Ellos quieren.

wish.

Do you wish to make my fire? I am willing to make it.

I do not wish to make it.

Does he wish to make it?

He wishes to make it.

Does he wish to buy your horse?

Quiere V. hacer mi lumbre ?

Quiero hacerlo. No quiero hacerlo. A Quiere él hacerlo?

Quiere hacerlo.

¿ Quiere él comprar su caballo de V. ?

Él quiere comprarlo.

Quemar. Calentar.*

Desgarrar, despedazar.

El caldo. Mi tenedor.

He wishes to buy it.

To burn.
To warm.
To tear.
The broth.

My fork.

The auxiliary verbs do, did, does, doth, shall, will, may, might, would, should, etc., are not translated into Spanish by separate verbs, but are rendered by the principal verb, the different mode and tense endings expressing the senses conveyed by the English auxiliaries; as, Do you buy? (Buy you?) & Compra V.? He did buy, Él compró.

TO BE-SER and ESTAR

Except in connection with participles, the general use of ser and estar may be thus summarized:

Ser expresses what is essential and inherent, and therefore absolute and permanent, hence materials, trade, rank, purpose, etc.

Estar denotes the accidental, transitory, and the situation, state, etc.

The following examples will illustrate these rules:

This man is good.

This man is in good health.

He was wicked during his youth.

He was sick in his youth.

Ink is black.

This ink is pale. He is very tall.

He is placed very high.

His watch is gold.

Este hombre es bueno. Este hombre está bueno. Él fué malo en su juventud.

Él estuvo malo en su juventud. La tinta es negra.

Esta tinta está blanca. Él es muy alto.

Él está muy alto. Su reloj es de oro. His watch is broken. Is this wine good?

Su reloj está roto. ¿ Es bueno este vino ?

To be, followed by a present participle, is translated Estar:

They are playing.

Ellos están jugando.

To be, literally, to have, is translated by tener in the following **cases**:

To be five feet long. To be three feet broad, wide.

To be seven feet deep.

To be fifty feet in circumference.

To be twenty years old. To go. At the house of.

To the house of.

To be at the man's house.

bouse. To be at his friend's house.

To go to my father's house. At home.

> To be at home. To go home. At whose house?

To whose house ?

To whose house do you wish to go ?) A casa de quién quiere V. ir ? To whom do you wish to go? I wish to go to no one's house. I wish to go to no one.

At whose house is your brother? With whom is your brother?

With whom is he?

He is at our house. He is with us.

Tener cinco pies de largo. Tener tres pies de ancho. Tener siete pies de profundo.

Tener cincuenta pies de circunferencia.

Tener veinte años.

Tr.*

En casa da.

Á la casa de, or á casa de. Estar en la casa del hombre.

To go to the man, or to the man's Ir á casa, or á la casa del hombre.

Estar en casa de su amigo. Ir á casa de mi padre.

En casa. Estar en casa.

Ir á casa, or ir á la casa,

LEn casa de quién 🕴 LEn la casa de quién ?

Á casa de quién 🔭 🕻 la casa de quién 🕈

🕻 🛦 la casa de quién quiere V. ir 🕈

No quiero ir á casa de ninguno.

¿En casa de quién está su hermano de V. ?

¿ En la casa de quién está su hermano de V. ?

¿Con quién está ?

) La casa de quién está ?

Está en nuestra casa.

Él está con nosotros. Está en nuestra casa.

Digitized by Google

Is he at home? He is not at home. Are you at home?

> Tired. Are you tired?

I am tired. I am not tired. Is he in? He is. We are in. They are in. To drink. Where ?

What do you wish to do? What does your brother wish ¿ Qué quiere hacer su hermano to do f

Is your father at home? What will the Germans buy?

They will buy something good. They will buy nothing. Do they wish to buy a book? They wish to buy one. Do you wish to drink anything? A Quiere V. beber algo? I do not wish to drink anything. No quiero beber nada. Do you wish to look for my son?

Está él en casa ? No está en casa.

(¿ Está V. ? ¿ Están Vds. ? (pl.)

LStáis vosotros?

Cansado.

Lestá V. cansado? Lestáis cansados ?

Estoy cansado.

Yo no estoy cansado.

LEstá él ? Está.

(Nosotros) estamos.

Ellos están.

Beber.

¿En dónde? ¿Dónde?

¿ Qué quiere V. hacer ?

de V. ?

¿ Está en casa su padre de V. ? ¿ Qué quieren comprar los ale-

manes ? Ellos quieren comprar algo bueno.

Ellos no quieren comprar nada. ¿ Quieren ellos comprar un libro ?

Quieren comprar uno.

¿Quiere V. buscar á mi hijo?

When the direct object of a verb is a person, or a thing personifled, it is always preceded by the preposition a, which is not to be translated into English.

I am willing to look for your son. Quiero buscar á su hijo de V.

CONVERSACIÓN

1. ¿ Quiere V. romper mis vasos? No quiero romperlos. 2. ¿ Quiere ese hombre cortarle el dedo á V.? No quiere cortármelo. 3. ¿ Quiere el sastre componer alguna cosa? Quiere componer algunos chalecos. 4. ¿ Quiere V. hablar? Quiero hablar. 5. ¿ Quién quiere remendar los zapatos de nuestros hijos? Nosotros queremos remendarlos. 6. ¿ Quiere su padre de V. buscar su paraguas ó su bastón? Quiere buscar ambos. 7. ¿ Quieren Vds. comprar muchos gorros? Queremos comprar sólo algunos, pero nuestros niños quieren comprar muchísimos. 8. ¿ Quiere su padre de V. ir á casa de su amigo? No quiere ir á casa de su amigo, pero quiere ir á casa de su vecino. 9. ¿ Tengo razón en calentar el caldo de V.? Tiene V. razón en calentarlo. 10. ¿ En casa de quién está el inglés? Está en la casa de V. 11. ¿ Está en casa su padre de V.? No, señor, no está en casa. 12. ¿ En dónde está su hijo de V.? Está en casa. 13. ¿ Quiere V. beber algo? Nada quiero beber. 14. ¿ Está el escocés en casa de alguno? No está en casa de nadie; está en su casa.

EXERCISE

1. Do you wish to work? I am willing to work, but I am tired. 2. What do you wish to pick up? I wish to pick up this dollar and that shilling. 3. What does the shoemaker wish to mend? He wishes to mend our old shoes. 4. What do you wish to do? We wish to warm our tea and our father's coffee. 5. Is your son willing to work? He is not willing to work. 6. What do you wish to buy? I wish to buy some forks. 7. What does he wish to buy? He wishes to buy some ships. 8. Does the sailor wish to drink some wine? He does not wish to drink any, he is not thirsty. 9. Do you wish to buy a bird? I wish to buy several. Does any one wish to tear your coat? No one wishes to tear 11. Do you wish to go to my house: I do not wish to go to yours, but to my brother's. 12. Are you willing to look for our hats or for those of the Dutch? I do not wish to look for either yours or those of the Dutch, but I am willing to look for mine, and for those of my good friends. 13. Is he afraid to tear your coat? He is not afraid to tear it, but to burn it. 14. Is the foreigner at our brother's? He is not 15. With whom is the Italian? He is at our brother's. with nobody; he is at home. 16. Do you wish to go to any one's house? I wish to go to no one's house. 17. What does the German wish to do at home? He wishes to work, and to drink some good wine. 18. Who is tired? My brother is tired. 19. Does the Spaniard wish to buy anything? He

 $\mathsf{Digitized} \ \mathsf{by} \ Google$

wishes to buy something, but he has no money. 20. Is this good paper? It is very good. 21. Is he wicked? No. Sir. he is not wicked.

NINETEENTH LESSON-Lección Décimanovena

There, thither. Allí. or Allá. To go there. Ir allá. To be there. Estar allí. Do you wish to go there? ¿Quiere V. ir allá? Yes, I wish to go there. Sí, quiero ir allá.

All usually signifies there, resting or situated in that place; allá implies motion there, or toward that place. Alli is also more specific; allá more extensive and indefinite.

To carry, to bear. To send. To take, to lead, to conduct. To take it there. To order sent.

Him (object of the verb), or it. To send him there.

To take him there. Them (object).

To carry them there.

To carry some there.

father?

I wish to send him there, to him. Yo quiero enviarlo allá.

The physician. To come. When ? To-morrow. To-day.

Somewhere, anywhere. Nowhere, not anywhere.

Do you wish to go anywhere? I wish to go somewhere.

I do not wish to go anywhere.

Llevar. Enviar.

Conducir.* Llevarlo allá. Mandar.

Le, or lo. Enviarlo allá. Conducirlo allá.

Los (obj. pers. pronoun).

Llevarlos allá.

Llevar alguno, or algunos allá.

Do you wish to send him to my ¿Quiere V. enviarlo á casa, or á la casa de mi padre?

El médico. Venir.* ¿ Cuándo? Mañana.

Hoy. Alguna parte. Ninguna parte.

¿ Quiere V. ir á alguna parte? Yo quiero ir á alguna parte. No quiero ir á ninguna parte.

The Spanish ordinarily requires two negatives, as is seen in the foregoing example.

To write.

Escribir.

Escribir is regular save in the past participle, where it has the irregular form, escrito.

At what o'clock?
At one o'clock.
At two o'clock.

Half. The quarter.

One o'clock.

À qué hora? À la una.

Á las dos. Modio Modio

Medio. Media (fem.).

El cuarto. La una.

La is the feminine definite article, the, corresponding to the masculine el, which is already familiar to the student.

The word o'clock is never translated. In its stead the feminine articles la and las, referring to hora and horas, hour and hours, understood, are used with the numerals.

At a quarter past one. At a quarter past two.

At a quarter to one.

At twelve o'clock at night.
Midnight.

At twelve o'clock. Midday.

The night.
In the night.

Less.
At twenty minutes to four.

Note, billet, bill.

Á la una y media.

Á la una y cuarto. Á las dos y cuarto.

Á la una menos cuarto.
 Á los tres cuartos para la una.

Á las doce de la noche.

Media noche.

Á las doce. Medio día. La noche.

En la noche (de noche).

Menos.

Á las cuatro menos veinte minu-

Billete.

Querer is used to translate the auxiliary will only when a willingness is to be expressed, and not a mere future intention.

CONVERSACIÓN

1. ¿ Quiere V. ir á su casa ? Sí; quiero ir. 2. ¿ Quieren ir á mi casa los niños de V. ? No quieren ir. 3. ¿ Los quiere él llevar á su casa ? No los quiere llevar á su casa. 4. ¿ Quiere V. llevar su hijo á mi casa ? Sí; quiero. 5. ¿ Cuándo quiere V. llevarlos ? Quiero llevarlos hoy. 6. ¿ Quieren los españoles ir á alguna parte ? No quieren ir á

ninguna parte. 7. ¿ Quiere él llevar estos pájaros ? Los quiere llevar á su casa. 8. ¿ Quiere V. enviar su criado á mi casa ? Quiero enviar uno. 9. ¿ Tiene su amigo de V. deseo de escribir tanto como yo ? Tiene deseo de escribir tanto. 10. ¿ Cuántos sombreros más tiene el sombrerero ? Tiene otros seis. 11. ¿ Á qué hora quiere V. enviar su criado á casa del holandés ? Á las seis menos cuarto. 12. ¿ Quiere su criado de V. llevar mi billete á casa de su padre de V. ? Quiere llevarlo allá.

EXERCISE

1. Do you wish to go home? Yes, I wish to go. 2. Where do you wish to go? I wish to go home. 3. Will your servant take my note to your father? He will take it there. 4. Will you come? I will not come (ir.). 5. Where do they wish to go? They wish to go nowhere. 6. Do you wish to take my children to the physician? I am willing to take them there. 7. When will you send your servant to the physician? To-day. 8. Where will you go? I will go to the Scotchman. 9. Will our friend go to any one? He will go to no one. 10. Will you take the physician to this man? I will take him there. 11. Has your brother time to come to my house? He has no time to come (ir.) there. 12. To whose house does he wish to send them? To his friends'. 13. Will you send one more trunk to our friend? I will send him several more. 14. Do you wish to buy as many dogs as horses? I will buy more of the latter than of the former. 15. At what o'clock does your friend wish to go there? He will go there at midnight.

TWENTIETH LESSON—Lección Vigésima

To (meaning in order to or for).

To see.

Para.

Ver.*

Have you any money to buy Tiene V. dinero para comprar

bread?

Yes, I have some to buy a little. Si, tengo para comprar un poco.

Do you wish to go to your brother Quiere V. ir & la casa de su in order to see him?

It is necessary to go early to see Es necesario ir temprano para him.

Puede V. rebanar pan para mí?

Can you cut me some bread?

Has your brother a knife to cut & Tiene su hermano de V. un cuchillo para rebanar su pan ? his bread? No tiene para rebanarlo. He has none to cut it. Barrer. To sweep. Matar. To kill. Salar, echar en sal. To salt. Salt. Sal (fem.). To be able. To know. Poder.* Saber.* Puede V. ? (Podéis vosotros ?) Can you? or are you able? I can, or I am able. Yo puedo. I can not, I am not able. No puedo. Can not you? are not you able? No puede V. ? ¿ Puede él ? Can he? is he able? He can, he is able. Él puede. He can not, he is not able. No puede. Can not he? is not he able? No puede él ? Nosotros podemos. We can, we are able. You can, you are able. V. puede—(pl.) Vds. pueden. They can, they are able. Ellos pueden. Me. Me (pers. objc. pron.). Him. Le, or lo. To see me. Verme, or para verme. To see him. Verlo, or para verlo. To see the man. Ver al hombre. To see the tree. Ver el árbol. Matarlo, or para matarlo. To kill him. To. Al—(plu.) á los. To the, or at the.

•		. 14	,		
SINGULAR.	PLURAL.	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.		
To the friend.	To the friends.	Al amigo.	Á los amigos.		
To the man.	To the men.	Al hombre.	Á los hombres.		
To the captain.	To the captains.	Al capitán.	Á los capitanes.		
To the book.	To the books.	Al libro.	A los libros.		
To him	, to her.	Le (objective).			
To me.		Me (objective).			
To speak to me.		Hablarme.			
To speak to him or to her.		Hablarle.			
To write to him or to her.		Escribirle.			

To write to him or to her. Can you write to me?

Digitized by Google

Puede V. escribirme ?

I can write to you.	Puedo escribirle. Puedo escribir & V.			
	Puedo escribir á V.			
Can the man speak to you?	Puede el hombre hablar á V.?			
He can speak to me.	Puede hablarme.			
Do you wish to write to your brother?	Quiere V. escribir á su hermano ?			
I wish to write to him.	Quiero escribirle.			
The basket.	El canasto.			
The floor.	El suelo.			
The cat.	El gato.			
The broom.	La escoba, These two words			
The carpet.	(La alfombra.) are feminiae. (El tapete.			
Will you send the book to the man?	Quiere V. enviar el libro al hombre?			
I will send it to him.	Quiero enviárselo.			
When will you send it to him?	La Cuándo quiere V. enviárselo!			

SINGULAR

I will send it to him to-morrow. Quiero enviárselo mañana.

			DIRECT OBJECT.	INDIRECT OBJECT.
1st person,	Me.	To me.	Me.	Me.
3d "	Him.	To him.	Le, or lo.	Le.

PLURAL

To us.

1st

Us.

2 d	. 44	You.	To you.	AV. (á vosotro	s). Os.				
3d	46	Them.	To them.	Les, or los.	Les.				
Does he wish to speak to you?				¿ Quiere él hablar á V. ?					
He does not wish to speak to me, but to you.			speak to me,	Él no quiere hablarme á mí, pero quiere hablar á V.					
Do you wish to write to him?			e to him?	¿ Quiere V. escribirle?					
I do not wish to write to him, but			te to him, but	No quiero escribirle á él, pero					
to his brother.				quiero escribir á su hermano.					

When two personal pronouns precede or follow a verb, one as the indirect and the other as the direct object, the indirect stands first in order. Where there are two pronouns of the third person, one referring to a person and the other to a thing, the one referring to a person is rendered by se for sake of euphony; as, I wish to buy him it, Yo quiero comprárselo, instead of comprarlelo.

Digitized by Google

Nos.

TABLE OF THE PERSONAL PRONOUNS

	.	PLEONASTIC OBJECTIVE,1	governed by any preposition.	mí.*	it, 61.	t, ella.	v. s, that, ello.						ellos.		
		PLEON.	801	me,	bin, i	her, it	you, it, this, t		us,	ns,	you,	you,	them,	them,	you,
		DBJEOT.1		ne.	င့် စွဲ	e .	<u>o</u>		nos.	nos.	90	.so	les.	les.	les.
	සේ	INDIRECT OBJECT.		to me,	to him, to	to her, to	to you,		to us,	to us,	to you,	to vou,	to them,	to them,	to you,
SINGULAR		DIRECT OBJECT.		me.	le, or lo.	la, or le.	his, that, lo.	PLURAL	nos.	nos.	.80	.80	los, or les.	las, or les.	á Vds.
SING		DIRE		me,	him, it,	her, it,	you, it, this, t	PLI							you,
	1,	Subject.		ç,¥	61.	ell a.	you. it, this, that, ello.		nosotros.	nosotras.	vosotros, vos.	vosotras, vos.	ellos.	ellas.	Vds.
				I,	he, it,	she, it,	you. it, this,		we,	we,	you,	you,	they,	they,	you,
				'n,	masc.	fem.			masc.	fem.	masc.	fem.	masc.	fem.	
				perso	3	3 :	: :		3	3	3	3	3	3	3
				1st	38	8	\$ 8		1st	1st	24	ೱ	8	쯂	39

¹ For the sake of emphasis or clearness, it is common to use what is called a pleonastic construction in the case of objective personal pronouns. This is done by placing the indirect objective forms (see col. 3 above) without a preposition nearer to the verb, and the pleonastic objective form (see col. 4 above) with a preposition more remotely; as, Yole amo, Yole amo, Then mi, it, is are governed by the proposition con (with), they are converted into commigo, contigo, consigo, and admit no change for either gender or number.

When will you send me the bas- ket?	La Cuándo quiere V. enviarme el canasto ? or Cuándo me quiere V. enviar el canasto ?
I will send it to you to-day.	Yo quiero enviárselo á V. hoy. Yo se lo quiero enviar hoy.
Are you willing to give me some bread?	
I am willing to give you some (a little).	Yo quiero darle á V. un poco.
To have to.	Tener * que.

Have you anything to do? I have nothing to do.

To lend.

I Tiene V. algo que hacer? Nada tengo que hacer. Prestar.

Different forms of sentences in which pronouns are used as Subjects, Direct and Indirect Objects:

Do you lend it? Lo or la presta V.? I lend it. Yo lo or la presto. No los or las presta V. ? Do you not lend them? I do not lend them. Yo no los or las presto. Me lo or me la presta él ? Does he lend it to me? Él se lo or se la presta á V. He lends it to you. Does he not lend it to me? No me lo or me la presta él ? He does not lend it to you. Él no (se) lo or (se) la presta á V. Do I lend them to you? or to him? 4 (Se) los or (se) las presto yo á or to her ? or to them ? V. f or á él f or á ellaf or á ellos ? You lend them to me. V. me los or me las presta á mi.

You lend them to him or to her V. (se) los or (se) las presta á él or to them.

Does he not lend it to her? or to & No (se) lo or (se) la presta él á

you? or to them?

He does not lend it to her or to El no (se) lo or (se) la presta á you or to them.

or á ella or á ellos.

ella? or á V.? or á Vds.? or á ellos ? or á ellas ?

ella or á V. or á Vds. or á ellos or á ellas.

CONVERSACIÓN

1. ¿ Tiene el capitán bastante dinero para comprar un barco? No tiene bastante para comprarlo. 2. ¿ No tiene sr. criado de V. una escoba para barrer el suelo? Tiene una para barrerlo. 3. ¿ Quiere V. matar á sus amigos? No quiero matarlos; ni aun á mis enemigos. 4. ¿ Me quiere ver su hijo de V. para hablarme? Quiere verle á V. para darle un peso. 5. ¿ Cuánto dinero puede V. enviarme? Le puedo enviar veinte reales. 6. ¿ Tiene V. un vaso para beber su vino? Sí, señor; pero no tengo vino; no tengo más que te. 7. ¿ Puede nuestro vecino hacer su lumbre? Puede hacerla. 8. ¿ Me quiere hablar el alemán? Quiere hablarle á V. 9. ¿ Tiene el cocinero más sal para salar el carnero? Tiene un poco más. 10. ¿ Tiene V. algo que hacer? Nada tengo que hacer. 11. ¿ Á quién quiere V. hablar? Á los italianos y á los franceses. 12. ¿ Quiere V. darle pan á este hombre? Quiero darle un poco. 13. ¿ Quiere V. prestarles su colchón á sus vecinos? No se lo quiero prestar á ellos.

EXERCISE

1. Can the carpenter buy a hammer? He has enough money to buy one. 2. Does your father wish to see me? He does not wish to see you. 3. Has the sailor money to buy the chocolate? He has none to buy it. 4. Have you salt enough to salt my ham? I have enough to salt it. 5. Can you cut me some bread? I can cut you some. 6. Does he wish to kill me? He does not wish to kill you: he only wishes to see you. 7. Will you send me my carpet? I will send it to you. 8. Will you lend me your basket? Yes. Sir. 9. Will you give me that which you have? Yes. Sir. 10. Do you wish to speak to the German? I wish to speak to him. 11. Does he wish to speak to my brother or to yours? He wishes to speak to both. 12. What will you give them? I will give them good cakes. 13. Has he some more rice? He has a great deal more. 14. Who will send us biscuits? The baker will send you (plural) some. 15. Do you wish to give them something? I wish to give them some money. 16. Will you lend me your books? I will lend them to you. 17. To whom will you lend your umbrellas? I will lend them to my friends.

TWENTY-FIRST LESSON—Lección Vigésimaprimera

WhomQuien—quienes (pl.). To whom....... \hat{A} quien— \hat{a} quienes (pl.).

What Que.

Who.....Quien-quienes. Subject. Object.

Object. What Que.

Whom. \Quien—quienes. Indirect obj.

What......Que. For persons or things.

¿Quién quiere escribir ? (Sub-Who wishes to write?

ject.) A quién quiere V. ver ? (Direct Whom do you wish to see ?

object.)

🛦 Á quién quiere V. hablar 🕈 (In-To whom do you wish to speak ? direct object.)

¿ Qué quiere escribir él ? (Direct What does he wish to write? object.)

De qué quiere V. hablar? (In-Of what do you wish to speak? direct object.)

Responder requires the preposition \acute{a} after it.

To answer. To answer the man.

To answer the men. Whom do you wish to answer? I wish to answer my brother.

> To answer him. To answer them.

To answer the note.

To answer it. To it, to them.

To answer the notes.

To answer them. Will you answer my note ?

I will answer it.

Responder. Responder al hombre. Responder á los hombres.

🛦 Á quién quiere V. responder 🕈 Yo quiero responder á mi her

mano. Responderle.

Responderles.

Responder al billete, or á la es-

quela.

Responder á él. Á él, á ellos.

Responder á los billetes.

Responder á ellos.

¿Quiere V. responder á mi billete ?

Yo quiero responderle.

The play, the theater.

The ball.

The storehouse.

The magazine.

The warehouse.

The counting-house.

The market.

Do you wish to go to the play?

Yes, I wish to go (there).
Is your brother at the play?

Yes, he is (there). He is not there. Where is he?

In.

Is your father in his garden ?

He is there.

Is he in the storehouse? He is there.

Where is the merchant ?

He is in the warehouse.

To have to (must).

What do you have to do?

I have nothing to do.

Have you anything to do f

I have to answer a note.

I have to speak to your brother.

What has the man to drink?

He has wine. What have you to eat?

We have ham,

El teatro (la comedia, sometimes used).

El baile.

El almacén.

El escritorio, el despacho, or la oficina.

El mercado, la plaza (fem.).

Quiere V. ir al teatro ? or á la comedia ?

Sí; quiero ir.

¿ Está su hermano de V. en el teatro ?

Sí; está.

No; no está allí.

Dónde está ?

En.

¿ Está su padre de V. en su jar-

Está en él, or está allí. Lestá él en el almacén ?

Está allí.

Dónde está el comerciante

Está en el almacén.

Tener que (implying obligation).

¿ Qué tiene V. que hacer ?

No tengo nada que hacer.
Nada tengo que hacer.

Tiene V. algo que hacer ?

Tengo que responder á un bi-

Tengo que hablar á su hermano de V.

Qué tiene que, or para beber el hombre ?

Tiene vino.

Qué tienen Vds. que, or para comer?

Tenemos jamón.

CONVERSACIÓN

1. ¿ Quiere V. escribirle al italiano? Quiero escribirle.
2. ¿ Á quién quiere V. responder? Á mi buen padre. 3. ¿ Á quién quiere V. escribir? Quiero escribirle al ruso. 4. ¿ Qué tiene para beber su padre de V.? Tiene buen vino. 5. ¿ No tiene que responderme su padre de V.? Tiene que responderle á V. 6. ¿ Dónde está el comerciante? Está en su almacén. 7. ¿ Adónde quiere V. llevarme? Quiero llevarlo á mi almacén. 8. ¿ Dónde está el holandés? Está en su desván. 9. ¿ Qué quiere V. comprar en el mercado? Quiero comprar un canasto y algunos tapetes. 10. ¿ Cuántos tapetes quiere V. comprar? Quiero comprar dos. 11. ¿ Tienen Vds. muchos fusiles en sus almacenes? Tenemos muchos fusiles, pero tenemos pocos cañones (cannon). 12. ¿ Cuántos reales le quiere V. dar al carpintero? Quiero darle cinco.

EXERCISE

1. Will you write to me? I will write to you. 2. Whom will you answer? My good father. 3. Who will write to you? The Russian. 4. Will they answer them? They will answer them. 5. Can the Spaniards answer us? They can not answer us, but we can answer them. 6. What have you to write? A note. 7. What has the shoemaker to do? He has to mend my shoes. 8. Where will you speak to him? At his house. 9. Have I to answer the note in Spanish? Yes, Sir, in Spanish. 10. Will you answer the merchants' notes? I will answer them. 11. Have you a desire to go to the ball? I have a desire to go (there). 12. When will you take your boy to the play? To-morrow. 13. Is your friend at the ball? He is there. 14. Where does your cook wish to go? He wishes to go to the market. 15. Will you come to me in order to go to the play? I will come (ir) to you, but I have no wish to go to the play. 16. Will you go to my garden or to that of the Scotchman? I will go neither to yours nor to that of the Scotchman; I wish to go to that of the Italian. 17. Where will you take them? I shall take them home. 18. Is he willing to sweep the floor? He is willing to do it, but he has no time. 19. Do you wish to see our guns? I

will go to your warehouses in order to see them. 20. Where will you buy your trunk? I will buy it at the market. 21. Will you give this man a real? I will give him several. 22. Have you time to write to the merchant? I wish to write to him, but I have no time to-day. 23. Where does the Spaniard wish to go? He wishes to go nowhere. 24. Where does the baker wish to go? He wishes to go to the wood.

TWENTY-SECOND LESSON-Lección Vigésimasegunda

Corner. Hole. Bottom. Bag. Room.

> End. Wav.

To send for.

To go for, to fetch.

To fetch, to bring.

Do you wish to send for some AQuiere V. enviar por vino? wina ?

I will send for a little.

Will your boy go for some bread? ¿Quiere ir por pan su muchache

He will not.

I wish to send for the physician. He wishes to send for my brothers.

He wishes to send for them. Do you wish to send for glasses? I wish to send for some. What have you to do? I have to go to the market.

You have to mend your coat.

What have you to drink? I have good wine.

Rincón. Agujero.

Fondo. Costal.

Cuarto. Cabo.

Camino.

Enviar por, mandar por, or enviar á buscar.

Ir por, or ir á buscar.

Traer.

Quiero enviar por un poco.

de V. ?

No quiere, or no, seffor.

Quiero enviar por el médico.

El quiere mandar, or enviar por mis hermanos.

Quiere mandar por ellos.

¿Quiere V. enviar por vasos? Quiero enviar por algunos.

¿ Qué tiene V. que hacer?

Tengo que ir al mercado. V. tiene que remendar su ves-

¿ Qué tiene V. que beber ? Tengo buen vino.

They have.

Ellos tienen.

What have the men to do?

This afternoon.

¿ Qué tienen que hacer los hom-

bres ?

They have to go to the store- Tienen que ir al almacén. house.

Esta tarde. (Fem.)

This.

Este. (Masc.) Esta. (Fem.)

The cook.

El cocinero. El hogar.

The hearth, the home. The study.

El estudio.

In the afternoon. This morning.

Por la tarde, or en la tarde. Esta mañana. (Fem.)

In the morning. Now, at present. Por la mañana, or en la mañana.

Thou hast.

Ahora. Tú tienes.

Thou art. Art thou fatigued? Tú estás, or tú eres. ¿Estás tú fatigado? No estoy fatigado.

I am not fatigued. Are the men tired?

¿Están cansados los hombres ?

When an adjective qualifies a substantive, it agrees with it in gender and number. Adjectives form their plural in the same manner as nouns.

They are not tired.

No están cansados.

Thou wilt (or wishest).

Tú quieres. Tú puedes.

Thou art able (or canst).

Art thou willing to make my Quieres hacer mi fuego?

I am willing to make it, but I Quiero hacerlo, pero no puedo. can not.

Art thou afraid ?

Tienes miedo?

I am not afraid, I am cold. Art thou hungry?

No tengo miedo, tengo frío. A Tienes hambre ?

To sell.

Vender.

To tell, to say.

Decir.*

To tell some one, to say to some Decir á alguno.

one.

The word.

La palabra. (Fem.)

to make the fire?

Are you willing to tell the servant & Quiere V. decir al criado que encienda lumbre?

I am willing to tell him to make it. Yo quiero decirle que la encienda,

To make a fire.

Thy.

Tu.

Tus. (Plu.)

Thine.

El tuyo.

Los tuyos. (Plu.)

Thy book, thy books.

Tu libro.

Tus libros. (Plu.)

A No estás tú cansado?

CONVERSACIÓN

1. Hijo mío, ¿ quieres ir por bollos? Sí, padre; quiero ir. 2. ¿ En dónde está su dinero de V.? Está en mi despacho. 3. ¿ En dónde está el perro del hombre? Está en un rincón del barco. 4. ¿ Tiene V. algo que hacer? Tengo algo que hacer. 5. ¿ Á cuántos hombres tiene V. que hablar? Tengo que hablarles á cuatro. 6. ¿ Cuándo quiere V. ir á casa del francés? Quiero ir á su casa esta noche. 7. ¿ Tiene V. que escribir tantos billetes como el inglés? Tengo que escribir menos que él. 8. ¿ Pueden sus niños de V. conteslarme (answer) mis billetes? Pueden contestárselos. 9. ¿ Qué libros quiere vender mi hermano? Quiere vender los tuyos y los suyos. 10. ¿ Qué quiere V. decirle al criado? Quiero decirle que encienda la lumbre y barra el almacén. 11. ¿ Tienes valor para ir al bosque por la noche? Tengo el valor de ir, pero no de noche.

EXERCISE

1. Will you send for some sugar? I will send for some. 2. Who is in the garden? The children of our friends are there. 3. Where is he? He is in his counting-house. 4. Will you give me some money to (para) bring some bread? I will give you some to bring some. 5. Where is your cat? It is in the hole. 6. Where has the peasant his corn? He has it in his bag. 7. Is your cat in this bag? It is in it. 8. Who is at the end of the road? My father is there. Can our friend drink as much wine as coffee ! He can not drink as much of the latter as of the former. 10. When have you to speak to them? This evening. 11. At what o'clock? At half-past seven. 12. When will you go to the Frenchman? I will go to him to-night. 3. When will you speak to him? At present. 14. Do not your neighbors wish to go to the market? They can not go; they are fatigued. 15. What do you wish to say to the servant? I

wish to tell him to make the fire (que encienda) and to sweep (que barra) the warehouse. 16. Whom do you wish to see? I wish to see the Scotchman.

TWENTY-THIRD LESSON-Lección Vigésimatercera

To go out.

To remain, to stay.

When do you wish to go out? I wish to go out now.

To remain at home.

To remain here. Will you stay here?

I will stay here.

Salir.*

Quedar. Quedarse. (Reflexive verb.)

¿Cuándo quiere V. salir?

Yo quiero salir ahora. Quedar, *or* estar en casa.

Aquí.

Quedar aquí, or quedarse aquí. ¿ Quiere V. quedarse aquí?

Quiero quedarme aquí.

The pronouns me, te, and se are used with many verbs to give them a reflexive sense:

Will your friend remain here?

He will not stay here.

The pleasure.

The favor.
To give pleasure.

To do a favor.
To go.

Quiere quedarse aquí su amigo de V. ?

No quiere quedarse aquí. El placer, or el gusto.

El favor.

Dar gusto. Hacer un favor.

Ir.

INDICATIVE PRESENT OF IR

SINGULAR.

Yo voy. Tú vas.

Tu vas.

Él va.

Ella va.

V. va.

What are you going to do! I am going to read.

To read.

The soldier.

All, every.

Every day, Every morning. PLURAL.

Nosotros vamos.

Vosotros vais.

Ellos van.

Vds. van.

¿Qué va V. á hacer?

Voy á leer.

Leer.

El soldado.

Todo. Todos. Todas.

Todos los días.

Todas las mañanas.

Every afternoon. Every evening, or every night. He is, she is, it is.

Late (afternoon).

To need, to want.

I want it. Do you want this knife? I do not want it. I want them. I do not want them. I do not want anything. Does he need money? He does not need any more.

What do you need? To be acquainted with, to know.

To be acquainted with (to know) Conocer á un hombre. a man.

Todas las tardes. Todas las noches.

Es. Tarde.

(Tener necesidad de.

Necesitar. Lo necesito.

A Necesita V. este cuchillo ?

No lo necesito. Los necesito. No los necesito. No necesito nada.

A Necesita él algún dinero ?

No necesita más. ¿ Qué necesita V. ?

Conocer.

CONVERSACIÓN

1. ¿ Quiere V. decirle á mi criado que encienda la lumbre ? Quiero decirle que la encienda. 2. ¿ Qué vas á hacer ? Voy á casa del sombrerero para decirle que componga su sombrero de V.? 3. Quiere él venderme sus caballos? Quiere vendérselos á V. 4. ¿ Qué hora es ? Son las doce y cuarto. 5. ¿ Adónde va V. ahora? Voy al teatro. 6. ¿ En dónde se quiere quedar su padre de V.? Quiere quedarse allí. 7. ¿ Á qué hora está en casa el holandés? Está todas las noches á las nueve y cuarto. 8. ¿ Cuál buey quiere él comprar ? Quiere comprar el de su amigo de V. 9. ¿ Quiere ese hombre beber demasiado vino? Quiere beber demasiado. 10. 1 Me puede V. prestar un cuchillo? Le puedo prestar á V. uno. 11. ¿ Qué me quiere V. decir ? Le quiero decir una palabra. 12. ¿ No necesita vino el inglés? No necesita ninguno: tiene bastante.

EXERCISE

1. Will you do me a favor? Yes, Sir; which? (cual?) 2. What will you tell your father? I will tell him to sell you his horse. 3. Do these men wish to sell their carpets? They do not wish to sell them. 4. Wilt thou go to the tailor to tell him to mend (que componga) my coats? I will go to him. 5. Has he any iron guns to sell? He has some to sell. 6. Is it late? It is not late. 7. What are you going to do? I am going to read. 8. When will you lend it me? I will lend it you to-morrow. 9. Where have you to go? I have to go to the counting-house. 10. Do you go to the Scotchman in the afternoon or in the morning? I go to him in the afternoon and in the morning. 11. Where is your brother? He is at his warehouse. 12. Will you stay here or there? I will stay there. 13. When does our neighbor go to the Irishmen? He goes to them every day. 14. Does he wish to buy this or that ox? He wishes to buy neither this nor that. 15. When does he sell his books? He will sell them to-day. 16. Do you wish to know my children? I do wish to know them. 17. Have you wine enough to drink? I have only a little, but enough, 18. Can your father lend me a book? He can lend you several, 19. Does your brother want money? He does not want any. 20. Do you need these walking canes? I need them. 21. What do I want? You want nothing. 22. When do you want me? Now. 23. Do you want my servants? I want them. 24. What does the Englishman want? He wants some glasses.

TWENTY-FOURTH LESSON—Lección Vigésimacuarta PARTIAL INFLECTION OF VERBS

The inflection of regular verbs is effected by adding the various terminations to the stem, which is readily obtained by striking off the endings ar, er, ir from the infinitive mode.

See complete table of terminations in the Elements.

6

Terminations of Present Indicative, with Corresponding Personal Pronouns.

	FIRST CONJ.	SECOND CONJ.	THIRD CONJ.
PRONOUNS.	Sing.	Sing.	Sing.
Yo	1. o.	1. o.	1. o.
Tú	2. as.	2. es.	2. es.
Él, ella, usted	8. а.	8. e.	8. e.
	Plural.	Plural.	Plural.
Nosotros	1. amos.	1. emos.	1. imos.
Vosotros	2. áis.	2. éis.	2. ís.
Ellos, ellas, ustedes	8. an.	3. en,	3. en.

There are two participles, the present and the past, which are usually regular. The terminations are:

		PRESENT.	PAST.
1st o	onjugat	ionando.	ado.
2d	"	iendo.	ido.
8d	66	iendo.	ido.

FIRST CONJUGATION

Infinitive.	Present Participle.	Infinitivo.	Participio de Presente.
To speak.	Speaking.	Hablar.	Hablando.

PRESENT

I speak, thou speakest, he speaks. Yo hablo, tú hablas, él habla, V. habla.

We speak, you speak, they speak. Nosotros hablamos, vosotros hablais, ellos hablan, Vds. hablan.

SECOND CONJUGATION

To sell.	Selling.	Vender.	Vendiendo.
I sell, thou sel	llest, he sells.	Yo vendo, tú vende.	vendes, él vende, V.
We sell, you s	ell, they sell.		emos, vosotros ven- enden, Vds. venden.

THIRD CONJUGATION

	To receive.		Receiving.		Recibir.			Recibiendo.		
I	receive,	thou	receivest	, he re-	Yo	recibo	, tú	recibes,	él 1	recibe,
	ceives.				V	. recib	e.			
			•	4.9	**		•••	•		

We receive, you receive, they receive.

Nosotros recibinos, vosotros receive.

cibís, ellos reciben, Vds. reciben.

To have.	Having.	Tener.	Teniendo.		
I have, thou ha	st, he has.	Yo tengo, tú	tienes, él tiene.		
We have, you h	ave, they have.	Nosotros tenemos, vosotros tenéis			
		ellos tiener	1.		

To ask for.	Asking for.	Pedir.	Pidiendo.
I ask for, thou askest for, he asks		Yo pido, tú pides, él pide.	
for.			
We ask for, you ask for, they ask		Nosotros pedimos, vosotros pedis,	
for.		ellos pide	n.

ellos piden.

To warm. Warming. I warm, thou warmest, he warms.

Calentar. Calentando. Yo caliento, tú calientas, él calienta

We warm, you warm, they warm. Nosotros calentamos,

vosotros calentáis, ellos calientan.

To make. Making, or To do. Doing. I make, thou makest, he makes.

Hacer. Haciendo.

Yo hago, tú haces, él hace. Nosotros hacemos, vosotros ha-We make, you make, they make. céis, ellos hacen.

To go. Going. I go, thou goest, he goes. We go, you go, they go.

Ir. Yendo. Yo voy, tú vas, él va. Nosotros vamos, vosotros vais, ellos van.

To mend, or Mending, or To repair. Repairing.

Remendar. Remendando.

I mend, thou mendest, he mends.

SY o remiendo, tú remiendas, él remienda.

We mend, you mend, they mend.

Nosotros remendamos, vosotros remendáis, ellos remiendan.

To be. Being. Estar. Estando. Ser. Siendo.

I am, thou art, he is. We are, you are, they are. Yo estoy, tú estás, él está. Nosotros estamos, vosotros estáis. ellos están.

Yo soy, tú eres, él es. Nosotros somos, vosotros sois, ellos son.

To lead, or Leading, or To conduct. Conducting. conducts.

Conducir. Conduciendo.

We conduct, you conduct, they) Nosotros conducimos, vosotros conduct.

I conduct, thou conductest, he) Yo conduzco, tú conduces, él conduce.

To come. Coming. conducís, ellos conducen.

I come, thou comest, he comes. We come, you come, they come.

Viniendo. Yo vengo, tú vienes, él viene. Nosotros venimos, vosotros venís, ellos vienen.

To see. Seeing. I see, thou seest, he sees. We see, you see, they see.

Ver. Viendo. Yo veo, tú ves, él ve. Nosotros vemos, vosotros veis, ellos ven.

To go out. Going out. I go out, thou goest out, he goes Yo salgo, tú sales, él sale. out.

Salir. Saliendo.

We go out, you go out, they go Nosotros salimos, vosotros salís,

ellos salen.

To be able. Being able. I can, thou canst, he can. We can, you can, they can.

Poder. Pudiendo. Yo puedo, tú puedes, él puede. Nosotros podemos, vosotros podéis, ellos pueden.

To tell, or Telling, or To say. Saying. I tell, thou tellest, he tells. We tell, you tell, they tell.

Decir. Diciendo. Yo digo, tú dices, él dice. Nosotros decimos, vosotros decis, ellos dicen.

To finish. Any one. No one. Whither. Acabar. Alguien. Alguno.) Indefinite pro-Nadie. Ninguno. \ nouns. Adonde.

To love. Loving. I love, thou lovest, he loves. We love, you love, they love.

Amando. Amar. Yo amo, tú amas, él ama. Nosotros amamos, vosotros amáis, ellos aman.

To please.

Gustar.

This verb is used in the third person, singular or plural, the thing which pleases or which any one likes is the subject, the person or thing pleased being the indirect object.

I like, I am fond of. Thou likest, or it pleases thee. He likes, or it pleases him. We like, or it pleases us.

A mi me gusta. À ti te gusta. Á él le gusta. Á nosotros nos gusta. You like them, or they please you. A V. le gustan.

Do you like this man? Yes, he pleases me. No, I do not like him, Are they fond of these children ? Les gustan estos niños ? Yes, they are fond of them. No, they are not fond of them. To open.

Do you open the note? I do not open it. Does he open his eyes? He opens them. Whom do you love?

I love my father.

To arrange, to set in order. What are you arranging? I am arranging my books. What is he drinking? He is drinking wine. Is he fond of wine? He is fond of it. What is the American fond of? He is fond of coffee.

To answer. Do you answer the note? Yes, I answer it.

To know. I know.

A stick of wood. Yet. Not yet. It is not yet seven o'clock.

Also.

More than.

He buys more than twenty.

The cook.

Le gusta á V. este hombre? Sí, me gusta.

No; no me gusta.

Sí, á ellos les gustan.

No, á ellos no les gustan.

Abrir-past participle, abierto.

Abre V. el billete

No lo abro.

Abre él los ojos ?

Los abre.

🛦 Á quién ama V. 🕈

Amo á mi padre.

Arreglar.

¿ Qué está V. arreglando? Estoy arreglando mis libros.

¿ Qué está bebiendo él ? Está bebiendo vino.

Le gusta el vino?

Le gusta.

¿Qué le gusta al americano?

Le gusta el café.

Contestar. Responder. Contesta V. el billete?

Sí, lo contesto.

Saber.* Yo sé (the remainder

of the Ind. Pres. is regular).

Un palo.

Todavía. Todavía no.

Todavía no son las siete.

También.

Más de or más que.

Él compra más de veinte.

El cocinero.

Ordinarily comparison is made by the use of más que, more than: but in a comparison between numbers más de takes its place, except in negative sentences, then más que must remain:

He is taller than you. I have more than six horses.

They have no more than one shoe. Ellos no tienen más que un zapato.

Él es más grande que V. Tengo más de seis caballos.

CONVERSACIÓN

1. ¿ Le ama á V. su hermano? No me ama. 2. ¿ Á quién ama V.? Amo á mis niños. 3. ¿ Ve su padre de V. nuestros barcos? No los ve, pero nosotros los vemos. 4. ¿ Á quién escribe el amigo de V.? Le escribe á su sastre. 5. ¿ Escriben Vds. sus ejercicios por la tarde. Los escribimos por la mañana. 6. ¿ Conoce V. á ese hombre? No lo conozco. 7. ¿ Á quién conoce V.? No conozco á nadie. 8. ¿ Adónde va nuestro amigo? No va á ninguna parte; se queda en casa. 9. ¿ Le gustan á V. los pájaros? Me gustan. 10. ¿ Qué tiene que hacer su criado de V.? Tiene que barrer el suelo y arreglar mis libros. 11. ¿ Qué hora es ahora? Ya son las seis. 12. ¿ Le gusta á V. el español? Sí, señor; me gusta.

EXERCISE

1. Do you love your brother? I love him. 2. Dost thou love this ugly man? I do not love him. 3. Do we like any one? We like no one. 4. Whom does your father want? He wants his servant. 5. What do you wish to do with it? I wish to have it, in order to read it. 6. Does he receive as many exercises as I? He receives more of them than you. 7. Do you give him a bird? I do give him one. 8. To whom do you lend your clothes? (vestidos). I do not lend them to anybody. 9. Do you sell your ship? I do not sell it. 10. Does the Englishman finish his tea? He finishes it. 11. Do you see my large garden? I see it. 12. Do you drink anything? I drink some wine. 13. Do we drink wine? We drink some. 14. Does your friend write? He writes. 15. What dost thou say? I say nothing. 16. What do you say to my servant? I tell him to sweep (que barra) the floor, and to go (que vaya) for some bread, cheese and wine. 17. What do you tell the tailors? I tell them to make (que hagan) my clothes (vestidos). 18. Where is he going? He is going to the garden. 19. What is your father reading? He is reading a book. 20. Do you read the books which I read? I do not read those which you read, but those which your father reads. 21. What is my son fond of? He is fond of money.

TWENTY-FIFTH LESSON—Lección Vigésimaquinta

To bring.

Traer.*

I bring, thou bringest, he brings. We bring, you bring, they bring.

Yo traigo, tú traes, él trae. Nosotros traemos, vosotros traéis, ellos traen.

To find.

Hallar. El testro.

The theater. The butcher.

El carnicero.

The sheep, the mutton.

El carnero.

What (meaning that which, the Lo que.

thing which).

Do you find what you look for ?

Halla V. lo que busca? Do you find what you are look- Halla V. lo que está buscando?

ing for ?

Hallo lo que busco.

I find what I look for.

I find what I am looking for.

He does not find what he is looking for.

Hallo lo que estoy buscando. Él no halla lo que está buscando.

Do you take him to the play? I do take him there.

Lo lleva V. al teatro? Lo llevo allá.

To study.

Estudiar.

Instead of. Instead of bringing.

En vez de, en lugar de. En vez de traer.

To play.

Jugar.*

I play, thou playest, he plays. We play, you play, they play.

Yo juego, tú juegas, él juega. Nosotros jugamos, vosotros jugáis, ellos juegan. Escuchar.

To listen.

Instead of listening.

En vez de escuchar. Instead of playing. En lugar (or en vez) de jugar.

Do you play instead of studying? I study instead of playing.

Juega V. en lugar de estudiar? Yo estudio en lugar de jugar. This man speaks instead of lis- Este hombre habla en vez de es-

tening.

Tiene V. el dedo malo? Tengo un dedo malo.

cuchar.

Have you a sore finger ? I have a sore finger.

Has your brother a sore foot? Tiene su hermano de V. un pie malo f

He has a sore eye. We have sore eyes.

Tiene mal de ojos. Tenemos los ojos malos.

The elbow. El codo. The arm. · El brazo. The back. La espalda. La rodilla. The knee.

Do you read instead of writing? Lee V. en vez de escribir? Does your brother read instead Lee su hermano de V. en lugar of speaking ? de hablar ?

To learn. Aprender. I learn to read. Aprendo á leer. He learns to write.

Él aprende á escribir.

CONVERSACIÓN

1. ¿ Qué tiene V. que hacer? Tengo que estudiar. 2. ¿ No sale él? No puede salir; tiene un pie malo. 3. ¿ A cuántos estamos del mes? Á tres. 4. Halla el capitán lo que busca? Halla lo que busca; pero sus niños no hallan lo que buscan. 5. ¿ Á quién busca el inglés? Está buscando á su amigo para llevarlo al jardín. 6. ¿ Sale V. en vez de quedarse en casa? Me quedo en casa en vez de salir. 7. ¿ Compra V. un paraguas en vez de comprar un libro? No compro ni el uno ni el otro. 8. ¿Le da á V. más queso que pan? Me da menos de éste que de aquél. 9. ¿ Le da V. á mi amigo menos cuchillos que guantes? Le doy más de éstos que de aquéllos. 10. ¿Salen los médicos ? Se quedan en casa en vez de salir. 11. ¿ Lee V. el libro que yo leo ? No leo el que V. lee, sino el que el gran capitán lee. 12. Hace café su criado de V. ? Hace te en vez de hacer café.

EXERCISE

1. Do you go to the play this evening? I do not go to the play. 2. Does your father go out? He does not go out. 3. When does he write it? He writes it in the morning and in the evening. 4. Does the shoemaker bring our shoes? He does not bring them. 5. Who has a sore arm? I have a sore arm. 6. Who has sore eyes? The French have sore eyes. 7. What day of the month is it to-morrow? To-morrow is the fourth. 8. Whom are you seeking? I am looking for your son. 9. Is anybody looking for my brother? Nobody is looking for him, 10. What are they

looking for? They are looking for their books. 11. Do the Spaniards find the umbrellas which they are looking for? They do not find them. 12, What do the butchers find? They find the oxen and sheep that they are looking for. 13. What is he doing in his room? He is reading. 14. What is the German doing in his room? He is learning to read. 15. Does the Dutchman speak instead of listening? He speaks instead of listening. 16. When does he study? He studies every day. 17. Does our neighbor break his canes instead of breaking his glasses? He breaks neither the ones nor the others. 18. What is our cook doing? He is making a fire instead of going to the market. 19. Does he give you money instead of giving you bread? He gives me (both) money and bread. 20. What does he give you? He gives me many books instead of giving me money.

TWENTY-SIXTH LESSON-Lección Vigésimasexta

Something, anything. Alguna cosa.

Are you going to look for any- Va V. á buscar alguna cosa—or
thing ?

Sí, lo aprendo.

I am going to look for nothing. No voy á buscar nada.

He goes for something. Él va por alguna cosa.

Do you learn or are you learning Aprende V. el francés?

I am learning it. I do not learn it.

do not learn it.

French.
El francés.
English.
German.
Italian.
Spanish.
Polish.
Russian.

No lo aprendo.
El francés.
El inglés.
El inglés.
El alemán.
El italiano.
El español.
El polaco.
El ruso.

Polish. El polaco.
Russian. El ruso.
Latin. El latín.
Greek. El griego.

Arabian, Arabic. El árabe, el arábigo.

Syrian, Syriac. El siriaco. The Pole. El polaco.

The Roman. El romano.
The Greek. El griego.
The Arab, the Arabian. El árabe.
The Syrian. El siriaco.

In referring to nationality or profession the indefinite article is omitted:

Are you an Englishman? 🛚 Es V. inglés 🕈 No. Sir. I am a German. No, señor, soy alemán. He is a Frenchman. Es francés. LEs sastre ? Is he a tailor? No: es zapatero. No, he is a shoemaker. La tarde. The afternoon. La mañana. The morning. El día. The day.

A or an is usually rendered by the definite article in alluding to parts of the body.

Él tiene la frente ancha. He has a large forehead. He has blue eyes. Tiene los ojos azules. They have white teeth. Ellos tienen los dientes blancos. The forehead. La frente. Blue. Azul. Black. Negro. White. Blanco. Big, large, tall, great. Grande. Long. Largo.

Grande usually loses the syllable de when it stands before a masculine singular noun. When it applies to greatness of quality rather than size, it precedes the noun. In such cases it sometimes loses the syllable de before even feminine singular nouns.

A large knife.

A large man.

A great man.

A Spanish book.

An English book.

Spanish money.

English paper.

Un cuchillo grande.

Un hombre grande.

Un gran hombre.

Un libro español.

Un libro inglés.

Moneda española.

Papel inglés.

In ordinary language the attributive adjective follows the noun which it qualifies. This includes participial, proper, augmentative,

diminutive, and usually long adjectives, as well as all past participles:

Do you read a German book ? I read an Italian book.

A beloved son. To listen to something.

To listen to some one. Do you listen to that man ?

Yes, I listen to him.

Do you listen to what he tells you?

Yes, I listen to it.

Do you listen to what I tell you?

Do you listen to me ?

To correct.

To take off, or away.

To take away. The exercise.

The theme.

To take, receive.

Lee V. un libro alemán? Leo un libro italiano.

Un hijo amado.

Escuchar alguna cosa, or algo. Escuchar á uno, or á alguno.

Lescucha V. á ese hombre ?

Sí: le escucho.

Escucha V. lo que le dice?

Sí: vo lo escucho.

¿Escucha V. lo que le digo ?

Me escucha V.? Corregir.

Quitar, or quitarse.

Llevarse-Llevar. El ejercicio.

El tema.

Tomar.

When the possessive pronouns are to be used with reflexive verbs, they are replaced by the definite articles el, la, los, and las:

Do you take your hat off ?

I take it off.

I take my gloves off. Do you take off your shoes?

I take them off.

ercises ?

He corrects them.

Do you take tea?

Yes, Sir, I take a little.

Do you drink tea every day ? I drink a little every day.

My father drinks coffee.

He drinks coffee every morn-

ing. My brother drinks chocolate.

He drinks chocolate every morn-

ing.

Se quita V. el sombrero ?

Me lo quito.

Me quito los guantes.

ASe quita V. los zapatos?

Me los quito.

Does your father correct your ex- ¿ Corrige los ejercicios de V. su

padre ! Los corrige.

Toma V. te!

Si, señor; tomo un poco.

Toma V. el te todos los días? Yo tomo un poco todo los días.

Mi padre toma café.

Toma su café todas las mafianas.

Mi hermano toma chocolate.

Toma chocolate todas las mafianas.

CONVERSACIÓN

1. ¿ Qué va V. á buscar? Voy á buscar vino. 2. ¿ Aprende el alemán su hermano de V.? Lo aprende. 3. ¿ Hablan ruso nuestros vecinos? No hablan ruso, pero hablan el árabe. 4. ¿ Eres griego? No; soy español. 5. ¿ Hablan polaco los rusos? No hablan polaco, sino latín, griego, y arábigo. 6. ¿ Qué es este hombre? Es médico. 7. ¿ Qué hace el hijo de nuestro amigo? Va al jardín, porque (because) no quiere hacer su ejercicio. 8. ¿ Vende su buey el padre de V.? Vende los caballos en lugar de vender el buey. 9. ¿ Mata bueyes el carnicero? Mata carneros en vez de matar bueyes. 10. ¿ Va V. al teatro? Voy al almacén en vez de ir al teatro. 11. ¿ Quién se lleva los vasos? Su criado de V. se los lleva. 12. ¿ Toma V. te todas las mañanas? Tomo un poco todas las mañanas. 13. ¿ Toman te sus niños de V.? Toman café en vez de tomar te.

EXERCISE

1. Do you go for anything? I go for something. 2. Does your servant go for some bread? He goes for some. 3. Do you take off your gloves in order to give me money? I take them off in order to give you some. 4. Who learns English? The Frenchman learns it. 5. Do you speak Spanish? No, sir; I speak Italian. 6. Do you speak Arabic? No. I speak Greek and Latin. 7. Have you an Italian hat? No. I have a Spanish hat. 8. Are these men Germans? No. they are Russians. 9. Are these men merchants? No, they are carpenters. 10. Art thou a Spaniard? I am not a Spaniard? 11. Has the German black eyes? No, he has blue eves. 12. What dost thou do instead of playing? I study instead of playing. 13. Do the children of our neighbors read? They write instead of reading. 14. Does the son of the painter study English? He studies Greek instead of studying English. 15. Does your brother listen to me? He speaks instead of listening to you. 16. Do the children of the physician listen to what we tell them? They do not listen to it. 17. Does your father correct my exercises, or those of my brother? He corrects neither yours

nor your brother's. 18. Do you take off your shoes? I do not take them off. 19. What do these boys take off? They take off their shoes and their hats. 20. Do you give me English or German paper? I give you neither English (repeat papel) nor German paper; I give you French paper.

TWENTY-SEVENTH LESSON-Lección Vigésimaséptima

To wet, to moisten.

To show.

I show you my book.

You show them to me. Do you show me your gun?

I show it to you.

What do you show the man?

I show him my fine clothes.

Tobacco.

Snuff.

To smoke (tobacco).

The gardener.

The valet.

The concert.

To think, or to intend.

this evening?

I intend to go.

To know.

Do you know ? I know the verb.

What does he know?

To swim.

Do you know how to swim?

Mojar, humedecer.

(Mostrar,* enseñar.

Hacer ver.

Yo muestro (enseño) mi libro á V.

V. me los muestra (me los enseña). Me muestra (or enseña) V. su

fusil ?

Se lo enseño á V., or se lo muestro á V.

A Qué enseña (or que muestra) V.

al hombre ?

(Le muestro) los vestidos hermo-

Yo le enseño (sos.

Tabaco.

Tabaco de polvo, rapé.

Fumar.

El jardinero.

El criado.

El concierto.

Pensar, or intentar.

Do you intend to go to the ball A Piensa V. ir al baile esta noche?

Pienso ir.

Saber.*

ASabe V. ?

Sé el verbo.

A Qué sabe él ?

Nadar.

Sabe V. nadar !

² See Alenter, in the Elements.

Do you know how to write?

Does he know how to read?

Sabe V. escribir † Sabe leer él †

In such cases *how* is not translated, and *saber* takes the infinitive without a preposition.

Trader, storekeeper. Ring. To extinguish.

Do you extinguish the fire ?
I do not extinguish it.
He extinguishes it.
Thou extinguishest it.
To light, to kindle.
Often.

As—as.

Do you often go to the ball †
As often as you.
As often as I.
As often as he.
As often as they.

Do you see my brother often ?

Oftener.
Oftener than.
I see him oftener than you.
Not so often.
Not so often as.
I do not speak as often as you.

Not as often as you.

Not as often as I.

Not as often as they.

Into, in.

Into, meaning to.

To go into the garden.

To go out.

Mercader, tendero. Anillo. Apagar, extinguir.* (See Elements for verbs in guir.) Apaga V. el fuego ? No lo apago. El lo apaga. Tú lo apagas. Encender.* A menudo, frecuentemente. Tan—como. ¿ Va V. frecuentemente al baile ? Tan frecuentemente como V. Tan á menudo como vo. Tan á menudo como él. Tan á menudo como ellos. ¿Ve V. á menudo á mi hermano 🕈 ¿ Ve V. á mi hermano frecuentemente f Más á menudo. Más á menudo que. Yo lo veo más á menudo que V. No tan á menudo. No tan á menudo como. Yo no hablo tan á menudo como V. No tan á menudo como V.

Digitized by Google

No tan á menudo como yo.

En. Á.

Ir al jardín.

ments.)

No tan á menudo como ellos.

Salir,* or salir fuera, or á fuera.

(See the verb Salir, in the Ele-

CONVERSACIÓN

1. ¿ Qué tabaco quiere él? Quiere tabaco en polvo. 2. ¿ Envía V. su criado á casa del sastre? Lo envío á casa del zapatero en vez de enviarlo á casa del sastre. 3. i Hallan sus hijos de V. á los amigos que buscan? No los hallan. 4. Piensan sus amigos de V. ir al teatro? Piensan ir. 5. Saben griego sus hermanos de V.? No lo saben; pero piensan estudiarlo. 6. ¿ Es comerciante este caballero? No lo es. 7. 1 Sabe V. hacer te? Sé hacerlo. 8. 1 Sabe V. escribir un billete? Sé escribirlo. 9. ¿ Apaga V. el fuego? No lo apago. 10. i Va V. frecuentemente á casa del español? Voy frecuentemente á su casa. 11. ¿ Van sus niños de V. más frecuentemente al baile que nosotros? Van más frecuentemente que Vds. 12. ¿Cuándo los ve V.? Los veo todas las mañanas á las cinco menos cuarto. 13. ¿Salimos nosotros tan á menudo como nuestros vecinos? Salimos más á menudo que ellos.

EXERCISE

1. What does your father want? He wants some tobacco. 2. Do you want tobacco? I do not want any; I do not smoke. 3. Does he show him his beautiful birds? He does show them to him. 4. Does the gardener go into the garden? He goes to the market instead of going into the garden. 5. When do you intend to go to the concert? T intend to go there this evening. 6. Do you find the man whom you are seeking? I find him. 7. When do they intend to go there? They intend to go there to-morrow. Do you intend to buy some? I do not wish to buy any. 9. Does he know Spanish? He does not know it. 10. Do you know English? I do not know it, but intend to learn it. 11. Does your son know how to make coats? He does not know how to make them; he is no tailor. 12. Do you intend to study Arabic? I intend to study Arabic and Syriac. 13. Does he listen to you? He listens to me. 14. Do you wish to take some tea? I wish to take some wine; have you any? 15. Where is your father going? He is going nowhere; he wishes to remain at home. 16. Dost

thou conduct anybody? I conduct nobody. 17. Does your servant lead your child? He leads him. 18. Where are our friends taking their sons? They are taking them home. 19. Where does he light the fire? He lights it in your ware-20. Do the Spaniards often come to you? come often to me. 21. Does your servant go to the market as often as my cook? He goes there as often as he.

TWENTY-EIGHTH LESSON-Lección Vigésimaoctava

Do I wish ? ¿Quiero yo ? Am I able ? Can I ? Am I doing? What am I doing ? What do I say? Where am I going? To whom do I speak? Where do you go? Where does he go ? Cider.

Yes. I receive one.

To begin.

Do I begin to speak Spanish? You begin to speak it. When do you begin ? I begin now. Before.

Do you speak before you listen? I listen before I speak.

breakfasting ?

To breakfast.

The breakfast. Does he go there before he writes? ¿Va él allá antes de escribir? He goes there before breakfast.

₄ Puedo yo f Estoy haciendo! Hago yo! ¿Qué estoy haciendo ! ¿Qué hago ! ¿Qué digo ? Adónde voy ? A quién hablo? Adónde va V. ? Adónde va él ? Sidra.

Do you receive a note every day? Recibe V. un billete todos los días 🕈 Sí: recibo uno.

Comenzar.* (Like alentar.) Empezar.* Principiar.

A Comienzo á hablar español ? V. comienza á hablarlo. ¿Cuándo empieza V. ? Empiezo ahora. Antes de.

Habla V. antes de escuchar ? (Yo) escucho antes de hablar. Does he go to market before ¿Va al mercado or á la plaza

antes de almorzar ? Almorzar.* (See Acordar, in the Elements.)

Desayunar.

El desayuno, el almuerzo. Va allá antes del almuerzo.

To depart, to set out.

Marcharse.
Salir,* partir.

When do you intend to depart?

¿Cuándo piensa V. salir (or mar-

charse 1)

I intend to depart to-morrow.

Pienso salir mañana.

Well. Bad, badly. Bien. Mal.

Adverbs usually follow their verbs. They are regularly formed by adding *mente* to adjectives. When these terminate in o this is changed to a before taking the ending; otherwise no change is made:

Final.

Finally.

True.

Truly.

Does he speak well ?

He speaks badly.

Do you speak Spanish well?

I speak Spanish well.

Too much.
The same.

Just the same.

Final.

Finalmente.

Verdadero.

Verdaderamente.

Habla él bien ?

Habla mal.

4 Habla V. bien el español ?

Hablo bien el español.

Demasiado.

Lo mismo.

Cabalmente lo mismo.

CONVERSACIÓN

1. ¿ Hablo vo bien? V. no habla bien. 2. ¿ Hablo vo tan bien como V.? V. no habla tan bien como yo. 3. ¿ Voy yo á su casa de V. ó viene V. á mi casa? V. viene á mi casa, y yo voy á la casa de V. 4. ¿ Recibe libros su amigo de V.? Recibe algunos. 5. Recibo yo tanto pan como queso? V. recibe más de éste que de aquél. 6. ¿ Cuántos libros más recibe nuestro vecino? Recibe tres más. 7. ¿ Cuándo piensa salir el extranjero? Piensa salir hoy. 8. ¿ Le contesta su padre de V. á su billete? Me lo contesta. 9. ¿ Le escucha su hermano de V. antes de hablar? Habla antes de escucharme. 10. ¿Barre su criado de V. los almacenes antes de ir á la plaza? Va á la plaza antes de barrer los almacenes. 11. ¿Se quita los zapatos el hijo de V. antes de quitarse el vestido? No se quita ni los zapatos ni el vestido. 12. ¿Á qué hora se desayuna el americano? Se desayuna todos los días á las nueve.

EXERCISE

1. Do I read well? You read well. 2. Does he speak German well? He speaks it badly. 3. Am I able to make hats? You are not able to make any; you are not a hatter. 4. What am I doing? You are writing exercises. 5. Do I begin to speak? You begin to speak. 6. Is he at home? Do I know? 7. Do I read as often as you? You do not read as often as I, but you speak oftener than I. 8. When do you come to me? Every morning at half-past six. 9. Does the Pole drink as much as the Russian? He drinks just as much. 10. What dost thou receive? I receive some money. 11. Do the Poles receive tobacco? They receive a little. 12. From whom do your children receive books? They receive some from me and some from their friends. 13. Do you receive one more gun? I receive one more. 14. Do you intend to depart this evening? I intend to depart to-morrow. 15. Is he going to the English? He is going to them. 16. Do your friends answer you? They answer me. 17. Does your brother begin to learn Italian ? He begins to learn it. 18. Are they able to write it? They are able to write it. 19. Do your children read before they write? They write before they read. 20. Do you intend to go out before you breakfast? I intend to breakfast before I go out. 21. Can I take off my shoes before I take off my gloves? You can not take off your shoes before you take off your gloves.

TWENTY-NINTH LESSON—Lección Vigésimanovena ADVERBS

	EQUALITY	
As much—as.	Tanto—como.	
As many—as.	Tantos—como.	
No less—than. No fewer—than.	No-menos-que.	
	INFERIORITY	
Less—than. Fewer—than.	Menos—que.	
Not so much—as.	No-tanto-como.	
Not so many—as.	No-tantos-como.	

SUPERIORITY

More-than.

I have as much money as you. You have as many friends as I. He has no less bread than ham.

We have less money than he. They have not as many books as

I have more tea than coffee. You have more than ten dollars.

More than five years.

Less than twenty years.

Much. Very much. You speak as much as I. He does not speak less than you.

They drink less than we.

they.

I read more than you.

This is the book that I like most. He is the man that I least esteem.

He studies very much.

learns.

he is.

The more he plays, the less he Cuanto más juega, tanto menos

The less he plays, the more he Cuanto menos juega, tanto más studies.

So much the more—than. So much the less—than.

Más—que.

Tengo tanto dinero como V.

V. tiene tantos amigos como yo. Él no tiene menos pan que jamón.

Tenemos menos dinero que él. No tienen tantos libros como Vds.

Tengo más te que café. V. tiene más de diez pesos.

Más de cinco años.

Menos de veinte años.

Mucho. Muchisimo. V. habla tanto como yo.

El no habla menos que V. Beben menos que nosotros.

He does not speak as much as No habla tanto como ellos.

Leo más que V.

Éste es el libro que más me gusta. Él es el hombre que menos estimo.

Estudia muchísimo.

The more he studies, the more he Cuanto más estudia, tanto más aprende.

The less he drinks, the less thirsty Cuanto menos bebe, tanto menos sed tiene.

aprende.

estudia.

Tanto más-que. Tanto menos—que.

COMPARISON OF ADJECTIVES

The comparative degree is formed by placing más or menos before the positive; the superlative is formed by adding these adverbs preceded by the definite article el, la, los, las.

Many adjectives have an absolute superlative, which is formed by adding isimo to the positive degree, as prudente, prudent, prudentisimo, very prudent. In making this change, adjectives ending in a, c, o lose these letters; those ending in ble, co, go change these

to bil, qu, gu. Those terminating in consonants take the superlative suffix without change.

ADJECTIVES WITH IRREGULAR COMPARISON

High-higher-highest. Low-lower-lowest.

Good-better-very good-best.

Great—greater—greatest. Bad-worse-worst. Little-less-least. Small—smaller—smallest. Strong-very strong. New-very new. Wise-very wise. Sacred-very sacred. Faithful—very faithful.

Honest-very honest.

Healthy-very healthy.

Alto-superior-supremo. Bajo-inferior-infimo.

Bueno—mejor—bonísimo—ópti-

Grande—mayor—máximo. Malo-peor-pésimo.

Pequeño—menor—minimo.

Fuerte—fortísimo. Nuevo-novísimo. Sabio—sapientísimo. Sagrado—sacratísimo. Fiel—fidelísimo. Integro—integérrimo. Salubre—salubérrimo.

ADVERBS

Well-better-the best. Bad-worse-the worst. Little—less—the least. Much-more-the most.

This book is small, that is smaller, and that is the smallest of all.

All.

This hat is large, but that is Este sombrero es grande, pero Is your hat as large as mine?

Is it larger than yours? It is not so large as yours. Are our neighbor's children as good as ours ? They are better than ours. They are not as good as ours.

Bien—mejor—lo mejor. Mal-peor-lo peor. Poco-menos-lo menos. Mucho—más—lo más. Este libro es pequeño, ése es más

pequeño, y aquél es el más pequeño de todos. Todo, todos.

aquél es más grande.

LES su sombrero de V. tan grande como el mío ?

LEs más grande que el de V. ? No es tan grande como el de V.

1 Son los niños de nuestro vecino tan buenos como los nuestros ? Son mejores que los nuestros. No son tan buenos como los nues-

tros. Digitized by Google A very fine book.

Very fine books.

A very pretty knife.

Very well.

That man is extremely learned.
This bird is very handsome.

Whose ! (of whom !)

Whose hat is this ?

Un libro muy hermoso, or hermosísimo.

Libros muy hermosos, or hermosísimos.

Un cuchillo muy bonito.

Muy bien.

Aquel hombre es sapientísimo. Este pájaro es muy hermoso, or hermosísimo.

¿ De quién ? (Cuyo, cuya—cuyos, cuyas.)

Ja De quién es este sombrero ?

Cuyo agrees in gender and number with the noun which follows it.

It is my brother's hat. It is the hat of my brother. It is my brother's. Who has the finest hat?

That of my father is the finest.
Do you read as often as I?
I read as often as you.
Do our children write as much we do?
They write more than you.
To whom do you write?
I write to our friends.
We read good books.

Es el sombrero de mi hermano.

Es de mi hermano.

Quién tiene el sombrero más hermoso?

El de mi padre es el más hermoso. Lee V. tan á menudo como yo? Leo tan á menudo como V.

Do our children write as much as Escriben nuestros niños tanto we do ?

Escriben más que Vds. ¿ Á quién escribe V. ? Escribo á nuestros amigos. Leemos buenos libros.

CONVERSACIÓN

1. ¿ De quién es este libro? Es mío. 2. ¿ Es su hermano tan alto como V.? Es tan alto como yo. 3. ¿ Quiénes tienen los más hermosos guantes? Los franceses los tienen. 4. ¿ De quién recibe él los zapatos? Los recibe de su mejor amigo. 5. ¿ Es su vino de V. tan bueno como el mío? Es mejor. 6. ¿ Tiene el americano un bastón más hermoso que el tuyo? Tiene uno más hermoso. 7. ¿ Se marcha V. hoy? No me marcho hoy. 8. ¿ Lee el inglés tantos libros buenos comó malos? Lee más de los buenos que de los malos.

I put on my hat.

9. ¿ Hace el zapatero de V. tantos zapatos como el mío (Hace más que el de V. 10. ¿ Puede V. nadar tan bien como mi hijo ? Puedo nadar mejor que él, pero él puede hablar español mejor que yo. 11. ¿ Escribo yo tanto como V.? V. escribe más que yo. 12. ¿ Leen Vds. libros ingleses ? Leemos libros españoles en vez de leer libros ingleses. 13. ¿ Tiene alguien niños más hermosos que V.? Ninguno los tiene más hermosos.

EXERCISE

1. Are you taller than I? I am taller than you. 2. Are the clothes (vestidos) of the Italians as fine as those of the Irish? They are finer, but not so good. 3. Is your lorse good? It is good, but yours is better, and that of the Englishman is the best of all the horses which we know. 4. Is your wine as good as mine? It is better. Hast thou a finer garden than that of our physician? I have one finer than his. 6. Is your coat as pretty as mine? It is not so pretty, but better than yours. 7. Which of these two children is the better. The one who studies is better than the one who plays. 8. Do the merchants sell more sugar than coffee? They sell more of the latter than of the former. 9. Does he read as well as you? He reads better than I. 10. Whose gun is the finest? Yours is very fine, but that of the captain is still finer, and ours is the finest of all. 11. Does my brother speak French as often as you? He speaks and reads it as often as I. 12. Do we write it as often as they? They write oftener than we.

THIRTIETH LESSON—Lección Trigésima

To believe.

Creer. (See verbs in eer, in the Elements.)

To put.

Poner. (See this verb in the Elements.)

To put on.

Ponerse.

To put in.

Meterse. (Reflex.)

Se pone V.

Me pongo.

Digitized by Google

Me pongo el sombrero.

He puts on his glover.
Do you put on your shoes?
We do put them on.
What do your brothers put on?
They put on their clothes.
Whither do you conduct me?
I conduct you to my father.

Do you go out †
I go out.
Do we go out †
When does your father go out †

As early as you. He goes out as early as you.

Late.

Early.

Too.

Too much.

Do you speak too much ?

I do not speak enough. Later than you.

I go out later than you.

Sooner, earlier.

Does your father go there earlier

than I ? He goes there too early.

Already.

Do you speak already ?

Not yet.

I do not speak yet. Not yet, Sir.

Do you finish your note ?

I do not finish it yet.

Do you breakfast already ?

Who receives the most money † The English receive the most.

Se pone los guantes,

§ Se pone V. los zapatos?

Nos los ponemos,

§Qué se ponen sus hermanos de V.?

Se ponen los vestidos,

§ Adónde me conduce V.?

Yo conduzco á V. á casa de mi padre.

Sale V. † Salgo. Salimos †

¿ Cuándo sale su padre de V. ?

Temprano.

Tan temprano como V. Él sale tan temprano como V.

Tarde.

Demasiado.

Demasiado.

Habla V. demasiado ?

No hablo bastante.

Más tarde que V.

Salgo más tarde que V. Más temprano.

¿ Va su padre de V. allá más temprano que yo ?

Va allá demasiado temprano.

Ya.

Ya habla V. f

Todavía no.

Áún no.

Todavía no hablo.

Todavía no, señor.

¿ Acaba V. su billete ?

S No lo acabo todavía.

Aún no lo acabo.

🐧 Almuerza V. ya 🕈

🕽 Ya está V. almorzando 🕈

Quién recibe más dinero f

Los ingleses son los que reciben más.

We read more than they, but the Leemos más que ellos, pero los French read the most.

The letter.

That letter.

The letters.

To eat too much is dangerous.

franceses son los que leen más,

La carta.

Aquella, or esa carta.

Las cartas.

Comer, or el comer demasiado es peligroso.

Verbs in the infinitive mode frequently become substantives. with or without the article.

To speak too much is foolish.

(El hablar demasiado es muy necio. Es muy necio hablar demasiado.

offended us, is a commendable action.

To do good to those that have Hacer (or el hacer) bien á los que nos han ofendido es una acción landable.

CONVERSACIÓN

1. ¿Se pone su hermano de V. el sombrero antes de ponerse el vestido? Se pone el vestido antes de ponerse el sombrero. 2. ¿ Habla V. ya el español? No lo hablo; pero comienzo á aprenderlo. 3. ¿ Va V. al teatro tan frecuentemente como yo? Voy tan frecuentemente como V. 4. ¿Á qué hora va allá el inglés? Va allá á las once v media. 5. ¿ Escribo vo demasiado? V. no escribe demasiado; pero habla demasiado. 6. ¿ Compran demasiado trigo sus amigos de V.? No compran más que un poco. 7. ¿ Me lleva V. allá? Le llevo á V. allá. 8. ¿ Es pobre? No es pobre; es más rico que V. 9. ¿ Es docto ese hombre ? Es el más docto de todos los hombres que conozco. 10. ¿ Les da V. menos pan que queso á esos hombres? Les dov menos de éste que de aquél. 11. ¿Son ellos tan ricos como los americanos? Son menos ricos que ellos. 12. ¿ Vende V. el páiaro? No lo vendo.

EXERCISE

1. Do you put on another coat in order to go to the play? I put on another. 2. Do our children put on their shoes in order to go to our friends? They put them on in order to go to them. 3. Does your father go out already? He does not yet go out. 4. Does he go out earlier than you? I go out earlier than he. 5. Do you breakfast early? We do

not breakfast late. 6. Do you not go too early to the concert? I go there too late. 7. Is my hat too large? It is neither too large nor too small. 8. Have you bread enough? I have only a little, but enough. 9. Is it too late to (para) go to your father? It is not too late to go to him. 10. Does the Spaniard buy a horse? He can not buy one. 11. Do you know that man? I know him. 12. Is my horse as bad as the Spaniard's? It is much worse than anybody's. 13. Do you receive as much money as your neighbors? I receive much more than they. 14. Do you read as much as the Russians? We read more than they, but the French read the most. 15. Are your birds as fine as those of the Irish? They are less fine than theirs, but those of the Spaniards are the least fine.

THIRTY-FIRST LESSON-Lección Trigésimaprimera

THE PAST PARTICIPLE

FIRST CONJUGATION

To love,	loved.	Amar,	amado.
To speak,	spoken.	Hablar,	hablado.
To buy,	bought.	Comprar,	comprado.
	SECOND CO	ONJUGATION	
To sell,	sold.	Vender,	vendido.
To eat, to dine,	eaten, dined.	Comer,	comido.
To drink,	drunk.	Beber,	bebido.
	THIRD CO	NJUGATION	
To receive,	received.	Recibir,	recibido.
To divide,	divided.	Dividir,	dividido.
To part,	parted.	Partir,	partido.
To be,	been.	Ser,	sido.
		Estar,	estado.
To have (auxiliary), had.		Haber,	habido.
I have, thou hast, he has.		Yo he, tú has, él ha.	

We have, you have, they have.

Nosotros hemos, vosotros habéis

ellos han.

Tener is a principal verb, meaning to have or to possess; haber is an auxiliary verb, to have, and is used to aid a principal verb in process of inflection:

I have three horses. He has seen him.

To have gone. To have loved. Tengo tres caballos. Él lo ha visto. Haber ido. Haber amado.

When any form of haber is used with a past participle immedately following, such participle is unchangeable:

The man has loved. The woman has loved. El hombre ha amado. La mujer ha amado.

But when another past participle is used in addition to the past participle of ser or estar, to make a passive voice, the second participle takes the gender and number of the subject:

The man has been loved. The woman has been loved. The girls have been loved. Have you gone to market ?

I have gone. I went.

I have esteemed them. He has esteemed her. They have been esteemed. The sisters have been admired.

> Ever. Never.

Have you gone to the ball ? Have you ever been at the ball?

I have never gone. Have you already been at the (4 Ha estado V. ya en el teatro? theater? I have already been there. Where have you been this morn- Adonde ha ido V. esta mañana?

ing ? I have been in the garden. Where has thy brother been ?

El hombre ha sido amado. La mujer ha sido amada. Las muchachas han sido amadas.

Ha ido V. al mercado? Yo he ido.

Yo fui.

Yo los he estimado. El la ha estimado.

Ellos han sido estimados. Las hermanas han sido admi-

radas.

Alguna vez. En algún tiempo. Jamás. Nunca. Nunca jamás.

Ha ido V. al baile? Ha estado V. alguna vez en el baile !

Jamás he ido.

Ha ido V. ya al teatro!

Ya he ido. Ya he estado.

Yo he estado en el jardín. En donde ha estado tu hermano?

He has been in the warehouse. Has he been there as early as I ?

He has been there earlier than Ha estado allá más temprano you.

> Anywhere. Nowhere.

To remain, to stay. Do you go somewhere ? home.

Do you remain in the garden ? Yes, I remain here.

Ha estado en el almacén.

Ha estado él allá tan temprano como vo!

aue V.

Alguna parte, cualquiera parte. Ninguna parte.

Quedarse, estarse. ¿Va V. á alguna parte ?

I go nowhere now; I stay at Yo no voy á ninguna parte ahora; me quedo en casa.

¿ Se queda V. en el jardín ? Sí, me quedo aquí.

CONVERSACIÓN

1. ¿ Ha ido V. al baile? He ido. 2. ¿ Ha estado V. ya en el jardín del francés? Aún no he estado en él. 3. ¿ Cuándo ha ido V. allá? He ido esta mañana. 4. He estado vo en su despacho, ó en el de su amigo de V.? V. no ha estado ni en el mío ni en el de mi amigo, sino en el del inglés. 5. ¿ Piensa ir al mercado el hijo de nuestro jardinero? Piensa ir allá. 6. ¿ Qué quiere él comprar allí? Quiere comprar pollos, bueyes, trigo, vino y queso. 7. 4 Ha estado V. jamás en el teatro? Nunca he estado allí. 8. ¿ Piensa él ir hov? Piensa ir mañana. 9. Ha ido nuestro vecino al teatro tan á menudo como nosotros? Ha ido más á menudo que nosotros. 10. ¿ Van nuestros amigos demasiado temprano á sus despachos? Van allí demasiado tarde. 11. ¿ Va V. de noche á alguna parte? No voy á ninguna parte. Me quedo en casa. 12. Ha ido V. á tomar café? He ido á tomarlo.

EXERCISE

1. Where have you been? I have been to the market. 2. Hast thou been there? I have not been there. 3. Do you intend to go there? I intend to go there. 4. Has your brother already been in my large garden? He has not yet been there. 5. Have you already been at the ball? I have not yet been there. 6. Have you been in my warehouses? I have been there. 7. Has the Italian been in our ware-

houses, or in those of the Dutch? He has neither been in ours nor in those of the Dutch, but in those of the Germans. 8. When has he been there? He has been there to-day. 9. Have you already been at my brother's house? I have already been there. 10. Have our friends ever been at our house? They have never been there. 11. To whom do you wish to write a letter? I wish to write one to my son. At what o'clock will he set out? He will set out at halfpast six. 13. Have you often been to the concert? I have often been (there). 14. Do they go there as late as we? They go there later than we. 15. What does he do there? He writes. 16. Does not he go out? He does not go out. 17. When does he come to you? He comes to me every evening. 18. Does your servant go for anything? 19. He goes for some wine. 20. When do you drink tea? I drink some every morning.

THIRTY-SECOND LESSON—Lección Trigésimasegunda

There to be.

Haber.

This is an awkward attempt to render the impersonal use of the verb haber, which corresponds to the English there is, there were, there will be. In this sense it is used only in the third person singular of all modes and tenses, the indicative present third singular being irregular, hay, there is, there are.

To take place. { Tenerse. Verificarse. Celebrarse. Darse. That. Eso, aquello.

This form of the demonstrative, called the neuter, like the socalled neuter article lo, is applied to a thought, a sentence, phrase, something said or done, which is scarcely specific enough to be given a gender:

It takes place this evening.

It does not take place to-day.

When did the ball take place? When has the ball taken place?

It took place yesterday. It has taken place yesterday.

Yesterday.

The day before yesterday. How many times (how often) ?

> Once. Twice.

Many times. Several times.

Formerly.

Sometimes.

Do you sometimes go to the ball ! ¿Va V. algunas veces al baile ! I go sometimes.

Gone.

Have you gone there sometimes ! Ha ido V. allá algunas veces ! I have gone there often.

Have the men had my trunk?

They have not had it.

Have I done wrong in buying He hecho mal en comprar books f

ing some.

When had I it, (when have I had LCuándo lo he tenido?

Where had you them ! (have you ! Donde los ha tenido V. ! had).

Have you had anything? I have had nothing.

The watch, or the clock.

Se celebra esta noche.

Se da esta noche, etc.

No se celebra hoy, no se da hoy. No lo hay hoy.

¿Cuándo se celebró ?

¿Cuándo se dió el baile ?

¿Cuándo se ha tenido baile?

¿Cuándo ha habido baile ?

Se dió ayer.

Se celebró ayer.

Se tuvo ayer.

Ayer.

Anteayer, antier, antes de ayer.

LCuántes veces?

Una vez. Dos veces.

Muchas veces.

Varias veces, algunas veces. Antiguamente, en otro tiempo.

En tiempo pasado, en lo pasado. Anteriormente.

Algunas veces.

Voy algunas veces.

Ido.

He ido allá á menudo.

Han tenido mi baúl los hombres f

No lo han tenido.

libros ?

You have not done wrong in buy- V. no ha hecho mal en comprar algunos.

¿ Ha tenido V. algo? Nada he tenido.

El reloj. Relojes, (pl.).

CONVERSACIÓN

1. ¿ Ka tenido V. mi guante? No lo he tenido. 2. ¿ Hemos tenido su hermoso fusil? No lo hemos tenido. 3. Ha tenido algunos pollos el criado del capitán ruso? Ha tenido algunos. 4. Han tenido buen tabaco los polacos? Han tenido un poco. 5. & Ha tenido el holandés razón ó no ? Jamás ha tenido razón, ni ha dejado de tenerla. 6. ¿Qué ha tenido el pintor? Ha tenido cuadros hermosos. 7. 1 He hecho yo bien en escribirle á mi hermano? V. no ha hecho mal en escribirle. 8. ¿Se ha celebrado el baile aver? No ha habido baile ayer. 9. ¿ Cuántas veces ha estado V. en el teatro? He estado sólo una vez. 10. ¿Va él allí tan á menudo como mi jardinero? Va más á menudo que él. 11. ¿ Cuándo has estado en el concierto? He estado allí anteaver. 12. Ha ido V. temprano á la comedia? Yo he ido tarde. 13. Ha tenido alguno mis cuchillos de plata? Nadie los ha tenido.

EXERCISE

1. Have you had my dog? I have had it. 2. Have I had your knife? You have had it. 3. Has your brother had my iron hammer? He has had it. 4. Who has had my leather shoes? Your servants have had them. 5. Have we had the mattresses of the foreigners? We have not had them. 6. Has the young man had the first volume of my dictionary? He has not had the first, but the second. 7. Have you had any sugar? I have had some. 8. Has the Frenchman had good wine? He has had some, and he still has some. 9. Has the son of our gardener had any bread? He has had some. 10. Have the English had as much sugar as tea? They have had as much of the one as of the other. 11. Have I been wrong in buying a horse? You have been wrong in buying one. 12. Has your servant had my shoes? He has not had them. 13. Have the Germans had many friends? They have had many. 14. Has the Turk had more paper than corn? He has had less of the latter than of the former. 15. Have you had a sore finger? I have had a sore eye. 16. Does it take place to-day? It takes place to-day. 17. At what o'clock did it take place? It took place (it has taken place) at eleven o'clock. 18. Do you go sometimes to the theater? I go sometimes. 19. Has your brother ever gone to the ball? He has never gone. 20. Dost thou go sometimes into the garden? I go sometimes. 21. Does your old cook often go to the market? He goes there often.

THIRTY-THIRD LESSON-Lección Trigésimatercera THE PERFECT TENSE

The perfect tense is formed from the indicative present of haber with the past participle of some principal verb.

The action of the verb in the perfect tense is viewed at its close. and usually as coming up to, and concluded in, the present time. without reference to its beginning or duration:

I have studied grammar.

He estudiado la gramática.

However, it is sometimes used with reference to a state or action which did not come up to the present time, but, like the English preterit, was completed in some past period of time:

I studied my lesson yesterday.

To make, to do. Made, done. What have you done?

I have done nothing.

shoes 1

He has made them.

Have you put on your shoes ? I have put them on.

To take off. Taken off. Have you taken off your gloves? 1 Se ha quitado V. los guantes? I have taken them off.

To tell, to say. Told, said. I have told it you.

The proverb.

Has he told you that?

He estudiado mi lección ayer.

Hacer. Hecho.

¿Qué ha hecho V. ?

(No he hecho nada. Nada he hecho.

Has that shoemaker made my Ha hecho mis zapatos aquel zapatero ?

Los ha hecho.

Se ha puesto V. los zapatos?

Me los he puesto, (from poner). Quitarse. Quitado.

Me los he quitado.

Decir.* Dicho. (See Elements.)

Se lo he dicho & V.

El refrán. El proverbio.

(¿ Ha dicho él eso á V.? Le ha dicho esto á V. ? He has told me that. Have I told you that? You have told me that. To drink. Drunk.

To see. Seen. To read. Read.

To be acquainted with. Been acquainted with.

Which men have you seen ?

I have seen those. Which books have you read ?

I have read those which you lent He leido los que V. me ha presme.

Have you been acquainted with & Ha conocido V. & estos hombres ? these men ?

I have not been acquainted with No los he conocido. them.

Have you seen any sailors ?

I have seen some. I have not seen any.

> To call. Called.

To throw.

To throw away.

Who calls me ? Your father calls you.

Have you called the boys? I have not called them.

Do you waste your money?

I do not waste it.

Who throws away his books? Have you thrown away anything ?

I have thrown away my gloves.

To be sick. Are you sick ?

Yes, I am.

Me ha dicho eso.

He dicho yo eso á V. ? V. me ha dicho eso.

Beber. Bebido.

Ver. Visto. Leer. Leído. Conocer. Conocido.

¿Qué hombres ha visto V.? He visto á aquéllos.

¿ Qué libros ha leído V. ?

tado.

Ha visto V. á algunos marineros f

He visto á algunos. A ningunos he visto.

Llamar. Llamado.

Tirar. Arrojar. Desperdiciar. Botar.

.Quién me llama 🕈

Su padre de V. lo llama. Ha llamado V. á los muchachos ?

No los he llamado.

La Desperdicia V. su dinero ?

No, no lo desperdicio. ¿ Quién tira sus libros ?

Ha tirado V. algo He tirado mis guantes.

Estar malo, enfermo.

¿Está V. malo?

Sí, lo estoy.

CONVERSACIÓN

1. ¿ Qué has hecho? No he hecho nada. 2. ¿ Qué han hecho los niños de V. ? Han desgarrado sus vestidos. 3. ¿ Se han puesto nuestros vecinos los zapatos y los sombreros? No se han puesto ni los unos ni los otros. 4. ¿ Qué le ha dicho á V. su hermano? No me ha dicho nada. 5. ¿ Es V. hermano de ese joven? Sí, señor. 6. ¿ Ha ido á la plaza el cocinero de V.? No ha ido. 7. ¿ Ha escrito V. sus ejercicios? Los he escrito. 8. ¿ Á cuáles hombres ha hablado su amigo de V.? Les ha hablado á éstos y á aquéllos. 9. ¿ Le han hablado á V. alguna vez los ingleses? Me han hablado á menudo. 10. ¿ Qué muchachos ha conocido su hermano de V.? Ha conocido á los de nuestro comerciante. 11. Ha visto V. á mis hermanos? No los he visto. 12. ¿ Tiras tú su libro? No lo tiro; lo necesito para estudiar el español.

EXERCISE

1. Have you anything to do? I have nothing to do. 2. What have I done? You have torn my books. 3. Has the tailor already made your coat? He has not yet made it. 4. Have our neighbors ever made books? They made some formerly. 5. Has your brother put his shoes on? He has put them on. 6. What has the physician taken away? He has taken away nothing. 7. When did the ball take place? It took place the day before yesterday. 8. Did I tell you that? You did not tell it to me. 9. Have they told it to the French? They have told it to them. 10. Are you willing to tell your friends that? I am willing to tell it to them. 11. Are your friends as rich as they say? They are so. Has our neighbor money enough to buy some coal? I do not know. 13. Are you as tired as your brother? I am more so than he. 14. When did they write them? They wrote (have written) them yesterday. 15. Which exercises has your little brother written? He has written his own. 16. How many times have you spoken to the captain? I have spoken to him several times. 17. Have you spoken to the Russians? I have spoken to them. 18. Which proverbs has he told you? He has told me these proverbs. 19. Which books have your children read? They have read those which you have lent them. 20. Have you been acquainted with these men? I have been acquainted with them.

THIRTY-FOURTH LESSON-Lección Trigésimacuarta

To light, (kindle.) lighted. Encender.* encendido. Extinguir, extinguido. To extinguish, extinguished. Apagar, apagado. To open, Abrir,* abierto. opened. Partir. Partido. To set out. Set out. Salir. Salido. Marcharse. Marchado. To go out. Gone out. Salir—Salido, Irse—Ido. Venir. Venido. To come. Come. Se ha ido su padre de V. ? Has your father set out ? Se ha marchado su padre de V. ? Have your friends set out? Se han ido (marchado) sus amigos de V. f No se han ido, (marchado). They have not set out. When did your brothers go out? Cuándo se han ido (marchado) When have your brothers gone los hermanos de V. ? out f They went out at ten o'clock. Ellos se han ido (marchado) á las They have gone out at ten o'clock. diez. Have the men come to your Han venido los hombres á casa father 1 de su padre de V. ? Sí, han venido. Han venido aquí. They have come to him. Han venido á casa. Which fires have you extin- ¿Qué fuegos han apagado Vds. ? guished ? Which storehouses have you ¿Qué almacenes han abierto Vds. ? opened ? Have you conducted them to the Los ha conducido V. al almastorehouse ? cén f I have conducted them there. Los he conducido allá. Which books have you taken? A Qué libros ha tomado V. ? How many notes have you re-¿Cuántos billetes han recibido ceived ? Vds. (Hemos recibido sólo uno. We have received but one.

En is also employed to translate on when the context prevents the likelihood of ambiguity:

On the floor.

Upon, over.

En el suelo.

Sobre.

No hemos recibido sino uno.



Upon the bench. The bench. Within, inside, Under. Below, beneath.

Under the bench. Where is my hat? It is upon the bench. Are my gloves on the bench? They are under it.

To wash.

To mend, or to get mended.

Got mended. Ordered mended.

To get the dress, suit, or clothes (Hacer remendar el vestido. mended. To have it mended. To get them mended. Are you getting a garment made f (Se manda V. hacer un vestido f Do you order a garment ?

I am getting one made. I have had one made.

To wipe, to dry. Wiped, dried. Have you seen my books ? I have seen them. When did you see my brother ? When have you seen my brother ! I saw him the day before yes- Yo lo he visto anteayer.

terday. Where did you see him ? I saw him at the theater. Sobre el banco. El banco.

> Dentro. Debajo de.

Bajo.

Debajo del banco. Dónde está mi sombrero ?

Está sobre el banco.

¿Están mis guantes sobre el banco! Están debajo de él.

Lavar.

Remendar.

Mandar remendar, componer. Hacer remendar, reparar.

Mandado remendar.

Hecho remendar.

Mandar remendar el vestido.

Hacerlo remendar, or reparar. Hacerlos remendar, or reparar.

LSe mandó V. hacer un vestido? Mando hacerme uno.

Me he mandado hacer uno. Me he hecho hacer uno.

Enjugar. Enjugado. Ha visto V. mis libros ?

Yo los he visto.

) Cuándo ha visto V. á mi her-

mano f

En dónde lo ha visto V. ? Yo lo he visto en el teatro.

CONVERSACIÓN

1. ¿ Cuándo han venido los muchachos franceses á casa de su hermano de V.? Han venido ayer. 2. Ha llevado un billete el criado? Lo ha llevado. 3. ¿ Qué almacenes han abierto ellos? Han abierto los que V. ha visto. ¿ Están mis zapatos en el banco? Están debajo. 5. ¿ No ha

tenido V. miedo de quemar mis papeles? No he tenido miedo de quemarlos. 6. ¿ Ha hecho V. barrer su despacho? Todavía no lo he hecho barrer, pero pienso hacerlo barrer hoy. 7. ¿ Ha visto V. ya á un sirio? Ya he visto á uno. 8. ¿ Le ha prestado á V. el americano algún dinero? Me ha prestado un poco. 9. ¿ Se ha celebrado el concierto? Se ha celebrado. 10. ¿ Ha hecho V. jamás componer su vestido? Lo he hecho componer algunas veces. 11. ¿ En dónde los ha buscado V.? Los he buscado sobre la cama y los he hallado debajo. 12. ¿ Ha hallado V. mis pantalones debajo de la cama? Los he hallado sobre ella.

EXERCISE

1. Where have your brothers gone? They have gone to the theater. 2. Has any one come to us? The good Germans have come to us. 3. Which books has the servant taken? He has taken those which you do not read. 4. Which fires have the men extinguished? They have extinguished those which you have seen. 5. Where is my coat? It is upon the bench. 6. Have you already eaten today? I have not vet eaten. 7. Have you sent your little boy to market? I have. 8. Has he answered you? He has not yet answered me. 9. Have you ever written to the physician? I have never written to him. 10. How many times have your friends written to you? They have written to me more than twenty times. 11. Where have you seen a Russian? At the theater. 12. How much have you given him? I have given him fourteen dollars. 13. When didst thou give me some? I gave thee some this morning. 14. Has the Italian ever lent you money? He has never lent me any. 15. At what o'clock did you come? I came at half-past five. 16. At what o'clock has the ball taken place? It has taken place at midnight. 17. Do you know the Frenchman whom I know? I do not know the one whom you know, but I know another. 18. Hast thou had thy hat or thy shoe mended? 19. I have neither had the one nor the other mended. 19. Have you looked for my gloves? I have looked for them. 20. Have you found my pantaloons under the bed? I have found them upon it.

THIRTY-FIFTH LESSON—Lección Trigésimaquinta

To promise. Promised. Prometer. Prometido. To learn. Learned. Aprender. Aprendido. Do you promise me to come? Me promete V. venir ? I promise you to do it. Se lo prometo á V. What have you promised the ¿Qué ha prometido V. al homman f bre ? Yo no le he prometido nada. I have promised him nothing. Nada le he prometido. Have you ever learned Spanish? Ha aprendido V. alguna vez el español ? I learned it formerly. Yo lo he aprendido en otro tiem-I have learned it formerly. po. To wear out. Gastar. To refuse, deny. Rehusar. Negar.* To spell. Deletrear, escribir. How ! A Cómo ? Well. Bien. Badly. Mal. So. Thus. Así. So that. De suerte que. So so. Así así. (De este modo. De esta manera. In this manner. Así.

How has your brother written his a Como ha escrito su ejercicio su hermano de V.? exercise ?

He has written it well.

To dry.

To put out to dry.

Do you put out your coat to dry \ \ \frac{1}{6} Pone V. \(\hat{a} \) secar su casaca \(\frac{1}{3} \)

I put it out to dry. The coat.

How old ?

How old are you?

I am twelve years old.

How old is your brother?

Lo ha escrito bien. Secar.

Poner á secar. Hacer secar.

Hace V. secar su casaca?

La pongo á secar, (or la hago secar). La casaca, (fem.).

Qué edad! ¿Cuántos años!

(¿Qué edad tiene V.? 🕽 Cuántos años tiene V. 🕈

Tengo doce años.

¿Cuántos años tiene su hermano de V.

¿ Qué edad tiene su hermano de V.?

stand you.

He is thirteen years old. Tiene trece años. Almost. Casi. Tiene casi catorce años. He is almost fourteen years old. Cerca de, poco más ó menos, About, nearly. como. Tengo como quince años. I am about fifteen years old. He is nearly eighteen years old. Tiene diez y ocho años poco más ó menos. Él tiene como unos He is something like thirty. años. Hardly, scarcely. Apenas. I am not quite sixteen years old. Todavía no tengo diez y seis años. Leres mayor que tu hermano? Art thou older than thy brother ! LEres de más edad que tu hermano f Soy menor. Soy de menos edad que él. I am younger than he. Soy más joven que él. Tengo menos años que él. Viejo, anciano. Old, (in years). Avanzado en años, or edad. There is, there are. Hay. There has been. Ha habido, (past part.). There have been. How many reales are there in one (¿ Cuántos reales hay en un duro? dollar ? La Cuántos reales tiene un duro ? Eight. Ocho. A dollar. Un peso. To understand. Entender.* Comprender. To hear. Oir.* Sentir.* To wait for, to expect. Aguardar, esperar. Perder.* To lose. (Me comprende V. ? Do you understand me? Me entiende V. ? (Le comprendo á V. I do understand you. Le entiendo á V. Have you understood the man? Ha entendido V. al hombre? Le he comprendido. I have understood him. I hear you, but I do not under- Oigo á V. hablar, pero no le com-

prendo.

The noise. El ruido. The wind. El viento. The noise (roaring) of the wind. El bramido del viento. Do you hear the roaring of the ¿Oye V. el bramido del viento? wind f (Sí, lo oigo. I do hear it. Sí, lo siento. Ladrar. To bark. The barking. El ladrido. Have you heard the barking of 1 Ha oido V. los ladridos de los the dogs ? perros ? I have heard it. Los he oído. Some one. Somebody. Alguien. Alguno. Do you wait for somebody? ¿ Aguarda V. á alguien ? ¿Espera V. á alguien ? Do you expect some one? Do you expect something ? Espera V. algo? Do you wait for my brother? ¿Aguarda V. á mi hermano? I am waiting for him. Yo le estoy aguardando. Do you expect some friends ? ¿Espera V. á algunos amigos? I do expect some here. Yo aguardo á algunos aquí. How much has your brother lost? ¿Cuánto ha perdido su hermano de V. He has lost nearly one dollar. Ha perdido cerca de un duro. I have lost more than he. Yo he perdido más que él. To remain. Quedarse (reflex.). El hidalgo. El gentilhombre. The nobleman, gentleman. El noble. Noblemen. Hidalgos. Gentilhombres. Nobles. Bonito. Pretty. Gentle, tame. Manso. Where has the nobleman re- Donde se ha quedado el himained f dalgo f He has remained at home. Se ha quedado en casa. ¡Se ha quedado V. con él ? Have you remained with him? With. Con.

With me.

Shilling.

The poor man, the pauper.

Conmigo.

Chelin.

El pobre.

CONVERSACIÓN

1. ½ Le he prometido yo á V. alguna cosa ? V. no me ha prometido nada. 2. ½ Cuánto ha recibido él ? No ha recibido más que un peso. 3. ½ Me quiere V. prestar su casaca ? Se la quiero prestar á V.; pero está usada. 4. ¿ Deletrea él bien ? Deletrea bien. 5. ½ Cómo hablan los amigos de V.? No hablan mal. 6. ½ Qué edad tiene V.? Tengo apenas diez y ocho años. 7. ½ Ha leído mi libro ? Todavía no lo he leído. 8. ¿ Comprendemos á los ingleses ? No los comprendemos. 9. ½ Qué oye V.? Oigo los ladridos de los perros. 10. ½ Se han quedado en el baile los amigos de V.? Se quedaron allí. 11. ½ Espera V. á alguno ? No espero á nadie. 12. ½ Espera V. á su padre esta noche ? Lo espero.

EXERCISE

1. Do you promise me to come to the ball? I promise vou. 2. Have you received it? Not vet. 3. How much money have you given to my son? I have given him thirty shillings. 4. What money have you? I have dollars, shillings, and farthings. 5. How many sixpences are there in a shilling? There are two. And how many are there in a dollar? Eight. 6. Will you lend them to my brother? I will lend them to him. 7. Does your little brother already know how to spell? He knows. 8. How have your children written their exercises? They have written them badly. 9. Do you know Spanish? I know it. 10. Does your son speak Italian? He speaks it well. 11. How hast thou learned English? I have learned it in this manner. 12. Where did you buy your clothes? I bought them in the store. 13. How old are you? I am hardly eighteen years old. 14. How old is your brother? He is twenty years old. 15. Am I younger than you? I do not know. 16. Is your father as old as mine? He is older than yours. 17. Has your friend finished his books? He has almost finished them. 18. Do you understand what we are telling you? We understand it. 19. Do you hear any noise? I hear nothing. Have you heard the roaring

of the wind? I have heard it. 20. Has your father lost as much money as I? He has lost more than you.

THIRTY-SIXTH LESSON-Lección Trigésimasexta

To beat. Beaten.

Golpear. Apalear. Apaleado.

To bite. Bitten.

Pegar, pegado. Morder.* Mordido.

Why ?

Por qué ?

Why do you beat the dog? Because.

Por qué golpea V. el perro? Porque.

Golpeado.

I beat it, because it has bitten me. Lo golpeo porque me ha mordido. To owe. Owed.

Deber. Debido.

How much do you owe me ? I owe you fifty dollars.

1 Cuánto me debe V. ?

How much does this man owe 1 Cuánto le debe á V. este hom-

Yo le debo á V. cincuenta pesos. or duros.

you !

bre ?

He owes me six reales.

Me debe seis reales.

Do our neighbors owe as much ¿ Deben nuestros vecinos tanto as we?

como nosotros ?

We owe more than they. How much dost thou owe? Debemos más que ellos. LCuánto debes tú ?

Two hundred dollars. Five hundred dollars.

Doscientos pesos. Quinientos pesos.

One thousand dollars. A hundred. One hundred.

Mil pesos. Ciento.

Ciento, hundred, loses the last syllable when followed by a noun: A hundred men or a hundred women, cien hombres o cien mujeres. Doscientos, trescientos, etc., retain the last syllable, and agree in gender with nouns which they qualify.

To be to, to have to (must).

Tener que and haber de both indicate obligation. Tener que is, however, stronger than haber de, as the former always implies obligation, while the latter often conveys mere futurity.

Where do you have to go this & Adónde ha de ir V. esta mañana 🕈 morning ? He de ir al almacén.

I am to go to the warehouse.

Must your brother come here to- Ha de venir hoy aqui su hermano de V. day f Soon. Shortly. Pronto. Luego, prontamente. He is to come here soon. El ha de venir aquí pronto. Volver.* Vuelto. To return, returned. At what o'clock do you return A qué hora vuelve V. del merfrom market? cado f I return at twelve o'clock. Vuelvo á las doce. Does the servant return early a Vuelve el criado temprano del from the warehouse ? almacén ? He returns at six o'clock in the Vuelve á las seis de l. mañana. morning. At nine o'clock in the morning. Á las nueve de la mañana. At five o'clock in the evening. À las cinco de la tarde. At eleven o'clock at night. À las once de la noche. How long ? Cuánto tiempo ? (Durante. During. Mientras. For. Por. How long has he remained here ? ¿Cuánto tiempo se ha quedado aquí ? A minute. Un minuto. An hour, Una hora, (fem.). Un día. A day. A month. Un mes. Un año. A year. The summer. El verano. The winter. El invierno. During the summer. Durante el verano. For one month. Por un mes. To live. Vivir. To dwell. Morar. To reside. Residir. Where do you live? ¿ En dónde vive V. ? I live on Eleventh Street, number Vivo en la calle Once, número

ciento veintidós.) En donde ha vivido su hermano

de V. ? He lived on Rivoli Street—he has Ha vivido en la calle de Rivolî, número cuarenta y nueve.

ber forty-nine.

one hundred twenty-two.

Where did your brother live?

Where has your brother lived?

lived on Rivoli Street-num-

Dost thou live at thy brother's Nives tu en casa de tu hermano? house f

my father's.

I have lived ?

Did you remain long with my Ha quedado V. largo tiempo en father?

I remained with him an hour.

Long. Long time. The number.

Other. Others.

I do not see those whom you see, No veo a los que V. ve, pero veo but I see others.

I do not live at his house, but at No vivo en la casa de mi hermano, pero vivo en casa de mi padre.

Does your friend still live where ¿Vive todavía su amigo de V. en donde yo he vivido?

He lives no longer where you Ya no vive en donde V. ha vivi-

casa de mi padre ?

Me quedé una hora en su casa. Largo. Largo or mucho tiempo.

El número. Otro. Otros.

á otros.

Do you see the men whom I see ? ¿ Ve V. á los hombres á quienes

CONVERSACIÓN

1. ¿ Por qué alza V. ese clavo del suelo ? Lo alzo del suelo porque lo necesito. 2. ¿ Le enseña el criado á V. el suelo que barre? No me enseña el que barre ahora, sino el que ha barrido ayer. 3. ¿ Ve V. al marinero que está en el barco? No veo al que está en el barco, sino al que está en la plaza. 4. ¿ Remienda el zapatero los zapatos que V. le ha enviado ? No los remienda, porque están usados. 5. ¿ Cuánto tiempo piensa V. quedarse en el baile? Pienso quedarme allí algu-6. ¿ Piensa V. quedarse largo tiempo con nos minutos. nosotros? Pienso quedarme con Vds. durante todo el verano. 7. ¿ Cuánto le debe á V. el inglés? Me debe más que V. 8. ¿ Cuánto le deben á V.? Me deben doscientos duros. 9. ¿ Por qué le da V. dinero al comerciante? Le doy dinero porque me ha vendido algo. 10. ¿ Cuándo han de ir al teatro nuestros hijos? Han de ir esta noche. 11. ¿ Cuándo ha de volver de casa del pintor su hijo de V.? Ha de volver de casa del pintor á las cinco de la tarde. 12. ¿ Dónde vive su padre de V.? Vive en la casa de su amigo.

EXERCISE

1. Why do you not drink? I do not drink because I am not thirsty. 2. Why does your brother study? He studies, because he wishes to learn Spanish. 3. Why do you love that man? I love him because he is good. 4. Why do you bring me wine? I bring you some because you are thirstv. 5. Do you read the books which my father has given you? I read them. 6. Do you understand them? I understand them fairly well (bastante bien, or así así). 7. Has your servant returned from market? He has not yet returned. 8. How long did your brothers remain in town? (la ciudad). They remained there (en ella) during the winter. 9. How much do you owe your tailor? I owe him eighty dollars. 10. Do I owe you anything? You owe me nothing. 11. Do I owe you as much as my brother? You owe me more than he. 12. How much do we owe you? You owe me three hundred dollars. 13. Is your friend to come here today? He is to come here. 14. When are you to go to the physician? I am to go to him at ten o'clock at night. Where do you live? I live on Rivoli Street, number fortyseven. 16. Dost thou live at thy brother's house? I live at his house. 17. Does your friend live on John Street? No. Sir.

THIRTY-SEVENTH LESSON-Lección Trigésimaséptima

How long !-- i. e., for how much | Cuánto tiempo ! time ?

How long !-- i. e., until when ! How long !-- i.e., until what hour ! Hasta qué hora !

Till. Until.

Till twelve o'clock, till mid-day.

Till the day after to-morrow. Until morning. Then.

Sunday. Monday. Wednesday, Thursday, Friday, Saturday.

A Hasta cuándo ?

Hasta.

Hasta medio día, or las doce del

Hasta pasado mañana.

Hasta la mañana. Entonces.

Tuesday, El domingo, el lunes, el martes, el miércoles, el jueves, el viernes, el sábado.

The names of the days of the week, months, and seasons of the year are of the masculine gender, except la primavera, the spring, which is feminine. The names of the seasons and of the days of the week usually take the definite article.

Till my return.

Till my brother's return.

Till four o'clock in the morning. Hasta las cuatro de la mañana.

night).

The return.

How long did you remain at my Hasta qué hora se ha quedado father's house?

I remained at his house till eleven Me he quedado hasta las once de o'clock at night.

they, people, any one, some one, and often as a passive:

It is said, they say, people say.

The house is being built.

One, in such cases, may also be translated by uno:

One can not always tell. Have they brought my shoes? They have brought them.

They have not brought them.

they said ?

They have said nothing.

What has been done? or What have they done?

They have done nothing.

To be willing, to wish. Been willing, wished.

Have they been willing to mend my clothes ?

They have not been willing to No han querido remendarlo, of mend it.

To be able, (can), been able, (could). Poder.*

Hasta la vuelta.

Hasta la vuelta de mi hermano.

Till midnight, (twelve o'clock at Hasta media noche, or las doce

de la noche

La vuelta, (fem.).

V. en casa de mi padre?

la noche.

Se is used reflexively with verbs in such general senses as one.

Se dice, dicen.

Se edifica la casa.

Uno no puede decir siempre.

l Han traído mis zapatos ? Los han traído.

No los han traído. What has been said? what have (¿ Qué se ha dicho?

Qué han dicho

(Nada se ha dicho. Nada han dicho.

¿ Qué se ha hecho?

LQué han hecho? Nada se ha hecho.

Nada han hecho.

Querer.* Querido.

Han querido remendar mi vestido ?

Han querido componer mi ves-

componerlo.

Have they been able to find the see han podido hallar los libros?

They could not find them.

Can they find them now?

One can not find them.

They can not find them.

Can you reed?—i.e. do you know.

1 Sebe V. leer?

Can you read !—i. e., do you know \ Sabe V. leer !
how to read !

I can not read, (I am not able).
Can one do what he wishes?

They do what they can, but not what they wish.

One does what he can, but not

What is said new ?

Nothing new is said.

what he wishes.

Wine is sold here. Spanish is spoken here. Something new. Anything new. Nothing new. Not anything new. New. My new clothes. My new friend. To brush, brushed. This handsome man. Those fine trees. Do they believe that? They do not believe it. Do they speak of that? They do speak of it. They do not speak of it. Thread. Father and son.

French and Italian.

Yo no sé leer.

3 Puede hacer uno lo que quiere ?

Hacen lo que pueden, pero no lo
que quieren.

Se hace lo que se puede, pero no lo que se quiere.

Uno hace lo que puede, pero no lo que quiere.

¿ Qué se dice de nuevo ? No se dice nada nuevo, or de nuevo.

Aquí se vende vino. Aquí se habla esp**a**ñol.

Algo (de) nuevo.

Nada (de) nuevo.

Nuevo.
Mi vestido nuevo.
Mi amigo nuevo.
Acepillar. Acepillado.
Este hombre hermoso.
Aquellos árboles hermosos.
Se cree eso i Creen eso i
No se cree eso. No lo creen.
Se habla de eslo.
Sí, se habla de ello.
No se habla de ello.
Hilo.
Padre é hijo.
Francés é italiano.

Y (and) changes into \acute{e} before nouns beginning with \acute{e} or $\hbar \acute{e}$.

CONVERSACIÓN

1. ¿ Hasta cuándo he trabajado yo? V. ha trabajado hasta las cuatro de la mañana. 2. ¿ Tiene el médico que trabajar todavía largo tiempo? Tiene que trabajar hasta mañana. 3. ¿ Habló V. mucho tiempo? Hablé hasta el día siguiente. 4. ¿ Cuánto tiempo tiene V. todavía que vivir en su casa? Hasta el martes. 5. ¿ Qué hace V. durante la mañana? Leo. 6. ¿ Quiere V. esperar aquí? ¿ Cuánto tiempo he de esperar? 7. ¿ Ha podido V. leer mi billete? He podido leerlo. 8. ¿ Qué ha querido hacer el comerciante? No ha querido hacer nada. 9. ¿ Por qué no ha podido remendar los zapatos el zapatero? Porque no ha tenido tiempo. 10. ¿ Por qué le ha pegado V. al perro? Porque me ha mordido. 11. ¿ Se ha dicho algo nuevo? No se ha dicho nada nuevo. 12. ¿ Le gustan á V. sus nuevos amigos? Me gustan.

EXERCISE

1. How long have you been writing? I have been writing until midnight. 2. How long hast thou been working? I have been working till now. 3. Am I to remain here long? You are to remain here till Sunday. 4. Have you still long to speak? I have still an hour to speak? 5. Have you still long to live at the Frenchman's house? I have still long to live at his house. 6. Does your friend still live with you? He lives with me no longer. 7. Have you remained in the garden till now? I have remained there till now. 8. What do you do in the afternoon? I work. What hast thou done this evening? I have brushed your clothes, and have gone to the theater. 10. Didst thou remain long at the theater? I remained there but a few minutes. 11. Have you waited for me long? I have waited for you two hours. 12. Have they brought my fine clothes? They have not brought them yet. 13. Have they swept my floor and brushed my clothes? Yes, Sir. 14. Has your little brother been spelling? He has not been willing to spell. 15. Has the shoemaker been able to mend my shoes? He has not been able to mend them. 16. Why has not the tailor mended my coat? Because he has no good thread.

17. What have they wished to say? They have not wished to say anything. 18. Do they speak of the man that has been killed? They do not speak of him. 19. What have they brought? They have brought your new coat. 20. Is Spanish spoken here? Yes, Sir, Spanish, French, and Italian are spoken here.

THIRTY-EIGHTH LESSON-Lección Trigésimaoctava

How far? I Hasta dónde ? Up to, as far as, until. Hasta. As far as my brother's. Hasta la casa de mi hermano. As far as here, hither. Hasta aquí. As far as there, thither. Hasta allí. Hasta allá. As far as London. Hasta Londres. As far as Paris. Hasta París. Madrid. Madrid. Cadiz. Cádiz. España. Spain. Inglaterra. England. Francia. France. Italia. Italy. Above, or up stairs. Arriba. Below, or down stairs. Abaio. As far as above. Hasta arriba. As far as below. Hasta abajo. Lado. Side. De este lado, por este lado. On this side. On that side. De aquel lado, por aquel lado. On this side of the road. De (por) este lado del camino. On that side of the road. De (por) aquel lado del camino. La Alemania Germany. La América. America. La España. Spain.

THE DEFINITE ARTICLE is used before the names of the four parts of the globe; before the names of empires, kingdoms, countries, and provinces; before the seasons of the year and the days of the week. It is omitted before the names of kingdoms, countries, provinces, etc., when these are preceded by a preposition, except in a few cases. (See Elements.)

Holland.

La Holanda.

To go to Spain. Ir á España. J Venir de Francia. To come, to return from France. Volver de Francia. Piensa V. ir á España? Do you intend to go to Spain ? Yes, Sir, I intend to go (there) in Sí, señor; pienso ir en la primathe spring. Does he return from France ? Nuelve él de Francia? No, Sir, he returns from Germany. No, señor, vuelve de Alemania. To go on one side. Ir por un lado. To go through the middle. Ir por el medio. The middle. Half. El medio. La mitad. The well. El pozo. The cask, barrel. El barril, el tonel. The castle. El castillo. To travel. Viajar, caminar. Do you go to Paris? 🛦 Va V. á París 🕈 Yes, I go there. Sí, voy allá. Has he gone to England? Ha ido él á Inglaterra ? (Sí, ha ido allá. Yes, he has gone there. Ha ido á Inglaterra. To steal. Robar. Hurtar. To steal something from some Robar algo (alguna cosa) á alguno

Although in English the preposition from follows such verbs as buy, beg, steal, etc., in giving the source, in Spanish they take the usual preposition \acute{a} before persons:

á uno.

I buy a horse from the shoe- Compro un caballo al zapatero. maker.

Have they stolen your hat from Le han robado & V. el sombrero? vou 🕈

They have stolen it from me.

from thee !

He has stolen them from me.

What have they stolen from you?

How do you spell this word? or how is this word written?

It is written thus.

one.

The word.

Me lo han robado.

Has the man stolen the books i Te ha robado los libros el hom-

bre ? Me los ha robado.

¿ Qué le han robado á V.?

¿Cómo deletrea V. esta palabra? ¿Cómo se deletrea esta palabra? ¿Cómo se escribe esta palabra?

Se escribe así, de esta manera.

La palabra.

9

To dye, to color, dyed, colored.

To dye black.

To dve red.

To dve green. To dye blue.

To dye yellow.

My blue coat.

His new watch. His round hat.

This white hat.

Do you dye your coat blue?

I dye it green.

coat ?

I will dye it blue.

The dyer.

To get dyed, got dyed.

hat dved?

I have got it dyed white.

Red. Brown.

Gray.

Poor.

The stocking, the stockings.

The spring.

Teñir.* Teñido. Colorar.

Teñir de negro.

(Teñir de colorado, or de encarnado.

> Teñir de verde. Teñir de azul. Teñir de amarillo. Mi vestido azul.

Su reloj nuevo.

Su sombrero redondo. Este sombrero blanco.

I Tiñe V. su vestido de azul? Lo tiño de verde.

What color will you dye your ¿De qué color quiere V. tenir su vestido ?

> Lo quiero teñir de azul. El tintorero.

(Hacer teñir, hecho teñir. Mandar teñir, mandado teñir.

What color have you had your a De qué color ha hecho V, tefiir su sombrero f

> Lo he hecho teñir de blanco. Colorado, rojo, encarnado.

Moreno, pardo, café.

Pardo, gris. Pobre.

La media, las medias.

La primavera.

CONVERSACIÓN

1. ¿ Ha ido él hasta Italia ? Ha ido hasta América. ¿Le han robado sus buenos vestidos á V.? Me los han robado. 3. ¿ Hasta dónde quiere ir su hermano de V.? Quiere ir hasta el fin de ese camino. 4. ¿ Por qué ha despedazado sus libros el muchachito de V.? Porque no quiere estudiar. 5. ¿ Cuánto ha perdido V.? He perdido todo mi dinero. 6. ¿ De qué color hace V. teñir su hilo? Lo hago teñir de verde. 7. ¿ Tiene V. un sombrero blanco? Tengo un sombrero negro. 8. i No va V. á Italia? Voy allá. 9. i Ha ido ya su hermano de V. á España? Todavía no ha ido. 10. ¿ Ha acabado V. todos sus ejercicios? Los he acabado todos. 11. ¿ Dónde está el almacén de V.? Está del otro lado del camino. 12. ¿ En dónde ha estado V. esta mañana? He estado en el castillo.

EXERCISE

1. How far have you traveled? I have traveled as far as Germany. 2. How far has this poor man come? He has come as far as here. 3. Has he come as far as your house? He has come as far as my father's. 4. Dost thou steal anything? I steal nothing. 5. What have they stolen from me? They have stolen all the good books from you. 6. Have you gone as far as there? I have not gone as far as there. 7. How far are we going? We are going as far as the theater. 8. Has your little boy torn up all his books? He has torn up all of them. 9. Do you know where my father is? I do not know. 10. Do you dve anything? I dye my hat. 11. What color do you dye it? I dye it black. 12. What color dost thou get thy thread stockings dved? I get them dyed red. 13. What color have your friends had their coats dyed? They have had them dyed green. 14. What hat has the nobleman? He has two hats: a white one and a black one. 15. Has your dyer already dyed your cloth? He has dyed it. 16. Do you travel sometimes? I travel often. 17. Where do you intend to go to this summer? I intend to go to Paris. 18. Have your friends a desire to go to Holland? They have a desire to go there. 19. When do they intend to depart? They intend to depart the day after to-morrow. 20. Is the garden of your friend on this or that side of the wood? It is on that side.

THIRTY-NINTH LESSON-Lección Trigésimanovena

To be necessary, must.

Ser menester. Ser necesario.

Is it necessary?
It is necessary.

Es menester? Es necesario?
Es menester. Es necesario.

Is it necessary to go to the market? LEs menester ir al mercado? It is not necessary to go there. No es menester, or necesario in allá. What must be done to learn ¿Qué es menester, or necesario hacer para aprender el español ? Spanish ? It is necessary to study a great Es menester estudiar muchísimo. deal. What ought I to do? .Qué debo hacer 🕈 You must remain still. V. debe quedarse quieto. Adonde debe ir él ? Where must he go? He must go home. Debe ir á su casa. We must. Debemos. What must we do? 1 Qué debemos hacer ? We must write the letter. Debemos escribir la carta. Vds. deben escribir sus ejercicios. You must write your exercises. There is need. Ha menester. To need. Necesitar. (¿Qué ha menester V.? What must you have ! 🕽 🕻 Qué necesita V. 🕈 He menester algún dinero. I must have some money. Necesito algún dinero. Must you have a shilling? or do (Ha menester V. un chelin? l Necesita V. un chelín ? you need a shilling? Tiene V. lo que ha menester ? Have you what you want? L'Tiene V. lo que necesita? Tengo lo que he menester. I have what I want. He has what he wants. El tiene lo que ha menester. Tienen lo que necesitan. They have what they need. Valer.* To be worth. How much may that horse be Cuanto puede valer ese caballo?

worth?

He may be worth a hundred dol- Puede valer cien pesos.

How much have you, or do you & Cuanto tienen Vds. ? possess ?

We can not have much.

To be better, (worth more).

Am I as good as my brother?

You are better than he.

No podemos tener mucho. Valer más, (ser mejor). (¿ Valgo tanto como mi hermano? I Soy tan bueno como mi hermano! (V. vale más que él. V. es mejor que él.

I am not as good as you.	(No valgo tanto como V.) No soy tan bueno como V.	
To give back.	(Volver.* Devolver.*	
To restore.	Restituir.	
Does he restore you your book?	Le restituye él á V. el libro?	
He restores it to me.	fÉl me lo devuelve. Él me lo restituye.	
Has he given you back your gloves?	Le ha vuelto á V. los guantes?	
He has given them back.	Él me los ha vuelto. Él me los ha restituido.	
Has your brother already com- menced his exercises?	Ha empezado ya sus ejercicios el hermano de V.?	
He has not yet commenced them.	No los ha empezado todavía.	
	[El don.	
The present, (gift).	El regalo.	
The Preserve, (Bree).	El presente.	
	La dádiva.	
Have you received a present?	Ha recibido V. un regalo, (un don)?	
I have received several.	He recibido algunos.	
Have you received the books?	Ha recibido V. los libros?	
I have received them.	Yo los he recibido.	
From whom?	🌡 De quién 🕈	
From whom have you received presents?	De quién ha recibido V. pre- sentes?	
From my friends.	De mis amigos.	
Whence? Where from?	} De donde !	
Where do you come from ?	¿De dónde viene V.?	
I come from the garden.	Vengo del jardín.	
Where has he come from?	¿ De dónde ha venido él?	
He has come from the theater.	Ha venido del teatro.	
Where have they come from ?	De dónde han venido ellos !	

Cual, which, is more specific than que, and suggests that the questioner has in mind which of a certain number or of certain things.

From which?

De cuál ? De los cuáles ? From which?

The same. From which garden do you come? A De qué jardin viene V.?

From mine. From which?

From the same where you go.

The same one. The same ones. De qué?

El mismo-los mismos.

Del mío.

LDe cuál?

Del mismo adónde V. va.

El mismo. Los mismos.

CONVERSACIÓN

1. ¿ Debo ir por vino ? V. debe ir por vino. 2. ¿ Qué debo hacer? V. debe comprar un buen libro. 3. ¿ Para qué debo ir á la plaza? V. debe ir para comprar carnero y vino. 4. Tiene su padre de V. lo que ha menester? Tiene lo que ha menester. 5. ¿ Cuándo se los han devuelto á V.? Ayer. 6. Viene V. del jardín? No vengo del jardín sino del almacén. 7. ¿ De qué jardin viene él ? Viene del jardin de nuestro antiguo amigo. 8. ¿ Valen los caballos de V. tanto como los de los ingleses? No valen tanto. 9. ¿ Es V. tan bueno como su hermano? Él es mejor que yo. 10. ¿ Por qué no vale su sombrero de V. tanto como el mío? Porque no es tan hermoso como el de V. 11. ¿ Han comenzado sus ejercicios los hermanos de V.? Los han comenzado. 12. ¿ Adónde he de ir ? V. puede ir á Francia.

EXERCISE

1. Is it necessary to go to the market? It is not necessary to go thither. 2. What must you buy? I must buy some mutton. 3. Must I go for the carpenter? You must go for him. 4. What must be done to learn Russian? It is necessary to study a great deal. 5. Is it necessary to study a great deal to learn German? It is necessary to study a great deal. 6. What are we to do? You must work. 7. Must you work much in order to learn Arabic? I must work much to learn it. 8. Must I send for anything? Thou must send for some wine. 9. What must I do? You must write an exercise. 10. What do you want, Sir? I want some cloth. 11. How much are these stockings worth? They are worth two shillings. 12. Is that all you want? That is all. 13. What do you want? I want money and clothes. 14. Have you now what you want? I have what I want. 15. Have the neighbor's boys given you back your books? They have given them back to me. 16. Have you received any presents? I have received some. 17. What presents have you received? I have received fine presents. 18. Where does the Irishman come from? He comes from the garden. 19. Does he come from the garden from which you come? He does not come from the same. 20. How much may that horse be worth? It may be worth five hundred dollars. 21. Is this book worth as much as that? It is worth more. 22. Which dogs has your servant beaten? He has beaten those that have made much noise.

FORTIETH LESSON—Lección Cuadragésima THE IMPERFECT

The imperfect indicative is used when the action or state described by the verb is in time past, and this is continued, habitual, progressive, attempted, etc. The preterit refers to past state or action as simply having been, or taken place, once for all, without reference to continuance, habit, repetition, etc. When the time through which this action or state continues is specified, the preterit must be used.

The imperfect carries with it the idea found in was, were, used to, tried to, according to the context; the preterit is best rendered by the simple English preterit or past tense, as wrote, said, loved, where no auxiliaries are used, or by the use of did with principal verb.

For the formation of these two tenses, see the table in the Elements.

To have.

IMPERFECT.

I had or was having, etc.

I had or did have, etc.

To have, (auxiliary).

IMPERFECT.

I had.

PRETERIT.

To be.

Tener.

Tenía, tenías, tenía; teníamos,

teníais, tenían.

Tuve, tuviste, tuvo; tuvimos,

tuvisteis, tuvieron.

Haber.

Había, habías, había; habíamos,

habíais, habían.

Hube, hubiste, hubo; hubimos, hubisteis, hubieron,

Ser and Estar.

IMPERFECT.	Era, eras, era; éramos, erais, eran. Estaba, estabas, estaba; estábamos, estabais, estaban.	
I was.	Fuí, fuiste, fué; fuimos, fuisteis, fueron.	
PRETERIT.	Estuve, estuviste, estuvo; estuvimos, estuvisteis, estuvieron.	
To make.	Hacer.	
imperfect.	Hacía, hacías, hacía; hacíamos, hacíais, hacían.	
PRETERIT.	Hice, hiciste, hizo; hicimos, hicisteis, hicieron.	
To be able, (can).	Poder.	
IMPERFECT.	Podía, podías, podía; podíamos, podíais, podían.	
PRETERIT.	Pude, pudiste, pudo; pudimos, pudisteis, pudieron.	
Last night.	Anoche. Ayer noche.	
Did you go to the ball last night?	Fué V. al baile anoche.	
Yes, Sir, I went with your son and my brother.	Sí, señor, fuí con su hijo de V. y mi hermano.	
Did you stay until the end of the ball?	Se quedaron Vds. hasta el fin del baile?	
No, Sir, we left the room as your brother was coming in.	No, señor, dejamos la sala cuan- do entraba su hermano de V.	
Had you anything to do this morning?	¿Tenía V. algo que hacer esta mañana ?	
I had some letters to write, but I had no paper.	Tenía que escribir algunas cartas, pero no tenía papel.	
Could you not ask for some?	No podía V. pedir alguno !	
I was going to ask for some just when you called me.	Se lo iba á pedir á V. así que me llamó.	

FEMININE NOUNS

		SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
The. C	of the.	La. De la.	Las. De las.
To the.		Á la.	Á las.
The woman.	The women.	La mujer.	Las mujeres.
Of the woman.	Of the women.	De la mujer.	De las mujeres.
To the woman.	To the women.	Á la mujer.	Á las mujeres.
The mother.	Of the mothers.	La madre.	De las madres.
To the sister.	To the sisters.	Á la hermana.	Á las hermanas.

She. They.	Ella. Ellas.	
Has she?	Tiene ella?	
She has.	Ella tiene.	
She has not.	Ella no tiene.	
Have they ?	Tienen ellas?	
They have.	Ellas tienen.	
They have not.	Ellas no tienen.	

POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS

There are two kinds of Possessive Pronouns—conjunctive and absolute. They are as follows:

	CONJUNCTIVE.	ABSOLUTE.
My.	Mi, mis.	Mío-a, míos-as.
Thy.	Tu, tus.	Tuyo-a, tuyos-as.
His, her, its, their, your.	Su, sus.	Suyo-a, suyos-as.
Our.	Nuestro-a, nuestros-as.	Nuestro-a, nuestros-as.
Your.	Vuestro-a, vuestros-as.	Vuestro-a, vuestros-as.

The conjunctive adjective pronouns are used before the nouns which they qualify, and the absolute either after or alone. They agree in gender and number with the object possessed, and not with the antecedent, as is the case in English.

In polite conversation the following are used.

	(Su, or el—de V., or de Vds. Sus, or los—de V., or de Vds. Su, or la—de V., or de Vds. Sus, or las—de V., or de Vds.	
Your.	Sus, or los—de V., or de Vds.	
2041	Su, or la—de V., or de Vds.	
	Sus, or las—de V., or de Vds.	
They sold their share, (in stocks).	Ellos vendieron su acción.	
She sold her houses.	Ella vendió sus casas.	
The father and his son, or his daughter.	El padre y su hijo, ó su hija.	
The mother and her son, or her daughter.	La madre y su hijo, ó su hija.	
The child and its brother, or its sister.	El niño y su hermano, ó hermana.	

		SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
My pen.	My pens.	Mi pluma.	Mis plumas.
My spoon.	My spoons.	Mi cuchara.	Mis cucharas.
His or her nut.	His or her nuts.	Su nuez.	Sus nueces.
Our hand.	Our hands.	Nuestra mano.	Nuestras manos.

SINGULAR.

PLURAT.

Vuestra ventana. Vuestras ventanas. Your windows. Your windows. Las, or su ventana de V., or de Vds. Las, or sus ventanas de V., or de

Their door. Their doors. Su puerta. Sus puertas.

When the use of the simple su would cause ambiguity, the pleonastic form is added: as, su libro, his book, her book, your book, their book; but to avoid doubt in those cases where the context is not sufficient to accomplish this, the preposition and another pronoun must be added: as, his book, su libro de él; her book, su libro de ella; your book, su libro de V.; their book, su libro de ellos, or ellas.

His father.

Their books.

Your brother.

Virtuous.

The virtuous woman. The virtuous women. Su padre de él. El padre de él. Los libros de ellos, or de ellas.

(Su hermano de V. El hermano de V.

Virtuoso.

La mujer virtuosa. Las mujeres virtuosas.

The feminine of adjectives is generally formed by changing final o to a, or by adding a to a few consonant terminations.

The amiable boy.

Is she amiable?

America, American,

some, virtuous, and well educated.

The female servants in this city are almost all Irish women.

This young lady. These young ladies.

That young lady.

Those young ladies. The hand, the hands.

The right hand.

The left hand.

I have a sore hand.

El muchacho amable.

LEs ella amable ? The two sisters are very amiable. Las dos hermanas son muy amables.

América. Americano-a. The American women are hand- Las americanas son hermosas, virtuosas y bien educadas.

Ireland, Irishman, Irish woman, Irlanda, Irlandés. Irlandesa. Las criadas en esta ciudad son casi todas irlandesas.

Esta señorita.

Estas señoritas.

Esa or aquella señorita.

Esas or aquellas señoritas.

La mano, las manos.

La mano derecha.

La mano izquierda.

Tengo mala la mano.

The tooth, (molar). The tooth, (front). Have you a toothache?

I have a headache.

I have a very severe headache.

I have a pain in my side.

His feet are sore.

The face. The mouth. The cheek.

The tongue, the language.

The door. The window. The street. The town. The stuff.

The old woman.

La muela. El diente.

Tiene V. dolor de muelas ? (Tengo dolor de cabeza. Me duele la cabeza.

Tengo jaqueca.

Tengo un dolor en el costado.

Me duele el costado. Tiene los pies malos. La cara.

> La boca. La mejilla. La lengua. La puerta. La ventana. La calle. La ciudad. La tela.

La vieja.

Una.

De una.

Una señorita feliz.

Una joven activa.

Una santa mártir.

Tiene V. mi pluma?

No, señora, yo no la tengo. ¿ Qué botella ha quebrado V.?

Una muchacha industriosa.

Á una.

Common names ending in a are usually feminine.

INDEFINITE ARTICLE—FEMININE

A, an. Of a, from a. To a.

An industrious girl.

A happy young lady.

An active young woman.

The gender of common nouns of only one termination may be learned from the article which accompanies.

A holy female martyr.

Have you my pen? No, madam, I have it not.

Which bottle have you broken?

Which door have you opened?

Which windows have

opened ? Which

opened ?

(¿ Qué puerta ha abierto V. ? 🕽 🖟 Qué puerta habéis abierto 🕈

you ¿Cuáles ventanas ha abierto V. ?

windows been ¿ Cuáles ventanas han sido abierhave tas 1

Which letters have you written? Luáles cartas han escrito Vds.? Which letters had been written? ¿Cuáles cartas habían sido escri-

> These. Those.

Have you this, or that pen ?

I have neither this, nor that, Do you see that woman ? I see her.

Have you seen my sisters? No, madam, I have not seen No, señora, no las he visto. them.

Do you speak to my sisters? I speak to them.

Some good water.

A napkin. A towel. To celebrate. To feast.

Estas. Esas, aquellas.

Tiene V. esta, 6 esa or aquella pluma !

No tengo ésta, ni ésa, ni aquélla. Ve V. á esa mujer ?

Yo la veo.

Ha visto V. á mis hermanas?

Habla V. á mis hermanas ? Yo les hablo. (Alguna agua buena. Un poco de agua buena. Una servilleta. Una toalla.

Celebrar. Festeiar.

CONVERSACIÓN

1. ¿ Dónde se hallan los hermanos de V. ? Están en París. 2. ¿ Tiene mi galón de oro su hermana de V.? No lo tiene. 3. ¿ Ve V. algunas veces á mi madre? La veo muy á menudo. 4. ¿ Por qué se que ja V. ? Me que jo porque me duele la mano izquierda. 5. ¿ Ha comprado algunas casas el hermano de V.? Ha comprado algunas casas. 6. ¿ Está escribiendo su hermana de V.? No, señora; no está escribiendo. 7. ¿ Qué botella ha quebrado su hermanita de V.? Quebró la que mi madre compró ayer. 8. ¿Se ha lastimado su madre de V.? No se ha lastimado. 9. ¿ Se ha cortado V. el dedo? No, señora; nie he cortado la mano. 10. ¿ Puede V. escribir con esta pluma? Puedo escribir con ella. 11. ¿ Qué ventanas ha abierto su hermana de V.? Ha abierto las del cuarto que da á la calle. 12. ¿ Bailaron las amigas de V. ? Bailaron mucho.

EXERCISE

1. How are your brothers? They have been very well during these last days (últimos días). 2. "Among you

country people there are many fools, are there not?" (no es así), asked a philosopher lately (el otro día) of a peasant. The latter answered, "Sir, they are to be found in all stations," (estado). "Fools sometimes tell the truth," said the philosopher. 3. Has your mother anything? She has a gold fork. 4. When did you see your sister? I saw her a fortnight ago, (hace quince días). 5. What fork have you? I have my iron fork. 6. Have your sisters had my pens? They have not had them, but I believe that their children have had them. 7. Is your sister as old as my mother? She is not as old, but she is taller. 8. Has he not bought some silk stockings? He has bought some. 9. Why does not the daughter of your neighbor go out? She does not go out because she has sore feet. 10. Does the wife (la esposa) of our shoemaker go out already? No, madam, she does not go out yet, for she is still very ill. 11. Have you eaten of my soup or of my mother's? I have eaten neither of yours nor your mother's, but of that of my good sister. 12. Have you a sore eye? I have not a sore eye, but I have a toothache. 13. Will you have this or that? I will have neither. 14. Do you wish to have my mother's good black silk or my sister's? I wish to have neither your mother's nor your sister's, but that which you have. 15. Many a one thinks himself learned who is not so, and many men surpass (exceden) women in vanity. 16. Has your brother a sore hand? No, but he has a pain in his side. 17. Do you open the window? I open it because it is too warm. 18. Have you been at the ball of my old acquaintance? (conocido). I have been there. 19. Is this young lady a Turk? No, she is a Greek. 20. Does she speak French? She speaks it.

FORTY-FIRST LESSON—Lección Cuadragésimaprimera

To eat, eaten.
To dine, dined.
The dinner.
The breakfast.
To take supper, to sup.
The supper.

Comer, comido.

La comida. El almuerzo, el desayuno.

Cenar. La cena. After.

After me. After him.

After you.

After my brother.

Después.

Después de mí. Después de él.

Después de V. Después de Vds.

Después de mi hermano.

Después de is used with substantives and verbs in the infinitive; después que with verbs in the subjunctive mode.

After having spoken.
After carving the boiled meat.
After having sold his house.

After having been there.

I broke your knife after cutting the roasted meat.

To break, broken.

I have dined earlier than you.
You have supped late.

To pay.

To pay a man for a horse.

To pay the tailor for the coat.

Do you pay the shoemaker for the shoes?

I pay him for them.

Does he pay you for the knives?

He pays me for them.

To ask for.

To ask a man for money.

I ask my father for some money.

Do you ask me for your hat?

I do ask you for it.

I have paid the tailor.
You have paid him.
Have you paid the shoemaker?
I have paid him.
Do you pay what you owe?
Yes, I pay what I owe.
Have you paid for your books?
I have paid for them.
Have you asked for breakfast?
I have asked for it.

Después de haber hablado.

Después de trinchar el cocido.

Después de haber vendido su casa.

Después de haber estado allá. Yo quebré el cuchillo de V. después de trinchar el asado. Romper, roto.

He comido más temprano que V. V. ha cenado tarde.

Pagar.

Pagar un caballo á un hombre. Pagar el vestido al sastre. § Paga V. los zapatos al zapatero ?

Yo se los pago. ¿ Paga él los cuchillos á V. ? Él me los paga. Pedir.*

Pedir dinero & un hombre. Yo pido dinero & mi padre. Me pide V. su sombrero ? Yo se lo pido & V.

He pagado al sastre.
V. le ha pagado.
Ha pagado V. al zapatero?
Le he pagado.
Paga V. lo que debe?
Sí, pago lo que debo.
Ha pagado V. sus libros?
Los he pagado.
Ha pedido V. el almuerzo?
Lo he pedido.

How much have you paid for A cuanto los ha pagado V.? them 🕈

I have paid two dollars for them. Los he pagado á dos pesos.

Do you ask for something?

I ask for bread.

To inquire, to ask about or for. To seek.

Do you ask for somebody ?

Yes, Sir, I ask for your brother.

Do you look for anything? I come to seek the letters.

About whom do you inquire?

They inquire after your brother.

She inquires of you. To try, to attempt. Will you try to do that? I have tried to do it.

You must try to do it better.

To hold. To seize.

Do you hold my stick ? I hold it.

(Pide V. algo?

Quiere V. algo ?

Pido pan.

Preguntar. Buscar.

Buscar.

(Pregunta V. por alguno ?

🗼 Busca V. á alguien 🕈

Sí, señor, pregunto por su hermano de V.

Busca V. alguna cosa ?

Vengo á buscar las cartas. Acerca de quién quiere V. pre-

guntar?

¿ Por quién pregunta V.? Ellos preguntan por su hermano de V.

Ella le pregunta á V.

Probar,* procurar.

¿ Quiere V. procurar hacer eso ? He probado á hacerlo.

(V. debe procurar hacerlo mejor. Debéis procurar hacerlo mejor.

> Tener. Asir.

Tiene V. mi bastón? Yo lo tengo.

When inquiry is made as to some action which is to take place at once, the Spanish requires the present tense, while in English the future is commonly used:

Will you hold my cane? Will you sell me a bed ?

Are you looking for anything?

For whom are you looking? I look for a brother of mine. The uncle.

The cousin.

Tiene V. mi bastón ?

Me vende V. una cama f

(Busca V. algo ?

🕽 į Está V. buscando algo 🕈

A quién busca V. ?

Yo busco á un hermano mío.

El tío.

El primo.

The relation.

The parents, (father and mother).

A brother of mine.

A cousin of yours.

A relation of his, of hers.

A friend of ours.

A neighbor of theirs.

El pariente. Los padres.

Un hermano mío.

Un primo de V., or suyo.

Un pariente suyo, or de él, de ella

Un amigo nuestro.

Un vecino suyo, or de ellos, ellas.

The possessive pronouns follow the nouns which they qualify when used as vocatives:

my son ?

My dear friends, you have come Queridos amigos míos, Vds. han late.

To strive.

Does he try to see me ?

He tries to see you.

Whom does he try to see !

He tries to see an uncle of his.

As it should be.

As I ought.

As he ought.

As you ought.

To do his duty. You write properly.

Have you done your task as you & Han hecho Vds. su tarea como ought?

We have done it properly.

The duty. The task.

Dost thou come from the garden, & Vienes del jardín, hijo mío ?

venido tarde.

Esforzarse.*

(¿Procura él verme ?

) Se esfuerza él á verme ?

(Procura ver á V.

Se esfuerza á ver á V.

(¿ Á quién procura ver ?

🕽 🛦 quién se esfuerza á ver 🕈

(Procura ver á un tío suyo. Se esfuerza á ver á un tío suvo.

Como se debe ser.

Como debo.

Como él debe.

Como V. debe.

Cumplir con su obligación.

V. escribe como debe.

These men do their duty prop- Estos hombres cumplen con su

obligación como deben.

deben ?

La hemos hecho como debemos.

El deber. La tarea.

CONVERSACIÓN

1. Ha pagado los libros su tío de V.? Los ha pagado. 2. Ha pagado sus zapatos el primo de V.? Todavía no los 3. ¿ Ha roto mis lápices su hijo de V.? Los ha pagado. rompió después de haber escrito sus cartas. 4. ¿ Á cuáles mercaderes pide V. guantes? Se los pido á los que viven en la calle de Guillermo, (William). 5. ¿ Á quién hemos pagado el pan? Lo hemos pagado á nuestros panaderos. 6. ¿ Piensa V. ir á Francia este verano? Sí; pienso ir. 7. ¿ En qué casa come V. ? Como en casa de un amigo mío. 8. ¿ Adónde va V. ? Voy á casa de un pariente mío para almorzar con él. 9. ¿ Ha procurado V. ver á mi padre? He procurado verlo. 10. ¿ Por quién pregunta V. ? Pregunto por el sastre. 11. ¿ Qué pide su hermanito de V. ? Pide un pedacito de pan.

EXERCISE

1. Have you paid for the gun? I have paid for it. 2. Hast thou paid the merchant for the horse? I have not vet paid him for it. 3. Does my brother pay you what he owes you? He pays it to me. 4. Has your uncle paid the butcher for the mutton? He has paid him for it. 5. Have you paid the merchant for the wine after drinking it? I have paid for it after drinking it. 6. How have my children done their task? They have done it well. 7. Do you do your duty? I do what I can. 8. Do you ask me for anything? I ask you for a dollar. 9. What do you ask the baker for? I ask him for some bread. 10. Does he ask thee for the book? He does ask me for it. 11. Whom have you asked for some sugar? I have asked the merchant for some. 12. How old art thou? I am not quite ten years old. 13. Dost thou already learn Spanish? I do already. learn it. 14. Is your father at home? No, he has gone out, but my brother is at home. 15. Where has your father gone? He has gone to England. 16. How long does your brother remain at home? Till twelve o'clock. 17. Have you already dined? Not yet. 18. At what o'clock do you dine? I dine at six o'clock. 19. With whom did you dine vesterday? I dined with a relation of mine. 20. Where does your uncle dine to-day? He dines with us.

FORTY-SECOND LESSON—Lección Cuadragésimasegunda

Who, what, that. The one who. Those who. Que, (relative pronoun). El que. Los que, las que.

To perceive. Do you perceive the man who is (a Percibe V. al hombre que viene? coming? I perceive the one who is coming. Diviso (columbro) al que viene. Do you perceive the men who are ¿Divisa V. á los hombres que van going into the warehouse? I perceive those who are going Diviso á los que van á entrar into it. To enter, to go in. How is the weather ? What kind of weather is it ? It is fine weather. What was the weather yester- ¿Qué tiempo hizo ayer? day? It was bad weather yesterday. It was very warm. It was very cold. Dark, obscure. Dusky, gloomy, sad. Clear, light. Is it dark in your warehouse ? Is it dark in his garret? It is very dark there. Wet, damp. Dry. Are the streets wet? They are not very dry. Is the weather damp? It is not damp. Is it the dry season? The weather is too dry. The moonlight. The moonshine. It is moonlight. We have too much sun. To taste. Have you tasted that wine? I have tasted it. How do you like it ? ¿ Qué le parece á V. ?

I like it well.

Percibir, divisar, columbrar. Divisa V. al hombre que viene ? á entrar en el almacén ? en él. Entrar. (¿ Qué tiempo hace ? L Qué tiempo tenemos ? Hace hermoso tiempo. Hizo mal tiempo ayer. Hizo mucho calor. Hizo mucho frío. Obscuro, tenebroso. Lóbrego, triste. Claro, despejado. LEs or está obscuro su almacén de V. ? Les or está obscuro su desván ? Está muy obscuro allí. Mojado, húmedo. Seco. ¿ Están mojadas las calles ? No están muy secas. LEstá húmedo el tiempo? No está búmedo. Les seco el tiempo? El tiempo está demasiado seco. La luz de la luna. El claro de la luna. Hay luna, hace luna. Demasiado sol tenemos. Gustar, probar. Ha probado V. aquel vino? Lo he gustado.

Me gusta mucho.

Do you like cider ? No, I like wine.

The pupil.

The master, teacher.

Also.

To learn by heart.

Do your pupils like to learn by Les gusta á sus discípulos de heart ?

They do not like learning by heart.

Have you learned your exercises & Han aprendido Vds. sus ejer-

by heart? We have learned them.

Once a day.

Three times a month.

So much a year. So much a head.

So much a soldier. Six times a year.

Early in the morning.

We go out early in the morning. When did your father go out?

To be content.

Are you content with your new LEstá V. contento con su vestido coat 1

I am content with it.

Le gusta á V. la sidra ?

No; me gusta el vino.

El discípulo. El alumno.

El maestro.

También.

Aprender de memoria.

V. aprender de memoria ?

El aprender de memoria no les gusta.

No les gusta aprender de memoria.

cicios de memoria ?

Los hemos aprendido.

Una vez al día.

Tres veces al mes, por mes.

Tanto al año. Tanto por cabeza. Tanto por soldado. Seis veces al año.

Por la mañana temprano.

Salimos por la mañana temprano. LCuándo salió su padre de V. ?

Estar contento.

nuevo f

Estoy satisfecho de él.

Si with an accent is yes or indeed; without an accent it is if.

If.

money.

Do you intend to buy paper ? I intend to buy some, if they pay

me what they owe me.

Si.

I intend to pay you if I receive Pienso (intento) pagar á V., si recibo dinero.

> Piensa V. comprar papel ? Intento comprar alguno si me pagan lo que me deben.

CONVERSACIÓN

1. ¿ Columbra V. á los niños del soldado? Los columbro. 2. ¿ Ves á los niños que estudian? No veo á los que estudian, sino á los que juegan. 3. ¿ Qué les gusta á los sol-

dados? Les gusta el vino. 4. ¿Cuántas veces al año va su primo de V. al baile? Va dos veces al año. 5. ¿ Le gusta á V. el ave? Me gusta el ave, pero no el pescado. 6. ¿ Ha podido V. leer el billete que le he escrito? He podido leerlo. 7. ¿ Por qué no entiende V. á ese hombre? Porque habla demasiado mal. 8. ¿ Tiene su padre de V. intención de comprar este caballo? Tiene intención de comprarlo, si recibe dinero. 9. ¿ Hizo buen tiempo ayer? Ayer hizo muy mal tiempo. 10. ¿ Fué V. al jardín ayer? No fuí. 11. ¿ Ha probado V. ese vino? Lo he probado. 12. ¿ Está V. contento de él? No estoy contento de él.

EXERCISE

1. Do you perceive the man who is coming? I do not perceive him. 2. Does your brother perceive the man who has lent him money? He does not perceive the one who has lent him, but the one to whom he has lent some. 3. Dost thou perceive anything? I perceive nothing. 4. Do you like a large hat? I do not like a large hat, but a large umbrella. 5. Does your brother like cider ? (sidra). He likes it. 6. Do these children like to study? They like to study and to play. 7. How often do your children drink a day? They drink several times a day. 8. How often in a month do you go? I go but once a month. 9. Does your cook often go to the market? He goes thither every morning. 10. What do you like? I like a piece of bread and a glass of wine, 11. How many exercises do they write a day? They write only two, but they write them properly. 12. Do you understand the man who is speaking to you? I do not understand him. 13. Why do you not learn it? I have no time to learn it. 14. Does your friend intend going to England? He intends going thither, if they pay him what they owe him. 15. How is the weather to-day? It is very fine weather. 16. Is it warm? It is very warm. 17. Is it not cold? It is not cold. 18. Do you intend going there to-morrow? I intend going there if the weather is fine. 19. Why can not your brother work in his warehouse? He can not work there, because it is too dark. 20. Is the weather dry? It is very dry.

FORTY-THIRD LESSON—Lección Cuadragésimatercera THE PASSIVE VOICE

The passive voice is very simple. It is formed by the use of ser and estar as auxiliaries with principal verbs, the agent being preceded by de or por. The student should recall what has been said as to the reflexive use of se with verbs to give a passive construction.

I love.
I am loved.

Thou conductest.

Thou art conducted.

He praises.

He is praised. You punish.

You are punished.

They blame.

They are blamed.

Yo amo.

Yo soy amado.

Tú conduces.

Tú estás conducido.

Él alaba.

Él es alabado.

V. castiga.

V. está castigado.

Ellos vituperan.

Ellos son vituperados.

Estar is generally used with present participles in a passive construction, save where the verb is descriptive of a mental or emotional act or condition, in which case ser is employed.

To praise.

To punish.

To blame.

By, through.

Naughty. Skillful, diligent, clever.

Assiduous, industrious, studious.

Idle.

Ignorant.

The idler.

Fo reward.

To despise.

To hate.

The winter.
The summer.

The spring.

The autumn.

Alabar, elogiar.

Castigar.

Vituperar, culpar.

Por.

Malo. (Mal, before a masc. noun).

Hábil, diligente, diestro.

Asiduo, industrioso, estudioso.

Ocioso, perezoso, holgazán.

Ignorante.

El haragán.

Recompensar, premiar. Estimar, apreciar.

Despreciar, menospreciar.

Aborrecer. El invierno.

El verano.

La primavera.

El otoño.

It is bad to travel in the winter. Es malo viajar en el invierno, To walk, to go. Andar.* Ir en coche. To drive, to ride in a carriage. Ir (andar, pasear) á caballo. Montar á caballo. To ride, (on horseback). Cabalgar. To go on foot. Ir á pie. Do you like to ride ? Le gusta á V. andar á caballo ? I like to drive. Me gusta ir en coche. (¿Se vive bien en París ? Can one live well in Paris? Lo pasa uno bien en París ? One can live well in Paris. Se vive bien en París. Dear, (expensive). Caro, costoso. (LEs caro (costoso) el vivir en Londres ? Is it expensive to live in London ? ¿Cuesta mucho vivir en Londres ? Thunder. Trueno. Truenos. (La tormenta. La tempestad. The storm. La borrasca. La niebla. The fog. Is it windy? Does the wind (Hace viento? blow f Corre viento, (hace aire) ? Hace viento. It is windy. The wind blows. Corre viento, (hace aire). No hace viento. It is not windy. No corre viento, (no hace aire). Hace mucho viento. It is very windy. Corre mucho viento, (hace aire). Does it thunder ? Is it thunder-(, Hay truenos? , Truena?) a Está tronando ? ing ? Is it foggy? Hace niebla? Hay niebla? (¿ Está tempestuoso el tiempo ? Is it stormy? Hay tempestad ? (No hay tempestad. It is not stormy. No está tempestuoso. Luce el sol ! Hay sol ! Does the sun shine? It thunders very much. Truena muchísimo. Afterwards. Después. As soon as. Luego que. Así que.

What do you do in the afternoon? ¿ Qué hace V. por la tarde?

As soon as I have eaten I drink.

Así que haya comido, bebo.

To sleep.

Does your father sleep still ? He still sleeps.

Without.

Without money.

Without speaking.

Without saying anything.

At last.

To arrive. Has he arrived at last?

He has not yet arrived.
Is he coming at last?

He is coming.

Are you loved by your father and mother?

I am loved by my parents.

Dormir.*

Duerme todavía su padre de V.! Duerme todavía, aún duerme.

Sin.

Sin dinero.

Sin hablar.

Sin decir nada. Sin hablar palabra.

Al fin. finalmente.

Llegar.

Ha llegado al cabo ?

Todavía no ha llegado. ¿ Viene al fin ?

Él viene.

Are you loved by your father and LES V. amado de sus padres ?

Soy amado de mis padres.

CONVERSACIÓN

1. ¿ De quién es V. amado? Soy amado de mi tío. 2. ¿ Es amado de sus maestros nuestro amigo? Es amado y alabado por ellos, porque es estudioso y bueno; pero su hermano es despreciado por los suyos, porque es perezoso y malo. 3. ¿ Es V. castigado algunas veces? No lo soy nunca; soy amado por mis buenos maestros. 4. ¿ Qué es necesario hacer para ser recompensado? Es necesario ser hábil y estudiar mucho. 5. ¿Por qué son amados estos niños? Son amados porque son buenos. 6. ¿Salió V. á caballo anteayer? He salido á caballo hoy. 7 ¿ Es bueno viajar en la primavera? Es bueno viajar en la primavera y en el otoño; pero es malo viajar en el verano y en el invierno. 8. ¿ Es caro vivir en París ? Se vive bien, y no es caro. 9. ¿ Hubo tempestad ayer? Hizo un tiempo muy tempestuoso. 10. ¿ Va V. á la plaza esta mañana? Voy, si el tiempo no está tempestuoso. 11. ¿ De qué ha hablado su hermano de V.? Ha hablado de sus libros, de sus caballos, y de sus perros. 12. ¿ Puede V. trabajar sin hablar? Puedo trabajar sin hacerlo; pero no puedo aprender el español sin hablar.

EXERCISE

1. Are you loved? I am loved. 2. By whom are we loved? You are loved by your friends. 3. By whom are we blamed? We are blamed by our enemies. 4. Why are we blamed by them? Because they do not love us. 5. ¿ Is thy master heard by his pupils? He is heard by them. 6. Are we praised or blamed? We are neither praised nor blamed. 7. Is he sometimes punished? He is every morning and every afternoon. 8. Who is praised and rewarded? Skillful children are praised, esteemed, and rewarded, but the ignorant are blamed, despised, and punished. 9. What must one do in order to be loved? One must be good and assiduous. 10. Is your brother as studious as mine? He is as studious as yours, but your brother is better than mine. 11. Does your brother ride on horseback as often as you? He rides on horseback oftener than I. 12. Do you like traveling in the winter? I do not like traveling in the winter; I like traveling in the spring and in autumn. 13. Have you sometimes traveled in the winter? I have often traveled in the winter and in the summer. 14. Have you been in London? I have been there. 15. Do you like traveling in France? I like traveling there, because one finds good people (gentes buenas) there. 16. Do the English like to travel in Spain? They like to travel there; but they find the roads too bad. 17. Is it windy? It is very windy. 18. Do you intend to go to France this year? I intend to go there if the weather is not too bad. 19. What sort of weather is it? It thunders. 20. Does the sun shine? The sun does not shine; it is foggy.

FORTY-FOURTH LESSON—Lección Cuadragésimacuarta

REFLEXIVE VERBS

Objective pronouns of the first and second persons have a reflexive meaning when they refer to the same subject: Me veo engañado, I behold myself deceived. Since pronouns of the third person, including usted and ustedes, would refer to a different person if the forms le, lo, la, los, and las were used, each gender employs se to express a reflexive action on the subject: Él se pierde en la obscuridad, He loses himself in the darkness.

Every pronominal subject may be intensified by adding to it, in the proper gender and number, the adjective *mismo*: Ella misma lo ha hecho, She herself did it.

I—(myself).
Thou—(thyself).
He—(himself).
She—(herself).
It—(itself).
One—(one's self).

Sing. You—(yourself).
Plur. You, ye—(yourselves).

We-(ourselves).

Masc. They—(themselves).
Fem. They—(themselves).
Do you burn yourself?
I do not burn myself.
You do not burn yourself.
I see myself.
He sees himself.
We see ourselves.
They see themselves.
He always praises himself.

Do you wish to warm yourself?

I do wish to warm myself.

To divert.

To amuse one's self.

In what do you amuse yourself ! I amuse myself by reading. He diverts himself by playing.

(Yo) me—(á mí mismo).
(Tú) te—(á ti mismo).
(Él) se—(á sí mismo).
(Ella) se—(á sí misma).
(Él) se—(á sí mismo).
(Ella) se—(á sí misma).
Uno se—alguno se—(á sí mismo).
(Nosotros) nos—(á nosotros mismo).

mos).
V. se—á sí mismo.
Vds. se—(vosotros os)—(á sí mismos)—(á vosotros mismos).
Ellos se—(á sí mismos).

Ellas se—(á sí mismas).

Se quema V. ?

No me quemo.

V. no se quema.

Me veo. Él se ve.

Nosotros nos vemos. Ellos se ven, ellas se ven.

Él se alaba siempre á sí mismo.

Quiere V. calentarse ?
 Se quiere V. calentar ?
 Me quiero calentar.

Divertirse.* Entretenerse.* 1

Recrearse.

A or en qué se divierte V.? Yo me recreo leyendo, or en leer? Se entretiene en jugar, jugando.

¹ Conjugated like tener.

Each. Each one.

Each man amuses himself as he Cada hombre se divierte como le likes.

Each one amuses himself in the Cada uno se divierte del mejor best way he can.

The taste.

Each man has his taste.

Each of you. The world.

Everybody speaks of it.

Every one is liable to error.

To mistake. You are mistaken. He is mistaken.

To deceive, to cheat.

He has cheated me.

He has cheated me of a hundred dollars. *

You cut (did cut) your finger. I cut my nails.

A hair.

To pull out. He pulls out his hair. He cuts his hair.

To go away. Are you going away? I am going away. He is going away.

To be sleepy.

Are you sleepy ? I am sleepv.

To soil. To stain.

To fear, to dread,

Cada, todo. Cada uno.

gusta.

modo que puede.

El gusto.

Cada uno tiene su gusto.

Cada hombre tiene su gusto.

Cada uno de Vds.

El mundo.

Cada uno or todo el mundo habla de ello.

Todos hablan de ello.

Cada uno comete errores.

Todos estamos sujetos á errar.

Equivocarse.

V. se equivoca. Él se equivoca.

Engañar. Hacer droga.

Él me ha engañado.

Él me ha hecho droga cien pesos.

V. se cortó el dedo. Yo me corto las uñas.

Un cabello.

Arrancar, arrancarse. El se arranca el cabello.

El se corta el cabello.

Irse, marcharse.

Se va V. 1 Se marcha V. 1 Me vov. Me marcho.

Él se va. Se marcha.

Tener sueño.

Tener gana de dormir.

Quererse dormir.

Tiene V. sueño? Tengo sueño.

> Ensuciar, ensuciarse. Manchar, mancharse. Temer, recelar.

I dread, thou dreadest, he dreads, Temo, temes, teme, tememos, tewe dread, you dread, they méis, temen. dread.

He is afraid of soiling his finger. Él teme ensuciarse el dedo.

Do you dread to go out? I do dread to go out.

He is afraid to go out.

The wood, (fuel).

A Teme V. salir ? Temo salir.

Él tiene miedo de salir.

La leña.

CONVERSACIÓN

1. ¿ Se pueden ver en este espejo grande los amigos de V.? Se pueden ver en él. 2. ¿ Tiene V. un dedo malo? Tengo un dedo y un pie malos. 3. 4 Se calientan sus vecinos de V.? Se calientan, porque tienen frío. 4. ¿ Qué hace ese hombre? Se arranca el cabello. 5. ¿ En qué se divierte su primo de V.? Se divierte en leer buenos libros, y en escribir á sus amigos. 6. Cada hombre tiene su gusto, ¿ cuál es el de V.? El mío es estudiar, leer un buen libro, ir al teatro, al concierto, al baile, y montar á caballo. 7. ¿ Qué le dice á V. su vecino? Me dice que V. quiere comprar un caballo; pero yo sé que se equivoca; porque V. no tiene dinero para comprarlo. 8. ¿ Qué se dice en la plaza? Se dice que se ha batido el enemigo. 9. 1 Se van sus amigos de V.? Se van. 10. ¿ Qué dicen nuestros vecinos? Se van sin decir nada. 11. ¿ Por qué no come V.? No como cuando no tengo hambre. 12. i Ha comido algo anoche su hermano de V.? Ha comido un pedazo de carne de vaca, un pedacito de gallina, y un pedazo de pan.

EXERCISE

1. Do you see yourself in that small looking-glass? I see myself in it. 2. Why do not you cut your bread? I do not cut it, because I fear to cut my finger. 3. Why does not that man warm himself? Because he is not cold. 4. Do you cut your hair? I do cut my hair. 5. In what do you amuse yourself? I amuse myself in the best way I can. 6. In what do you amuse yourself when you have nothing to do at home? I go to the play and to the concert. 7. Why does not your cousin brush his coat? He does not brush it, because he is afraid of soiling his fingers. 8. Why

have you bought that book? I have bought it, because I want it to learn Spanish, and because every one speaks of it. 9. When are you going away? We are going away to-day. 10. Does your friend feel sleepy? He does not feel sleepy, but he is cold. 11. Are you thirsty? I am not thirsty, but very hungry. 12. Is your servant sleepy. He is sleepy. 13. Is he hungry? He is hungry. 14. Are your children hungry? They are hungry, but they have nothing to eat. 15. Have they anything to drink? They have nothing to drink. 16. Why does the Russian not drink? He does not drink when he is not thirsty. 17. Did not he drink? He drank also.

FORTY-FIFTH LESSON—Lección Cuadragésimaquinta

THE PERFECT OF REFLEXIVE VERBS

Have you cut yourself? I have cut myself. Hast thou cut thyself? I have not cut myself. Has your brother cut himself?

He has cut himself. Have we cut ourselves? You have not cut vourselves. Have these men cut themselves? They have not cut themselves.

To take a walk, to promenade. To go for a walk. To go for a drive.

The coach.

Do you take a walk ? I take a walk. He takes a walk.

To take a child for a walk.

Do you take your children walk- Hace V. pasear á sus nifics ?

I take them walking every morn- Los hago pasear todas las mañaing.

i Se ha cortado V. ? Yo me he cortado. I Te has cortado ? No me he cortado.

i Se ha cortado su hermano de V. 1

Se ha cortado. Nos hemos cortado. Vds. no se han cortado.

Se han cortado estos hombres ? No se han cortado.

Pasearse.

Ir á pasear, salir á pasear. Pasearse en coche.

El coche.

Se pasea V. ?

Me paseo. El se pasea.

Hacer pasear á un nifio, or llevar un niño á pasear.

nas.

To go to bed, to retire. Acostarse, Irse á la sama. To lie down. To get up. To rise. Levantarse. Do you rise early ? ¿ Se levanta V. temprano ? I rise at sunrise. Me levanto al salir el sol. I go to bed at sunset. Me acuesto al ponerse el sol. The sunset. La puesta el sol. Salir el sol. Rayar el alba. The sunrise. At what time did you go to bed ? & A qué hora se acostó V.? At three o'clock in the morning. Á las tres de la mañana. To rejoice. Alegrarse. Regocijarse de. The happiness. La dicha, la felicidad. I rejoice at your happiness. Me alegro de la dicha de V. At what does your uncle rejoice? ¿ De qué se alegra el señor tío de V. 1 Yo me he alegrado. I have rejoiced. They have rejoiced. Ellos se han alegrado. We have made a mistake. Nos hemos equivocado. To injure. Hacer mal, or dano. The evil. The pain. The harm. El mal. El dolor. El daño. Ha hecho V. mal (daño) á ese Have you hurt that man? hombre f Ha lastimado V. á ese hombre 1 He hecho mal (daño) á ese hombre. I have hurt that man. Yo he lastimado á ese hombre. ¿ Le hace mal (daño) á V. eso ? Does that hurt you? Le lastima eso á V. ? That hurts me. Eso me hace mal, (daño). To do good. Hacer bien. Have I ever done you any harm? Jamás le he hecho algún mal a On the contrary. Al contrario. No; on the contrary, you have No; al contrario, V. me ha hecho done me good. bien. 🕯 He hecho algún mal á V. ? Have I hurt you? Le he lastimado á V. ? (V. no me ha hecho mal. You have not hurt me. V. no me ha lastimado. What does the servant do with ¿ Qué hace el criado con la es his broom ? coba f

He sweeps the floor with it.

Barre el suelo con ella.

That.

A knife was given him to cut his bread, and he cut his finger.

To flatter.

To flatter one's self.

He flatters himself that he knows (Se precia de saber el español. Spanish.

Nothing but.

He has nothing but enemies.

He has turned soldier.

Have you turned a merchant?

I have turned (become) a lawyer. What has become of your brother?

What has become of him? I do not know what has become No sé lo que se ha hecho de él. of him.

To enlist. To enroll. He has enlisted.

I can not pay you, for I have no No le puedo pagar á V. porque

for he has none.

To believe. Do you believe that man?

I do not believe him.

Que, (conjunction).

Se le ha dado un cuchillo para rebanar el pan, y él se cortó el dedo.

Le dieron un cuchillo, etc. Alabar or lisonjear.

Alabarse á sí mismo. Lisonjearse, preciarse.

Se alaba de saber el español.

(Sino. No (verb) sino. No (verb) más que.

Él no tiene sino enemigos. Él no tiene más que enemigos.

Él se ha hecho soldado.

Se ha hecho V. comerciante?

Me he hecho abogado.

¿ Qué se ha hecho de su hermano de V. ?

¿ Qué se ha hecho de él ?

Alistarse. Hacerse soldado. Se ha alistado.

no tengo dinero.

He can not give you any bread, Él no puede dar pan á V. porque no tiene.

Creer.

LCree V. á ese hombre ? No le creo.

Creer usually takes á after it when followed by persons, but it takes en in this case:

To believe in God. I believe in God. To utter a falsehood. To lie. I lie, thou liest, he lies. We lie, you lie, they lie. The teller of falsehoods, the liar.

Creer en Dios. Creo en Dios. Decir una falsedad. Mentir.* Miento, mientes, miente. Mentimos, mentis, mienten. El embustero, el mentiroso.

CONVERSACIÓN

1. Has sido alabado algunas veces? He sido alabado á menudo. 2. ¿Se hizo soldado su vecino de V. ? No se hizo soldado. 3. ¿ Qué hizo el sastre con el paño que V. le dió ? Ha hecho vestidos para los niños de V. y los míos. 4. ¿ Es su hermano de V. quien ha hecho mal á mi hijo ? No. señor: no es mi hermano, porque jamás hizo mal á nadie. 5. ¿ Se ha lastimado V.? No me he lastimado. 6. ¿ Se ha cortado V. el cabello? No me lo he cortado yo mismo; me lo he hecho cortar. 7. ¿ Á qué hora se acostó V. ayer? Ayer me acosté á las once y cuarto. 8. ¿ Qué hace su hijo de V. cuando se levanta? Estudia y luego almuerza. 9. ¿ Va V. á menudo á pasear? Me voy á pasear cuando no tengo nada que hacer en casa. 10. ¿ De qué se alegró V. ? Me alegré de ver á mis buenos amigos. 11. ¿ Se lisonjea V. de saber el español? Me lisonjeo de saberlo: porque puedo leerlo, hablarlo y escribirlo. 12. ¿ Por qué escucha V. á ese hombre ? Lo escucho, pero no lo creo; porque sé que es un embustero.

EXERCISE

1. Why has that child been praised? He has been praised because he has studied well. 2. Has this child been rewarded? He has been rewarded because he has worked well? 3. What has become of your cousin? He has enlisted. 4. What has become of his children? His children have become men. 5. What has become of my book? I do not know what has become of it. 6. Have you torn it? I have not torn it. 7. What has the joiner done with his wood? He has made a bench of it. 8. Has that man hurt you? No, Sir, he has not hurt me. 9. What must one do in order to be loved? One must do good to those that have done us harm. 10. Have I hurt you? You have not hurt me, but your boys have. 11. What have they done to you? They have beaten me. 12. Have you drunk that wine? I have drunk it. 13. How did you like it? I liked it very much. 14. Is he still ill? (malo). He is better. I rejoice to hear that he is no longer ill, for I love him. 15. What has this child done? He has cut his foot. 16. Do you go

to bed early? I go to bed late, for I can not sleep when I go to bed early. 17. At what o'clock do your children go to bed? They go to bed at sunset. 18. Do they rise early? They rise at sunrise. 19. Does your son rise late? He rises early, for he never goes to bed late. 20. Didst thou rise this morning as early as I? I rose earlier than you, for I rose before sunrise.

FORTY-SIXTH LESSON-Lección Cuadragésimasexta

IMPERSONAL VERBS

To rain. It rains. Llover.* Llueve. To snow. It snows. Nevar.* Nieva. To hail. It hails. Granizar. Graniza. To lighten. It lightens. Relampaguear. Relampaguea. Does it lighten ? Relampagues ? It lightens. Relampaguea. It rains very hard. Llueve muy recio. The lightning. El relámpago. The parasol. El quitasol. It lightens much. Relampaguea mucho. Does it snow ? Nieva ? LEstá nevando ? It snows much. Nieva mucho. It hails much. Graniza mucho. No hay sol, no hace sol, The sun does not shine. No parece el sol. The sun is in my eyes.

To thunder, it thunders. To shine, to glitter. To shut. The country.

The country (field).

He has made many friends in Él se ha hecho muchos amigos en that country.

He spent three days in the coun- Él pasó tres días en el campo. try.

No luce el sol, no brilla el sol. Me da el sol en los ojos. Tronar, * truena. Lucir, resplandecer. Cerrar.* El país.

El campo. ese país.

Puis is one country as distinguished from another; campo is the country as distinguished from the town or city.

De que.

BOTH GENDERS.

De quien.

Del cual.

De quienes.

De los cuales. Of whom, De la cual, (sing.). De las cuales, (plur.).

I see the man of whom you speak. Veo al hombre de quien V. habla. I have bought the horse of which He comprado el caballo de que (or you spoke to me.

del cual) V. me habló.

Whose.

SINGULAR.
Cuyo, (masc.).
Cuya, (fem.).
Cuyas, (fem.).

returned from Chicago.

Whom have you seen?

warehouse you have taken.

That which.

That of which.

That, or the one of which.

Those, or the ones of which.

I have that of which I have need.) Tengo lo que he menester, or ne-I have what I want. He has what he wants.

Have you the book of which you Tiene V. el libro que necesita? have need?

I have that of which I have need.

To apply. To meet.

you have applied.

1 see the man whose brother has Veo al hombre cuyo hermano ha vuelto de Chicago.

¿Á quién ha visto V.? I have seen the merchant whose He visto al comerciante cuvo almacén ha tomado V.

Lo que, aquello que. Aquello de que.

Aquel de quien, (masc. sing.). Aquella de quien, (fem. sing.). Aquel del cual, (masc. sing.). Aquella de la cual, (fem. sing.). Aquellos de quienes, (masc. plur.). Aquellas de quienes, (fem. plur.). Aquellos de los cuales, (masc.

Aquellas de las cuales, (fem. plur.).

cesito. Tiene lo que ha menester, or ne-

cesita.

Tengo el que he menester, (necesito).

Recurrir, acudir, dirigirse. Encontrar, encontrarse.

I have met with the men to whom Me he encontrado con los hombres á quienes, or á los cuales V. ha acudido.

Of which men do you speak ! I speak of those whose children Hablo de aquéllos cuyos niños have been studious and obedient.

Obedient, disobedient. So that.

not pay you.

I am ill; so I can not go out.

¿ De cuáles hombres habla V. ? han sido estudiosos v obedien-

Obediente, desobediente. Así, de suerte que. I have lost my money; so I can He perdido mi dinero, y así no le puedo pagar á V.

Estov malo, así no puedo salir.

CONVERSACIÓN

1. i Va. V. al baile esta noche? Tengo los pies malos, de suerte que no puedo ir. 2. ¿ Ha comprado V. el caballo de que me habló? No tengo dinero, de manera que no pude comprarlo. 3. ¿ Ha visto su tio de V. los libros de que V. le habló? Él los ha visto. 4. ¿ Ha visto V. al muchachito cuyo padre se ha hecho abogado? Lo he visto. 5. Ha recibido V. el dinero que V. ha necesitado? Lo he recibido. 6. Han hablado Vds. á los comerciantes cuyo almacén hemos tomado? Les hemos hablado. 7. ¿ Tienen sus niños de V. lo que necesitan? Tienen lo que necesitan. 8. ¿ De qué niños ha hablado V.? He hablado de aquéllos cuvos padres son instruídos. 9. ¿ De qué pescado ha comido él? Ha comido del que no le gusta á V. 10. ¿ No tiene V. necesidad de los libros que estoy leyendo? No tengo necesidad de ellos. 11. ¿ Á qué niños se deben dar libros ? Es menester darios á los que son buenos y obedientes. 12. ¿ Nevó ayer? Nevó, granizó y relampagueó.

EXERCISE

1. Have you at last learned Spanish? I was ill, so that I could not learn it. 2. Did you understand that German? I do not know German, so that I could not understand 3. Have you seen the fine gun of which I spoke to you? I have seen it. 4. To whom have you been speaking in the theater? I have been speaking to the man whose brother has killed my fine dog. 5. Whom do you see now? I see the man whose servant has broken my looking-glass. 6. Hast thou brushed the coat of which I spoke to thee? I have not yet brushed it. 7. Has your brother the books which he is wanting? He has them. 8. Have you spoken to the physician whose son has studied German? I have spoken to him. 9. Have you read the books which we have lent you? We have read them. 10. Of which man do you speak? I speak of the one whose brother has turned soldier. 11. Which paper has your cousin? He has that of which he has need. 12. Which books do you want? I want those of which you have spoken to me. 13. To whom have you given some money? I have given some to those who have been skillful. 14. Do you give anything to the children who are idle? I give them nothing. 15. Did it rain? It rained. 16. Did you go out? I never go out when it is bad weather. 17. Whom have you met this morning? I have met the man by whom I am esteemed.

FORTY-SEVENTH LESSON—Lección Cuadragésimaséptima

THE FUTURE

The future indicative of regular verbs is formed by adding the following endings to the infinitive:

1. é.	1. emos
2. ás.	2. éis.
3. á.	3. án.

To speak—I shall or will speak. Hablar—yo hablaré.
To sell—I shall or will sell. Vender—yo venderé.
To receive—I shall or will receive. Recibir—yo recibiré, ceive.

Thou shalt or wilt speak.

He shall or will speak.

You shall or will speak.

Tú hablarás.
Él hablará.

V. hablará.

SINGULAR.

We shall or will speak. Nosotros hablaremos.
You (second person) shall or will Vosotros hablaréis.
speak.

They shall or will speak. Ellos (ellas) hablarán. You shall or will speak. Vds. hablarán.

PLURAL.

To love—I shall or will love.	Amar—amaré,	}
To foresee—I shall or will fore-	Prever—preveré,	
500.		
To restore—I shall or will restore.	Restituir—restituiré,	
To have—I shall or will have.	Tener—tendr <i>é</i> ,	éis, án.
To have—I shall or will have.	Haber—habré,	
To be—I shall or will be.	Ser—seré,	1
To be—I shall or will be.	Estar—estaré,)
To go—I shall or will go.	Ir—iré.)
To come—I shall or will come.	Venir-vendré,	
To know—I shall or will know.	Saber—sabré,	
To be worth—I shall or will be	Valer-valdré,	
worth.	•	
To be able-I shall or will be	Poder-podré,	
able.	• •	ás, á, emos,
To do-I shall or will do.	Hacer-haré,	éis, án.
To be willing-I shall or will be	Querer-querré,	,
willing.	• • •	
To go out-I shall or will go out.	Salir-saldré,	
To owe-I shall or will owe.	Deber-deberé,	
To give—I shall or will give.	Dar-daré,	
To see-I shall or will see.	Ver-veré,	
To be necessary—it will or shall	(Ser menester—será m	enester.
	Ser necesario—será n	
To rain—it will rain.	Llover—lloverá.	
To send—I shall or will send.	Enviar-enviaré.	
To sit down-I shall or will sit	Sentarse-me sentaré	i.
down.		
Shall or will he have money?	₄ Tendrá él dinero †	
He will have some.	Tendrá alguno.	
Will you soon have finished writ-	•	oir pronto 1
ing 🕈		•
I shall have finished soon.	Pronto acabaré.	
He will have finished his exercise	Pronto acabará él su	eiercicio.
800n.		•
When will you write your exer-	¿Cuándo escribirá V	7. sus ejer-
cises 1	cicios †	•
I shall write them soon.	Yo los escribiré pron	to.
My brother will write his exer-	-	
cise to-morrow.	mañana.	
Month.	Mes.	

Next Monday.

Last Monday.

Next month.

When will your cousin go to the A Cuándo irá al concierto su primo concert ?

He will go next Tuesday.

Will you go anywhere ?

We shall go nowhere. Will he send me the book ?

finished with it.

Will you be at home this after- Lestará V. en casa esta tarde? noon f

I shall be (there).

Will your father be at home?

He will be (there).

Will your cousins be there?

They will be (there). Will he send me the books?

He will send them to you.

Will he send some paper to my office t

He will send some.

Will you be able to pay your ¿ Podrá V. pagar á su zapatero ? shoemaker †

I have lost my money, so that I shall not be able to pay him.

My friend has lost his pocketbook, so that he will not be able to pay for his shoes.

Will you hold anything ? I shall hold your umbrella.

Will it be necessary to go to the | Será necesario ir al mercado !

market f It will be necessary to go to- Será necesario ir mañana por la

morrow morning. mañana.

Although venir means to come, and ir to go, it must be noted that ir describes motion from another point to the place where the speaker is viewed from the other standpoint, as may be seen from these examples:

El lunes que viene, (or próximo or que entra).

El lunes pasado.

El mes que viene, (or que entra).

Irá el martes que viene.

¡ Irán Vds. á alguna parte? No iremos á ninguna parte.

Me enviará el libro ?

He will send it to you if he has Se lo enviará á V. si lo ha acabado.

Si, señor ; or yo estaré.

¿Estará en casa el padre de V.¶

Si, señor; or si, estará.

LEstarán allí sus primos de V. ? Ellos estarán.

Me enviará él los libros 🕈

Se los enviará á V.

¿Enviará él algún papel á mi oficio 1

Enviará alguno.

He perdido mi dinero, así no

podré pagarle. Mi amigo ha perdido su cartera,

y por consiguiente no podrá pagar sus zapatos.

1 Tendrá V. alguna cosa ? Tendré su paraguas de V.

Come here, John.

Ven acá, Juan.

I am coming at once. Ya voy,

and venir represents the motion viewed from the standpoint of the one who is approached.

To lean.
To employ.
To try.
To run.
To expire.

Apoyarse. Emplear. Probar.* Correr. Expirar.

CONVERSACIÓN

1. ¿ Cuándo tendrá dinero su primo de V.? Tendrá uz poco el mes que entra. 2. ¿ Quién tendrá buenos amigos ? Los ingleses los tendrán. 3. ¿ Estará su padre de V. en casa esta noche? Estará en casa. 4. ¿Saldrá V.? Saldré, si no llueve. 5. ¿ Amará V. á mis hijos ? Si son buenos v trabajadores, los amaré; pero si son perezosos y malos los despreciaré y los castigaré. 6. ¿ Ha hecho el sastre mi casaca ? No la ha hecho todavía, pero la hará en poco tiempo. 7. ¿ Vendrás á mi casa? Vendré. 8. ¿ Irán sus primos de V. al baile el jueves que viene? Irán. 9. ¿ Enviarán sus hermanos de V. los libros que les he prestado? Se los enviarán á V. 10. ¿ Cuándo me los enviarán? Se los enviarán á V. el mes que viene. 11. ¿ Podrá el americano pagar sus zapatos? Ha perdido su cartera, de suerte que no podrá pagarlos. 12. ¿Será necesario ir mañana á la plaza? Será menester ir allá; porque necesitamos carne, pan y vino.

EXERCISE

1. Will you have any books? I shall have some. 2. How much money will you have? I shall have thirty-five dollars. 3. Will you be there? I shall also be there. 4. Will your uncle go out to-day? He will go out, if it is fine weather. 5. Will you pay your shoemaker? I shall pay him, if I receive my money. 6. Am I right in speaking thus? You are not wrong. 7. Have our friends finished reading? They will soon have finished. 8. When will you write your exercises? I shall write them when I shall have

time. 9. When will your brother write his? He will write them next Saturday. 10. When have you seen my uncle? I saw him last Sunday. 11. When will you send me the money which you owe me? I shall send it you soon. 12. Will you be able to pay me what you owe me? I shall not be able to pay it to you, for I have lost all my money. 13. Will it be necessary to send for the physician? Nobody is ill; so it will not be necessary to send for him. 14. Will you see your father to-day? I shall see him. 15. Will your friend go? He will go, if you go.

FORTY-EIGHTH LESSON—Lección Cuadragésmaoctava.

Pertenecer á. To belong to. Does that horse belong to your Pertenece ese caballo á su padre father 1 LEs ese caballo de su padre de V. ? Sí; le pertenece á él. It does belong to him. (Acomodar, ajustar. To suit. Convenir,* (like venir). Does that cloth suit your brother? & Conviene este paño al hermano de V. It suits him. Le conviene. Does it suit you to do that? Le conviene & V. hacer eso ? It suits me to do it. Me conviene hacerlo. To succeed, to get. Conseguir, lograr. Do you succeed in learning Span- & Consigue V. aprender el español? ish f I succeed in it. Lo consigo. Yo consigo aprenderlo. I succeed in learning it. (Tener buen éxito. Salir bien. To succeed. Lograr. La Tiene V. buen éxito en hacer eso? Do you succeed in doing that?), Le sale á V. bien hacer eso ? (Tengo buen éxito en hacerlo. I succeed in it. Me sale bien hacerlo. To forget. Olvidar. To clean. Limpiar.

El tintero.

Digitized by Google

The inkstand.

Immediately, directly. Inmediatamente, luego. This instant, instantly. Al instante, de repente. Presently. Presentemente, ahora, luego, I shall do it immediately. Yo lo haré inmediatamente. Is there ! Hay ! Are there? There is not. No hay. There are not. Will there be ! , Habrá 🕈 There will be. Habrá. Was or were there—has there Había, hubo? Ha habido? been f There was or were—there has Había, hubo, ha habido. There are men who will not study. Hay hombres que no quieren estudiar. Are there to be many people at . Ha de haber mucha gente en el baile f the ball? There are to be a great many Ha de haber mucha gente. people there. On credit. Al fiado. To sell on credit. Vender al flado. El crédito. The credit. Ready money. Dinero contante. To buy for cash. Comprar contante, or al con-To sell for cash. Vender al contante, or al contado. Pagar dinero contante. To pay down. ¿Quiere V. comprar al contado ? Will you buy for cash ? Does it suit you to sell me on Le conviene á V. venderme al flado, or á crédito ! credit ? Caer. To fall, to fit. To sit, to sit well upon, hence to Sentar. fit. (4 Me cae bien este vestido ? Do these clothes fit me? li Me sienta bien este vestido ? (Le cae bien á V. They fit you. Le sienta á V. bien. That hat does not fit your brother. Ese sombrero no le sienta bien & su hermano de V.

To keep.

You will or would do better to. I shall or should do better to. He will or would do better to. Instead of keeping your horse, vou would do better to sell it. Instead of selling his hat, he En vez de vender su sombrero would do better to keep it.

Will you keep the horse ?

I shall keep it. You must not keep my money.

How are you?

I am very well.

Guardar.

V. hará mejor, or haría mejor. Yo haré mejor, or haría mejor. Él hará mejor, or haría mejor. En vez de guardar su caballo, V. hará mejor en venderlo.

hará mejor en quedarse con él. (4 Guardará V. el caballo ? L Se quedará V. con el caballo ? Lo guardaré. Me quedaré con él. V. no debe guardar mi dinero.

(4 Como le va á V. 1) Como lo pasa V. ? Me va bien.

There are several ways of saying, How are you? as, & Cômo está V. ? 4 Cómo le va á V. ? 4 Cómo lo pasa V. ?

It is I who. It is you who. It is they who. Is that your son? Is that your child? Yo soy quien. V. es quien. Vds. son quienes. Ellos son quienes. LEs ese el hijo de V.! LEs de V. ese niño ?

CONVERSACIÓN

1. ¿ Le pertenece à V. este dinero? Me pertenece. 2. ¿ Le ha dicho V. á su hermano que lo estoy esperando aquí? He olvidado decírselo. 3. Ha traído su tío de V. las carteras que me ha prometido? Ha olvidado traérselas. 4. ¿ Le conviene á V. ir á la plaza? No me conviene ir allí. 5. ¿ Qué quiere V., caballero? Estoy preguntando por su señor padre de V. 6. ¿ Dónde compró V. estos hermosos cuchillos ? Los compré en casa del comerciante cuyo almacén vió V. ayer. 7. Ha logrado V. escribir un ejercicio? Lo he logrado. 8. ¿ Consiguen aprender el inglés sus niños de V. ? Lo consiguen. 9. ¿ Hay alguna persona en el almacén? No hay ninguna. 10. ¿ Has limpiado mi baúl? He procurado hacerlo, pero no lo he conseguido. 11. ¿ Cuánto tiempo intenta V. guardarlos? Intento guardarlos hasta el sábado que viene. 12. 4 Ha encendido V. el fuego? Todavía no; pero lo haré dentro de poco. 13. ¿ Hace pedazos su libro el niño de V. ? Lo despedaza; pero hace mal en hacerlo así.

EXERCISE

1. To whom does that horse belong? It belongs to the English captain whose son has written a note to you. 2. Whose horses are those? They are ours. 3. Is it your baker, or that of our friend, who has sold you bread on credit? It is ours. 4. Have you brought me the book which you promised me? I have forgotten it. 5. Have you already written to your friend? I have not yet had time to write to him. 6. I have some other; but it is dearer than this. 7. Will you show it me? I will show it you. 8. Whose shoes are these? They belong to the nobleman whom you have seen this morning in my warehouse. 9. Did you go on foot to Germany? It does not suit me to go on foot, so that I went thither in a coach. (Lesson XLIV.) 10. What do you say? I tell you that he has gone out. (Lesson XXXVI.) 11. Does this merchant sell on credit? He does not sell on credit. 12. Do you often buy for cash ? Not as often as you. 13. Has that man tried to speak to your father? He has tried to speak to him, but he has not succeeded. 14. Have you tried to clean my inkstand? I have tried, but I have not succeeded. 15. Are there any men in your warehouse? There are some there. 16. Will there be many people at your ball? There will be many there. 17. Do you intend to buy an umbrella? I intend to buy one, if the merchant will sell it me on credit. (Lesson XXXIX). 18. Have you returned the books to my brother? I have not yet returned them to him. 19. Have you cleaned my knife? I have not had time yet, but I shall do it this instant. 20. Why have you not worked? I have not vet been able.

FORTY-NINTH LESSON-Lección Cuadragésimanovena

To go away.
When will you go away?
I will go soon.

Irse,* marcharse. ¿Cuándo se irá, or se marchará V. ? Pronto me iré, or me marcharé. By and by, shortly.

He will go away soon, by and by. We shall go away to-morrow.

They will go to-morrow. Thou wilt go immediately.

> When. To become. To happen.

What will happen to you if you lose your money?

I do not know what will happen (Yo no sé lo que se hará de mí. to me.

What will become of him ? What will become of us?

of them.

The turn.

My turn.

In my turn.

In his turn.

In my brother's turn.

Each in his turn.

To take a turn, a walk.

He has gone to take a walk.

To walk round the garden.

Back of. Behind. To run.

A blow, a knock.

(Luego.

Dentro de poco.

Él se irá, or se marchará luego.

Nos iremos, or nos marcharemos mañana.

Se irán, or se marcharán mañana.

Te irás, or te marcharás inmediatamente.

Cuando. (Llegar á ser.

Suceder, hacerse de.

¿Qué se hará de V. si pierde su

dinero ?

¿ Qué le sucederá á V. si pierde su dinero f

Yo no sé lo que será de mí.

. Qué será de él ?

LQué será de nosotros ?

I do not know what will become (Yo no sé lo que se hará de ellos. Yo no sé lo que será de ellos.

El turno. Mi turno.

A mi turno.

Cuándo á mí me toque, (from tocar).

(Á su turno.

Cuando á él le toque.

Al turno de mi hermano.

Cuando le toque á mi hermano.

(Cada uno á su turno.

Cuando á cada uno le toque.

(Dar una vuelta, or un paseo.

Ir á pasear.

Ha ido á dar una vuelta, or un paseo.

Dar una vuelta en el jardín. Dar un paseo en el jardín.

Detrás de. Atrás.

Correr.

Un golpe. Un porrazo.

A stab. A clapping of the hands, a slap. Have you given that man a blow?

Yes: I have given him one. A blow with a stick. A kick, (with the foot). A blow with the fist. A stab of a knife. A gun-shot. A pistol-shot.

A glance of the eye. A clap of thunder.

To give a cut with a knife.

To cane a man.

To give a man a kick.

To give a man a blow with the fist. To pull, to draw out. To shoot, to fire. To fire a gun. To fire a pistol.

I have fired at that bird.

I have fired twice. I have fired three times. I have fired several times. How many times have you fired?

How many times have you fired at that bird ? I have fired at it several times.

I have heard a shot. I have heard the report of a He oido un pistoletazo.

We have heard a clap of thunder. Hemos oido un trueno. The fist.

To glance at some one, or some-

I have glanced at that book.

Has that man gone away? He has gone away.

Una puñalada, una herida. Una palmada. Una bofetada. ¿ Ha dado V. un golpe á ese hombre f

Si; yo le he dado uno.

Un garrotazo. Un puntapié.

Un puñetazo, una puñada.

Una cuchillada. Un tiro, un cañonazo.

Un pistoletazo.

Una ojeada, una mirada.

Un trueno.

Dar una cuchillada. Apalear á un hombre.

Dar un puntapié á un hombre.

Dar un puñetazo á un hombre. Tirar, sacar.

Disparar, hacer fuego. Disparar un fusil. Disparar una pistola.

He disparado un tiro á ese pájaro. He tirado un tiro á ese pájaro.

He tirado dos tiros. He tirado tres tiros. He tirado varios tiros.

¿Cuántas veces ha tirado V.? ¿Cuántas veces ha tirado V. á ese

pájaro 🕈

Le he tirado varios tiros. He oído un tiro.

El puño.

Echar una ojeada, or mirada & alguno, or alguna cosa.

He echado una ojeada, or una mirada á ese libro.

Se ha marchado ese hombre? Se ha marchado.

Have your brothers gone away? They have gone away. They have not gone away. Have they gone away?

A Se han ido sus hermanos de V.? Se han ido, or marchado. No se han ido, or marchado. ¿Se han marchado ellos ? They were not willing to go away. No querían marcharse.

CONVERSACIÓN

1. ¿ Cuándo se irá ese hombre? Se irá ahora. 2. ¿ Por qué se ha ido tan pronto su padre de V.? Ha prometido á su amigo estar en su casa á las nueve menos cuarto; así se fué temprano para cumplir con lo que ha prometido. 3. ¿ Cuándo se irán los niños de V.? Se irán así que acaben (subjunctive) sus ejercicios. 4. ¿ Qué será de nosotros si se marchan nuestros amigos? No sé lo que será de nosotros si ellos se marchan. 5. ¿ Debo ir al teatro? No debe V. ir, porque hace muy mal tiempo. 6. ¿ Por qué da su criado de V. una cuchillada á ese hombre? Le da una cuchillada porque el hombre le ha dado un puñetazo. 7. ¿ No escucha él lo que V. le dice? Si no escucha le doy azotes. 8. ¿ Cuántas veces le tiró V. á ese pájaro? Le he tirado dos veces. ¿ Tiene V. gana de disparar un tiro á ese pájaro! Tengo deseo de tirarle un tiro. 10. ¿ Cuándo hizo fuego el capitán? Hizo fuego cuando sus soldados lo hicieron. 11. ¿ Ha echado V. una mirada á ese hombre? Le eché una mirada. 12. ¿ Ha dado V. un paseo esta mañana? He dado una vuelta en el jardín.

EXERCISE

1. Are you going away already? I am not going yet. 2. When will your friends go away? They will go away next month. 3. When shall we go away? We shall go away to-morrow. 4. When will your children go away? They will go as soon as they have finished (hayan acabado) their exercises. 5. What will become of your son if he does not study? If he does not study he will learn nothing. 6. What has become of your son? I do not know what has become of him. 7. What has become of your relations? They have gone away. 8. Why do not you go to my

brother? It does not suit me to go to him, for I can not vet pay him what I owe him. 9. Which of these two pupils begins to speak? The one who is studious begins to speak. 10. Why do not these children work? Their master has given them blows with his fist, so that they will not work. 11. Have you fired a gun at that man? I have fired a pistol at him. 12. Why have you fired a pistol at him? Because he has given me a stab with his knife. 13. Did you kill that bird at the first shot? I killed it at the fourth. 14. How many times have our enemies fired at us? They have fired at us several times. 15. Why do not you fire at those birds? I can not: for I have a sore finger. 16. How many birds have you shot at? I have shot at all that I have seen, but I have killed none, because my gun is good for nothing. 17. Have vou drunk some of that wine? I have drunk a little, and it has done me good. 18. Is it my brother's turn? When his turn comes (le toque) I shall tell him, for each has his turn. 19. Where has your uncle gone to? He has gone to take a walk. 20. Who follows us? Our dog runs behind us.

FIFTIETH LESSON—Lección Quincuagésima

To hear of.	Oir hablar de, tener noticias de, saber de.
Have you beard of your brother?	Ha oído V. hablar de su her- mano?
have you neard of your brother to	Ha sabido V. de su hermano † Ha tenido V. noticias del hermano †
	He oído hablar de él.
I heard of him.	He sabido de él. He tenido noticias de él.
	He tenido noticias de él.
Since.	`Desde.
	Hace mucho que V. ha almor-
Is it long since you have break-	zado f
fasted ?	Hace mucho que V. ha almorzado? Hace mucho tiempo desde que V. almorzó?
How long is it since you break-	¿Cuánto hace que V. ha almor-
fasted f	zado 🕈

It is not long since I have breakfasted.

It is a great while since. It is a short while since.

How long is it since you heard of LCuanto hace que V. ha tenido your brother?

It is a year since I heard of him.

It is only a year since.

It is more than a year since.

More than.

More than nine.

More than twenty times. It is hardly six months since.

A few hours ago. Half an hour ago.

A fortnight.

Have you been long in Spain ?

He has been in Madrid three Hace tres años que él está en

I have been living here these two Hace dos años que vivo aquí. years.

toward here, hence hither, as allá is thither. Come here. Go there.

The word tiempo is often unexpressed.

How long have you had that hat? ¿Cuánto hace que tiene V. ese sombrero ?

Aquí, here, corresponds to alli, there, in that both imply resting in a place; acá, here, corresponds to allá, there, since it is motion

I have had it five years. How long has he been here?

It makes three days

Since the third of this month.

No hace mucho que yo he almor-

No hace mucho tiempo que yo he

Mucho tiempo hace, or ha. Poco tiempo hace, or ha.

noticias de su hermano?

Hace un año que no he sabido de él.

No hace más que un año. Hace más de un año. Más de, (with numbers). Más de nueve.

Más de veinte veces. Hace apenas seis meses. Hace pocas horas. Hace media hora.

Quince días (dos semanas).

Ha estado V. mucho tiempo en España ?

Hace mucho tiempo que V. está en España?

Madrid.

Venga V. para acá. Vava V. allá.

Hace cinco años que lo tengo. Luanto hace que él está aquí ? L Desde cuándo está aquí ! Hace tres días.

Desde el tres de este mes.

It is a month. Since the first of the month. I have seen him more than twenty Lo he visto más de veinte veces. times.

Just, (relating to time).

To have just.

Hace un mes.

Desde el primero de este mes.

En este momento, ahora mismo al momento, al punto, al instante, poco ha, poco hace.

To express what has just taken place the verb acabar de (to finish) is used.

I have just seen your brother. He has just done writing. The men have just arrived.

He has but just come.

To do the best.

I shall do my best. He will do his best. I do my best.

To spend (money).

How much have you spent to-day? He has an income of fifty dollars a month.

Have the horses been found? They have been found. The men have been seen.

Our children have been praised Nuestros niños han sido alabados and rewarded, because they have been good and studious.

warded !

To pass.

Before.

By whom have we been blamed?

Acabo de ver á su hermano de V. Acaba de escribir.

Los hombres acaban de llegar. (Ahora mismo llega él.

Èl acaba de llegar ahora.

Hacer uno lo mejor que puede.

Hacer todo su poder.

Empeñarse en. Yo haré lo mejor que pueda.¹ El hará lo mejor que pueda.¹ (Yo hago lo mejor que puedo. Me empeño.

Gastar (dinero).

¿Cuánto ha gastado V. hoy? Tiene cincuenta pesos de renta al mes.

i Se han hallado los caballos? Se han hallado.

Los hombres han sido vistos.

y recompensados, porque han sido buenos y estudiosos.

By whom have they been re- & Por quien han sido recompensados 🕈

> Por quién hemos sido vituperados f

> > Pasar.

Antes, ante, delante, por.

Antes refers to time; delante, por, and ante refer to place, in the presence of. Delante is commonest in this sense. Antes usually

¹ These are present subjunctives.

takes que after it when used with verbs, except the infinitive, and de with substantives and the infinitive.

Before ten o'clock.

Antes de las diez.

To pass before some one.

Pasar delante de alguno, or de

To pass before a place. A place.

Pasar delante de, or por un lugar. Un lugar.

I have passed before the theater.

He pasado delante de, or por el teatro.

He has passed before me.

Ha pasado delante de mí.

Por has the idea of by. If it means before or in front of, it is when the thought of motion is present; as, Ir por or por delante de las casas, to go by, in front of, or before the houses.

To spend time in something.

Pasar (emplear or gastar) el tiempo en alguna cosa.

In what do you spend your time ! En qué pasa V. su tiempo ! I spend my time in studying. In what has he spent his time? What shall we spend our time in ?

Empleo mi tiempo en estudiar. LEn qué ha empleado su tiempo !

En qué pasaremos nuestro tiem-

To lose, to miss, to fail. The merchant has failed to bring El comerciante ha faltado á traer

Perder, omitir, faltar, descuidar.

the money. You have missed your turn.

V. ha perdido su turno.

You have failed to come to me V. ha faltado á (V. se ha descuithis morning.

dado de) venir á mi casa esta mañana.

To be good for something.

Ser bueno para algo, (para alguna cosa).

Servir de algo.

el dinero.

No ser bueno para nada, (para

ninguna cosa).

To be good for nothing.

No servir de nada, (or para nada).

Of what use is that? It is good for nothing.

¿ Para qué (de qué) sirve eso ? (Eso no es bueno para nada.

Eso de nada sirve.

A rascal.

Un bribón.

Is the gun which you have bought & Es bueno el fusil que V. ha coma good one?

prado ?

It is worth nothing, (good for (No es bueno para nada. nothing).

No sirve de, or para nada.

12

To throw away. Tirar, arrojar, desechar. Have you thrown away anything? Ha tirado V. algo, (alguna cosa)? I have not thrown away anything. Nada he tirado.

The store, the shop. La tienda.

Storekeeper, shopkeeper. Tendero, mercader.

CONVERSACIÓN

1. I No ha oído V. hablar del hombre que ha muerto á un soldado? No he oído hablar de él. 2. ¿ Hace mucho tiempo que se ha sabido de él? No hace mucho tiempo que se ha sabido de él. 3. 4 Ha estado mucho tiempo en Londres su hermano de V. ? Hace diez años que está allí. 4. ¿ Cuánto hace que V. aprende el español? Hace sólo dos meses que lo aprendo. 5. ¿ Cuánto hace que comió ese niño ? Hace algunos minutos que comió. 6. ¿ Cuántas veces ha visto V. al rev ? Lo he visto más de diez veces cuando estuve en Madrid. 7. 1 Se han hallado los caballos? Los han hallado. 8. ¿Aguarda V. á alguien? Aguardo á mi primo, el capitán. 9. ¿ Esperas tú alguna cosa ? Espero mis libros. 10. ¿ Pasa este hombre su tiempo en trabajar? Es un bribón; pasa su tiempo en jugar y beber. 11. ¿ Me puede V. pagar lo que me debe? No puedo pagárselo, porque el comerciante ha dejado de traerme el dinero. 12. ¿ Le ha traído á V. el mercader los guantes que V. compró en su tienda? Ha dejado de traérmelos.

EXERCISE

1. Have you heard of any one? I have not heard of any one, for I have not gone out this morning. 2. Of whom has your cousin heard? He has heard of his friend who has gone to America. 3. Have you been long in Paris? These three years. 4. How long is it since you supped? It is half an hour. 5. Is it long since you heard of the soldier who gave your friend a cut with the knife? It is more than a year since I heard of him. 6. Is it long since you saw the young man who learned German with the teacher with whom we learned it? I have not seen him for nearly a year. 7. How long has your friend been in Spain? He has been there one month. 8. When did you meet my

brother? I met him a fortnight ago. 9. Where are my gloves? They have thrown them away. 10. Have the horses been found? They have been found. 11. Have you been seen by anybody? I have been seen by nobody. 12. What does this young man wait for? He waits for money. 13. Art thou waiting for anything? I am waiting for my book. 14. Has not he passed before the castle? He has passed by there, but I have not seen him. 15. In what does your brother spend his time? He spends his time in reading and playing. 16. In what do your children spend their time? They spend their time in learning. 17. Why have you breakfasted without me? You failed to come at nine o'clock, so that we have breakfasted without you. 18. Do you know those men? I do not know them; but I believe that they are rascals, for they spend their time in playing. 19. Who is the man who has just spoken to you? He is a merchant. 20. What has the shoemaker just brought? He has brought the shoes which he has made for us.

FIFTY-FIRST LESSON-Lección Quincuagésimaprimera

To be distant. Distar. War. Lejos, distante, remoto. L'Cuánto dista? How far ! (meaning what dis-Qué distancia hav ? ¿Cuán lejos ? ¿Cuánto hay ? tance). Hay mucho ? How far is it from here to Paris? ¿Cuánto hay de aquí á París? Is it far from here to Paris? ¿ Está París lejos de aquí ? It is far. Está lejos. It is not far. No está lejos. & Cuántas millas dista? How many miles is it? L Cuántas millas hav! Veinte millas. It is twenty miles. A mile. Una milla. It is almost two hundred miles De aquí á París hay casi doscienfrom here to Paris. tas millas. It is nearly a hundred miles from Hay cerca de cien millas de Berlín Berlin to Vienna. á Viena.

From.

From Venice. From London.

I am from Paris.

What countryman are you?

The Castilian. He is a Castilian. The king. The philosopher. The preceptor, the tutor. The professor.

The landlord, the innkeeper.

Are you a Biscayan ? Whence do you come? I come from Bilbao.

To flee.

he runs away, you run away. run away, you run away. Why do you fly? I fly because I am afraid. To assure.

I assure you that he has arrived.

To hear, (to have knowledge of). Have you heard nothing new? I have heard nothing new. Happiness, fortune.

Unhappiness, misfortune.

A great misfortune has happened. Ha sucedido una gran desgracia. He has met with a great misfor- Le ha sucedido un grande infortune.

What has happened to you! Nothing has happened to me.

De. De Venecia. De Londres.

Yo soy de París. Soy hijo de París.

De qué pais es V.! De qué tierra ?

El castellano.

Él es castellano.

El rey. El filósofo.

El preceptor, el ayo, el maestro.

El profesor, el catedrático.

Posadero, mesonero, hostelero, huésped, casero, patrón.

LEs V. vizcaino ?

LDe dónde viene V. ?

Vengo de Bilbao.

(Huir, * huirse, * (see verbs in uir: Elements), escaparse, fugarse.

I run away, thou runnest away, Yo huyo, tú huyes, él huye, V. huve.

We run away, you run away, they Nosotros huimos, vosotros huis, ellos huyen, Vds. huyen.

Por qué huye V. ?

Yo huyo porque tengo miedo. Asegurar.

Yo le aseguro á V. que él ha llegado.

Oir, * saber. * (See Elements.) Mo sabe V. nada de nuevo ? Yo no he sabido nada de nuevo.

Felicidad, dicha, fortuna, gracia. (Infelicidad, desdicha, desgracia,

infortunio.

tunio.

🙀 Qué le ha sucedido á V. 🕈

L Qué os ha acontecido á vosotros ? No me ha sucedido nada.

I have met your brother.

The poor man.

I have cut his finger.

You have twisted the man's neck.

To pity.

Do you pity that man?

I pity him with all my heart.

With all my heart.
To complain.
Do you complain?
I do not complain.
Do you complain of my friend?
Indeed I do complain of him.
I do not complain of him.

To dare.

To spoil, to damage.

To serve, to wait upon.

Dost thou wait upon ? (serve).

I serve.

He waits upon, or he serves.

Has he been in your service? Has he served you?

How long has he been in your service?

The service.
To offer.
Do you offer?
I offer.
Thou offerest.
He offers.

To confide, to trust, to intrust.

Me he encontrado con el hermano de V.

El pobre hombre.

Yo le he cortado un dedo.

V. le ha torcido el cuello al hom-

Compadecer, compadecerse de.

Tener lástima. Se compadece V. de ese hom-

bre?
Le compadezco con todo mi co-

razón.

Con todo mi corazón.

Quejarse de.

, Se queja V. 🕈

No me quejo.

Se queja V. de mi amigo? De veras me quejo de él.

No me quejo de él.

Osar, atreverse, arriesgarse. Echar á perder, inutilizar.

Servir.*

Sirves tú ?

Yo sirvo, estoy sirviendo.

Él sirve, él está sirviendo.

Ha estado él en el servicio de V.? Ha servido á V.?

Ha estado sirviendo á V.?

¿Cuánto tiempo ha servido él á

¿Cuánto tiempo ha estado sirviendo á V.?

El servicio.

Ofrecer.* (Elements.)

¿Ofrece V. ? ¿Ofrecéis vosotros ?

Yo ofrezco.

Tú ofreces.

Él ofrece.

Conflar á, (de, en).

Fiarse de, (en).

Contar con.

Do you trust me with your money? Me confia V. su dinero?

I trust you with it.

secret.

The secret.

To keep anything secret.

I have kept it secret.

To take care of something.

Do you take care of your clothes? Yes, I take care of them.

Will you take care of my horse?

Yes, I shall take care of it. To leave.

To squander, to dissipate.

He has squandered all his wealth. To hinder, to prevent. To keep from.

You hinder me from sleeping.

What have you bought to-day?

I have bought two handker- He comprado dos pañuelos. chiefs.

Have you bought anything today ?

Most lovely, charming.

Admirably.

That hat fits you admirably.

That coat fits him very well.

Yo se lo confío á V.

I have intrusted that man with a Yo he confiado un secreto á ese hombre.

El secreto.

Guardar secreto. Tener secreta alguna cosa.

Lo he guardado secreto.

Lo he tenido secreto.

Cuidar de alguna cosa. Tener cuidado de.

L'Cuida V. de su vestido?

Sí; cuido de él.

l Quiere V. cuidar mi caballo ? Quiere V. cuidar de mi ca-

ballo ?

Sí ; cuidaré de él.

Dejar.

Malgastar, disipar, desperdiciar, derrochar.

Él ha disipado todo su caudal.

(Impedir.*

Estorbar, no dejar.

(V. no me deja dormir.

Me impide dormir.

(¿Qué ha comprado V. hoy? 🕽 Qué compras ha hecho V. hoy 🕈

Ha comprado V. hoy alguna

Ha hecho V. hoy algunas compras ?

Preciosisimo, amabilisimo.

Encantador. Admirablemente.

Ese sombrero le sienta á V. muy bien.

Esa casaca le sienta perfectamente. Esa casaca le va como pintada.

It is charming.

Es hechicero, encantador, delicioso.

To arrive, to reach (a place).

Llegar.

CONVERSACIÓN

1. ¿ Tendremos baile esta noche? Si; lo tendremos. 2. ¿ En qué se divierte el primo de V. ? Se divierte en tocar el violín. 3. ¿ Me ofrece V. alguna cosa? Le ofrezco á V. un hermoso fusil. 4. ¿ Ofreces tu hermoso perrito á estos niños ? Se lo ofrezco á ellos, porque los amo con todo mi corazón. 5. ¿ Ha dejado V. caer alguna cosa? No he dejado caer nada: pero mi primo ha dejado caer algún dinero. 6. ¿ Te acercas al fuego? Me acerco porque tengo frío. 7. ¿ Quién tiene frío? El muchachito cuyo padre le ha prestado á V. un caballo tiene frio. 8. ¿ Se acuerdan de sus amigos antiguos sus padres de V.? Si; se acuerdan de ellos. 9. ¿Gusta de jugar su hermano de V.? Le gusta más estudiar que jugar. 10. ¿ Le gusta á V. más la miel que el azúcar? No me gusta ni la una ni el otro. 11. ¿ Pueden entender á V. sus discípulos? Me entienden cuando hablo despacio; porque para ser entendido es necesario que hable despacio. 12. 1 Habla alto el maestro de V. ? Habla alto v despacio.

EXERCISE

1. How far is it from Paris to London? It is nearly two hundred miles from Paris to London. 2. Is it farther from Paris to Blois than from Orleans to Paris? It is farther from Orleans to Paris than from Paris to Blois. 3. Do you intend to go to Paris soon? I intend to go there soon. 4. Is it long since you were there? It is nearly a year since I was there. 5. Of what country are you? I am a Spaniard and my friend is an Italian. 6. Where did you dine yesterday? I dined at the innkeeper's. 7. Have you seen him? I have seen him. 8. Why does that man run away? He runs away because he is afraid. 9. Do you fear my cousin? I do not fear him, for he has never done harm to anybody. 10. Of whom has your brother heard? He has heard of a man to whom a misfortune has happened. 11. What have you done with my book? I assure you that I have not seen

it. 12. Will you wait till he returns? (*llegue*). I can not wait, for I have a good deal to do. 13. What has happened to you? A great misfortune has happened to me. 14. Why do you pity that man? I pity him because you have broken his neck. 15. Does that man serve you well? He serves me well, but he spends too much. 16. How long has it been since he left your service? It was but two months since. 17. Do you offer me anything? I have nothing to offer you. 18. Have the Parisians offered you anything? They have offered me wine, bread, and good beef. 19. Do you trust this man with anything? I do not trust him with anything. 20. Will you trust my father with your money? I will trust him with it.

FIFTY-SECOND LESSON—Lección Quincuagésimasegunda

Will the people come soon ? Soon,—very soon.

A violin.
To play the violin.
To play the piano.
What instrument do you play?
To touch, play.

Near. Near me.

Where do you live?
I live near the castle.
What are you doing near the fire?

To dance. To fall.

To drop, to let fall.

Has he dropped anything?

He has not dropped anything.

To retain, to hold back.

To approach, to draw near.

Do you approach the fire?

I do approach it.

¿ Vendrá la gente pronto ? Luego, presto, pronto, muy pron-

to. Un violín. Tocar el violín.

Tocar el piano.

¿ Qué instrumento toca V. ?

Tocar.

Cerca de, junto á. Cerca de mí, junto á mí.

En donde vive V.?
Vivo junto al castillo.

What are you doing near the fire ? Que está V. haciendo junto al fuego ?

Danzar, bailar.

Caer.* Dejar caer.

Ha dejado él caer algo? No ha dejado caer nada. Retener,* (conj. like Tener). Acercarse á, aproximarse á. ¿Se acerca V. al fuego? Me acerco á él.

 $\mathsf{Digitized} \ \mathsf{by} \ Google$

To approach, to have access to (Acercarse. one. Tener comunicación con. Es un hombre de difícil acceso. He is a man difficult of access. I go away (withdraw) from the Me quito del fuego. fire. To withdraw from. Quitarse de, apartarse de, retirarse de, irse de. To retire from. I go away from it. Me quito de él. Why does that man go away from ¿ Por qué se retira ese hombre del the fire? fuego f He goes away from it because he Se retira porque no tiene frio. is not cold. Recordar. To remember. Acordarse de.* Se acuerda V. de eso ! Do you remember that?) Os acordáis de eso ? Me acuerdo de ello. I remember it. Does your brother remember ¿Se acuerda de eso el hermano de V. 1 that ? (¿Os acordáis de ese hombre ? Do you remember that man? LSe acuerda V. de ese hombre ! ¿Se acuerda V. de eso ? Do you remember that? (Sí, me acuerdo. I remember it. Me acuerdo de eso. (¿ De qué os acordáis? What do you remember ? Le pué se acuerda V. 1 Nada recuerdo. I remember nothing. Sentarse.* To sit down. Are you seated ! ¿Está V. sentado ? ¿Se sienta V. ? I am sitting down. Me siento, or estoy sentado. Thou art sitting down. Tú te sientas, or estás sentado. He is sitting down. Él se sienta, or está sentado. I shall sit down. Yo me sentaré. He sits near the fire. El se sienta cerca del fuego. He is sitting near the fire. El está sentado junto á la lumbre. To like better, to prefer. Gustar más de, preferir. ¿Gusta V. más de estar aquí que de salir ? Do you like staying here better Prefiere V. quedar aquí á salir? than going out? ¿Quiere V. más bien estar aquí

que salir?

I like staying here better than Me gusta más estar aquí que going out.

Both.

He likes to do both.

As much as.

The veal. The calf. Quick, fast.

Slow, slowly.

Loud.

Does your master speak loud?

He speaks loud.

In order to learn Spanish, one Para aprender el español, es memust speak loud.

Quicker, faster.

Not so quick, less quick.

As quickly as you.

He eats more quickly than I. Do you learn as fast as 1?

I learn faster than you. I do not understand you, because

you speak too fast. To sell cheap.

To sell dear.

Does he sell cheap?

He does not sell dear.

He has sold to me very dear.

This man sells everything so dear Este hombre lo vende todo tan that one can not buy anything from him.

understand you.

I have bought it of him.

So much, so many.

I have written so many notes, that I can not write any more.

salir.

Ambos, los dos or las dos, el uno y el otro, la una y la otra.

Á él le gusta hacer ambos.

(Tanto como.

Lo mismo que.

La ternera.

Becerro, ternero.

Presto, pronto, ligero.

Despacio, lento, lentamente.

Poco á poco.

Alto, en voz alta, recio.

¡ Habla alto el maestro de V. ?

Habla alto.

nester hablar alto.

Más presto, más ligero.

No tan presto, menos pronto.

Tan pronto como V.

Él come más presto que yo.

¿Aprende V. tan pronto como 70 T

Aprendo más pronto que V.

No entiendo á V. porque habla tan de prisa.

Vender barato.

Vender caro.

¿Vende él barato?

No vende caro.

Me ha vendido muy caro.

Tan.

caro que no se le puede comprar nada.

You speak so fast that I can not V. habla tan ligero que no puedo entenderle.

Se lo he comprado á él.

Tanto, tanta, tantos, tantas.

He escrito tantas esquelas que no puedo escribir más.

Note.

Do you fear to go out?

I fear to go out.

Esquela.

Teme V. salir ?

Temo salir.

CONVERSACIÓN

1. ¿ Hay mucha distancia de aquí á Viena? Hay casi dos cientas cincuenta millas de aquí á Viena. 2. ¿ Qué distancia hay de París á Berlín? Hay cerca de ciento y treinta millas de París á Berlín. 3. ¿ Es V. gaditano? No; soy madrileño. 4. ¿ Ha pasado el rey por aquí ? No ha pasado por aquí, sino por delante del teatro. 5. ¿ Por qué huye V.? Huyo porque tengo miedo. 6. ¿ Por qué no han hecho sus ejercicios sus discípulos de V.? Aseguro á V. que los han hecho, y V. se equivoca si cree que no lo han hecho. 7. ¿ Ha tenido mis cuchillos su hijo de V.? Me asegura que no los ha tenido. 8. ¿ No ha oído V. nada de nuevo? No he oído rada. 9. ¿ Qué es lo que mi amigo le ofrece á V.? Me ofrece un libro. 10. Ya le ha retenido él á V. algo? Nunca le he confiado ninguna cosa, y así nunca me ha retenido nada. 11. ¿ Qué secreto le ha confiado á V. mi hijo? No puedo confiar á V. el secreto que me ha confiado, porque me ha encargado que lo tenga secreto. 12. ¿ Vende su vestido el amigo de V.? No lo vende, porque le va como pintado.

EXERCISE

1. Do you play the violin? I do not play the violin, but the piano. 2. What o'clock is it now? It is almost eleven, and the people will soon come. 3. Are there to be (deberá haber) a great many people at our ball? There are to be a great many. 4. In what do you spend your time in this country? I spend my time in playing on the piano and in reading. 5. Do you amuse yourselves? I assure you that we amuse ourselves very often. 6. Has anybody pitied you? Nobody has pitied me, because I have not been ill. 7. To whom have you offered your fine horses? I have offered them to the English captain. 8. Has anybody hindered you from writing? (que V. escriba). Nobody has hindered me from writing, but I have hindered somebody from hurting your cousin. 9. Is it cold to-day? It is very cold. 10. Why

does your friend go away from the fire? He goes away from it because he is afraid of burning himself. 11. Are you cold or warm? I am neither cold nor warm. 12. Why do your children approach the fire? They approach it because they are cold. 13. Do you remember anything? I remember nothing. 14. What does your uncle remember? He remembers what you have promised him. 15. Why do you draw back from the fire? I have been sitting near the fire for an hour and a half, so that I am no longer cold. 16. May one approach your uncle? One may approach him, for he receives everybody. 17. Do you sit down near the fire? I do not sit down near the fire, for I am afraid of being too warm. 18. Do you recollect these words? I do not recollect them. 19. Have I remembered my exercise? You have remembered it. 20. Have you recalled your exercises? I have recalled them, for I have learned them by heart, and my brothers have remembered theirs, because they have learned them by heart.

FIFTY-THIRD LESSON-Lección Quincuagésimatercera

By the side of. I have passed by the side of you. Yo he pasado por el lado de V. Have you passed by the side of Ha pasado V. por el lado de mi my brother? I have passed by his side. To pass near a place. I have passed by the theater. I have passed by the castle.

house.

To dare.

I dare not go thither.

He dares not do it. I did not dare to tell him so. To make use of, to use. Do you use my horse? I do use it.

Pasar cerca de un lugar. Yo he pasado cerca del teatro. He pasado cerca del or junto al castillo. You have passed before my ware- V. ha pasado por, or delante de or por delante de mi almacén. Osar, atreverse. (Yo no oso ir allá. No me atrevo á ir allá. Él no se atreve á hacerlo.

Yo no me atreví á decirselo.

Servirse de, usar.

Me sirvo de él.

¿Se sirve V. de mi caballo ?

Al lado de, or por el lado de.

hermano \$

He pasado por su lado.

Does your father use it?

He uses it.

Have you used my shotgun?

I have used it.

They have used your books.

They have used them.

To instruct, instructing. I instruct, thou instructest, he Yo instruyo, tú instruyes, él insinstructs, you instruct; we instruct, you instruct, they instruct.

To teach.

He teaches me arithmetic.

I teach you Spanish.

I have taught him Spanish.

To teach some one to do something.

He teaches me to read.

I teach him to write.

A teacher of Spanish.

A Spanish teacher, (one who is a Un maestro español. Spaniard).

To shave.

To get shaved.

To dress.

To undress.

Have you dressed yourself?

I have not yet dressed

Have you dressed the child ? I have dressed it.

To undo.

To get rid of.

¿Se sirve de él su padre de V.?

(Se sirve de él.) Usa de él.

¿ Ha usado V. (or se ha servido V.)

de mi escopeta?

(He usado de ella. Me he servido de ella.

Ellos han usado de (se han servido de) los libros de V.

(Los han usado.

Se han servido de ellos.

Instruir,* instruyendo. truye, V. instruye; nosotros ins-

truimos, vosotros instruís, Vds. instruyen, ellos instruyen.

Ensenar.

El me enseña la aritmética.

Le enseño á V. el español. Le he enseñado el español.

Enseñar á alguno á hacer alguna COSA.

Él me enseña á leer.

Le enseño á escribir.

Un maestro de español.

Afeitar, rasurar.

Afeitarse, hacerse afeitar.

Vestir,* vestirse.

Desnudar, desnudarse.

(1 Se ha vestido V. ?

Os habéis vestido ?

my- Todavía no me he vestido.

Ha vestido V. al niño?

Lo he vestido.

(Deshacer.* (Conjugated like ha-

Deshacerse de, zafarse, librarse de.

Are you getting rid of your damaged sugar?

I am getting rid of it.

I did get rid of it.

To part with.

The design, the intention.

I intend to go thither.

Do you intend to part with your horses ?

I have already parted with them. Ya me he deshecho de ellos.

He has parted with his shotgun. Have you parted with, discharged, Ha despedido V. á su criado? your servant?

Yes, I have parted with, dis- Si, lo he despedido. charged, him.

To awake.

I generally awake at six o'clock Me despierto generalmente á las in the morning.

My servant generally wakes me Mi criado me despierta generalat six o'clock in the morn-

A slight noise awakes me.

A dream has waked me.

not to wake him.

A dream.

Generally.

To come down.

To dismount.

To behave.

I conduct myself well.

How does he conduct himself? Toward.

He behaves ill toward that man. He behaves ill toward me.

Se deshace V. de su azúcar ave-

¿ Va V. saliendo del azúcar ave-

Me deshago de él.

) Voy saliendo de él.

Did you get rid of your old ship? LSe deshizo V. de su fragata vieja 🕈

Me deshice de ella.

Deshacerse de, enagenar, vender.

El designio, la intención.

Tengo intención de ir allá.

A Tiene V. intención de vender sus caballos ?

Ya los he vendido.

El ha vendido su escopeta.

Despertar, despertarse.

seis de la mañana.

mente á las seis de la mañana.

Un ligero ruido me despierta.

Un sueño me ha dispertado.

I do not make a noise, in order No hago ruido, para no dispertarlo.

Un sueño, un ensueño.

Generalmente, ordinariamente.

Bajar.

Apearse, desmontar.

Portarse, comportarse,

Me comporto bien. ¿Cómo se porta él¶

A, con, para con, hacia. El se porta mal con aquel hombre.

El se porta mal conmigo.

To merit, to be worth while.

Is it worth while to do that?

Is it worth while to write to him?

Vale la pena hacer eso?

Vale la pena escribirle?

CONVERSACIÓN

1. ¿ Esperan Vds. llegar temprano á París? Esperamos llegar á las ocho y cuarto, porque nuestro padre nos espera esta tarde. 2. ¿ Por qué ha cambiado V. el coche de que me ha hablado? Lo he cambiado por un caballo árabe. 3. ¿ No se divierte V. aquí? Se engaña V. cuando dice que no me divierto aquí; porque aseguro á V. que hallo mucho placer en hablar con V.; pero me voy, porque me esperan en el baile de un pariente. 4. ¿ Qué será de V. si se mete siempre con los soldados? No sé lo que será de mí; pero le aseguro á V. que no me harán ningún daño; porque no hacen daño á nadie. 5. ¿ Cuánto tiempo ha tenido V. esta casaca? Hace mucho tiempo que la tengo. 6. 1 Habla V. siempre en castellano? Hace tanto tiempo que no lo hablo que casi del todo lo he olvidado. 7. ¿ Ha dado V. algún dinero á su hijo? Le he dado más de lo que él gastará. 8. ¿ Por qué se alegran los españoles? Se alegran porque se lisonjean de que tienen muchos buenos amigos. 9. ¿ Se marcha su tío de V. con nosotros? Se marcha con nosotros si quiere. 10. ¿ Por qué han ahorcado á aquel hombre? Lo han ahorcado porque ha dado muerte á alguien. 11. ¿ Quiere V. colgar mi sombrero en el árbol? Lo colgaré. 12. ¿ Por qué es V. tan difuso sobre este asunto? Porque es menester hablar sobre todas las cosas. Si es necesario escuchar y responder á V. cuando se habla sobre esa materia, colgaré mi sombrero en el clavo, me tenderé en el suelo, y le escucharé y responderé tan bien cómo pueda. V. hará bien.

EXERCISE

1. Have your books been found? They have been found.
2. Are your brother's stockings under the bed? They are upon it. 3. Have you passed by anybody? I passed by beside you, and you did not see me. 4. Will you pass by the castle? I shall pass by there. 5. Has not he been afraid of soiling his fingers? He has not been afraid of soiling them,

because his fingers are never clean. 6. May my brothers use your books? They may use them. 7. Has your father used my horse? He has used it. 8. Have you told your brother to come down! (que baje). I did not dare to tell him. 9. Have you shaved to-day? I have shaved. 10. On what days do you shave in the evening? When I do not dine at home. 11. At what o'clock do you dress in the morning? I dress as soon as I have breakfasted, and I breakfast every day at eight o'clock, or at a quarter past eight. 12. Dost thou go to the theater every evening? I do not go every evening, for it is better to study than to go to the theater. 13. At what o'clock does the child get up? He gets up as soon as he is awakened. 14. Why have you risen so early? My children have made such a noise that they wakened me. 15. How did my child behave? He behaved very well. Is it worth while to dismount from my horse in order to buy a cake? It is not worth while, for it is not long since you ate. 17. Is it better to go to the theater than to study? It is better to do the latter than the former. 18. Is it better to go to France than to Germany? It is not worth while to go to France or to Germany when one has no wish to travel. 19. Has your merchant succeeded at last in getting rid of his damaged sugar? He has succeeded in getting rid of it. 20. Who taught your brother arithmetic? A Spanish teacher taught it to him.

FIFTY-FOURTH LESSON-Lección Quincuagésimacuarta

To hope, to expect. To await, to wait for.

I hope. Thou hopest. He hopes.

You hope. We hope.

Do you expect to find him there? LEspera V. hallarlo alla?

I do expect it.

To change, to exchange.

Esperar.

Aguardar. Yo espero. Tú esperas.

Él espera.

V. espera, vosotros esperáis. Nosotros esperamos.

Espero hallarlo.

Cambiar, trocar,* permutar.

To change one thing for another. Cambiar una cosa por (con) otra. I change my hat for his.

To mix, mingle.

I mingle with the men.

He mingles with the soldiers. Among.

To recognize.

Do you recognize that man?

It is so long since I saw him, that I do not recollect him.

I have more bread than I can eat. That man has more money than he can spend.

There is more wine than is neces-

You have more money than you want.

We have more shoes than we want.

That man has fewer friends than Ese hombre tiene menos amigos he imagines.

To fancy.

To think.

To earn, to gain, to get.

Has your father already started ? Ha salido ya el padre de V.? (departed).

He is ready to depart.

Ready.

To prepare.

To prepare one's self.

To keep one's self ready.

To spill.

To spread.

To expatiate, to lay stress upon. That man is always expatiating

upon that subject.

The subject. Always.

18

Cambio mi sombrero por el suyo.

Mezclar, mezclarse, entremeterse,

Me meto entre los hombres.

Se mezcla entre los soldados.

Entre. En medio de.

Reconocer.

Reconoce V. á ese hombre ?

Hace tanto tiempo que lo vi, que no lo reconozco, (no me acuerdo de él).

Tengo más pan que puedo comer. Ese hombre tiene más dinero del que puede gastar.

Hay más vino del necesario, (del que se necesita.)

V. tiene más dinero del que necesita, (del que ha menester).

Tenemos más zapatos que hemos menester, (necesitamos).

que piensa.

Imaginar, imaginarse.

Pensar.*

Ganar.

Está pronto (listo) para salir. Pronto, presto, listo.

Preparar.

Prepararse.

Estar preparado, estar dispuesto á. (para).

Derramar.

Esparcir, divulgar.

Espaciarse, difundirse.

Ese hombre siempre se difunde sobre esa materia.

El sujeto, la materia.

Siempre.

To stretch one's self upon the (Tirarse sobre el suelo. floor. Tenderse.*

> To hang. The wall.

I hang my coat on the wall. He hangs his hat upon the tree. We hang our shoes upon the nails.

Who has hanged the basket on ¿Quién ha colgado la canasta en the tree?

The thief has been hanged.

The thief, robber.

The robber, the highwayman.

Colgar de, (en). La pared.

Yo cuelgo mi casaca en la pared. Él cuelga su sombrero en el árbol. Colgamos nuestros zapatos en los clavos.

el árbol ?

El ladrón ha sido ahorcado, (colgado).

El ladrón.

El bandolero. El salteador de camino.

CONVERSACIÓN

1. ¿ Está mi vestido sobre la cama? Está debajo. 2. ¿ Por qué no ha limpiado V. mi baúl? Tenía miedo de ensuciarme los dedos. 3. ¿ Se sirve V. de los libros que le he prestado? Me sirvo de ellos. 4. ¿ Por qué no se ha atrevido V. á decírselo? Porque no he querido despertarle. se ha afeitado su hermano de V.? No se ha afeitado, pero se ha hecho afeitar. 6. ¿ Cuántas veces al día se afeita el padre de V.? No se afeita más que una vez al día; pero mi tío se afeita dos veces al día. 7. ¿ Se viste el vecino de V. antes de almorzar? Almuerza antes de vestirse. 8. ¿ Ha dormido V. bien? No he dormido bien; porque V. ha hecho demasiado ruido. 9. ¿ Cómo se ha portado mi hermano con V.? Se ha portado muy bien conmigo; porque se porta bien con todo el mundo. 10. ¿ Vale la pena apearme del caballo para darle algo á aquel pobre ? Sí; porque parece que lo necesita; pero V. le puede dar alguna cosa sin apearse de su caballo. 11. ¿ Se ha deshecho V. de aquel hombre al fin? Me he deshecho de él. 12. ¿ Hace mucho tiempo que V. se ha levantado? Hace hora y media que me levanté.

EXERCISE

1. Do you hope to receive a note to-day? I hope to receive one. 2. Does your friend hope to receive anything?

He hopes to receive something, for he has worked well. 3. Do you expect to find him at home? We expect to find him. 4. Do you wish to exchange your book for mine? 1 can not, for I want it to study Spanish. 5. When will the concert take place? It will take place the day after tomorrow. 6. Have you promised to go? I have promised. 7. Have you changed your hat in order to go to the English captain? I have changed my hat, but I have not changed my coat or my shoes. 8. Why do you mix among these men? I mix among them in order to know what they say of me. 9. Have you recognized your father? It was so long since I saw him, that I did not recognize him. 10. How long has your brother had that gun? He has had it a great while. 11. Do you know why that man does not eat? I believe he is not hungry, for he has more bread than he can eat. 12. Am I to sell my gun in order to buy a new hat? You need not sell it, for you have more money than you want. 13. Are you ready to depart with me? I am. 14. Is this young man ready to go out? Not yet, but he will soon be ready. 15. What have you done with my coat? I have hung it on the wall. 16. Has the thief who stole your gun been hanged? He has been punished, but he has not been hanged.

FIFTY-FIFTH LESSON—Lección Quincuagésimaquinta

Mr., Sir, master, lord, Lord, gen-Señor, señores, (plu.), Don. tleman. husband.

Mrs., madam, lady, mistress, wife. Señora, señoras, (plu.), Doña. Young sir, young master, (often Señorito, señoritos.

used in jest).
Miss, young lady.

Señorita, señoritas.

Señor and Señora are commonly used with the surname, or full name. Don and Doña are used either with the Christian name, or in connection with Señor and Señora, as a mark of especial respect: Señor Gómez, Señora María de Sánchez, Don Pedro, Doña Consuelo, Señor Don Juan Martínez, Señora Doña Marta de Cárdenas,

These titles are often used with names in the third person as a token of respect.

How is your father?

To doubt.

To question, to inquire.

To dispute, to discuss.

Do you doubt that?

I do doubt it.

I do not doubt it.

I make no question, have no doubt No lo dudo.

of it.

What do you doubt?

I doubt what that man has told Yo dudo de lo que ese hombre me

me.

The doubt.

Without doubt, no doubt,

To agree to a thing.

Do you agree to that? I agree to it.

I have paid three dollars for it. I have bought this horse for fifty

dollars.

hat ?

The price.

Have you agreed about the price? We have agreed about it.

About what have you agreed? About the price.

To feel, feeling.

I feel, thou feelest, he feels. We feel, you feel, they feel.

To consent.

I consent to go thither. Nevertheless.

To wear, (to wear garments). What garments does he wear? He wears beautiful garments.

The garment.

¿Cómo está su señor padre de V.?

Dudar. Cuestionar, preguntar.

Disputar, controvertir.*

Duda V. de eso !

Lo dudo.

No lo dudo.

4 Qué duda V. ?

ha dicho.

La duda. Sin duda.

Convenir en, (con or á). (Conjugated like venir. See Elements.)

A Conviene V. en eso ?

Convengo en ello.

How much have you paid for that ¿Cuánto ha pagado V. por ese sombrero f

He pagado tres pesos por él.

He comprado este caballo por cincuenta pesos.

El precio.

Han convenido Vds. en el precio?

Hemos convenido.

🛦 En qué han convenido Vds. 🕈

En el precio.

Sentir, * sintiendo.

Yo siento, tú sientes, él siente. Sentimos, sentis, sienten.

Consentir en. (Conjugated like sentir.)

Consiento en ir allá.

No obstante, con todo.

Usar, llevar, traer,* portar. ¿ Qué vestidos usa ?

El lleva vestidos hermosos. El vestido.

Against my custom.

As customary.

My partner.

To observe, to note, to attend to.

Do you take notice of that? I take notice of it. Did you observe that? Did you notice what he did? I did notice it

To get, to procure. I can not procure any money.

He can not procure anything to eat.

Penknife.

wrote it.

After having cut myself, I broke Después que me hube cortado my penknife.

After reading the letter.

To ridicule, make fun of. To laugh.

He laughs at everybody.

He criticises everybody. Do you laugh at that man?

I do not laugh at him.

To stop, to stay.

Have you stayed long at Berlin?

I stayed there only three days.

Contra mi costumbre.

Contra mi modo.

Como de costumbre.

Según el uso.

Mi socio, mi compañero.

Percibir,* observar, reparar.

Notar algo, (alguna cosa).

Repara V. esto? Observáis eso?

Lo reparo, lo observo.

Percibió V. eso?

Reparó V. lo que él hizo?

Lo reparé.

Conseguir,* procurar, lograr.

No puedo conseguir ningún di-

Él no puede procurarse el sus-

Él no puede ganar la vida. El cortaplumas, la navaja.

After having read my lesson, I Después que hube leído mi lección, la escribí.

quebré mi cortaplumas.

Después que lei la carta.

Después que hube leído la carta. Después de haber leido la carta.

Después de leer la carta. Mofarse, burlarse.

Reirse.

Él se rie de todo el mundo, (de

todos).

El critica á todo el mundo.

Se rie V. (se burla V.) de aquel hombre ?

No me río de él.

No hago burla de él.

Detenerse.* Pararse.

& Se ha detenido V. mucho tiempo en Berlín¶

Me detuve sólo tres días.

To sojourn, to stay. Where does your brother stay at LEn donde reside ahora su herpresent?

At present, actually. The residence, stay, abode. Paris is a fine place to live in.

> After reading. After cutting myself. After dressing yourself.

After dressing himself.

The sick person, the patient.

It is rather late.

Fairly well.

It is rather far.

Residir, morar.

mano de V. ?

Al presente, actualmente, ahora. La residencia, el domicilio. París es una ciudad muy her-

mosa para vivir. Después de leer.

Después de haberme cortado. (Después de haberse V. vestido. Después que V. se vistió.

Después de vestirse.

Después que él se hubo vestido. El enfermo, el paciente.

(Bastante bien, medianamente.

Tal cual. Es muy tarde. Está algo lejos.

CONVERSACIÓN

1. ¿ Cómo está el enfermo de V.? Se halla un poco mejor hoy que ayer. 2. ¿ Cuánto tiempo hace que su primo de V. aprende el español? Lo ha estudiado sólo tres meses. 3. ¿ Le gusta á V. hablar con mi tío? Me gusta mucho hablar con él; pero no me gusta que se burle de mí. 4. ¿ Duda V. de lo que este hombre le ha dicho? No lo dudo; porque es hombre de bien. 5. ¿ Ha comprado por último su tío de V. el jardín? No lo ha comprado, porque no ha podido convenir en el precio. 6. ¿ Consiente él en pagarle á V. el precio del barco? Consiente en pagármelo. 7. ¿ Por qué se lamentan estos pobres? Se lamentan porque no pueden procurar cosa alguna que comer. 8. ¿ Ha sabido V. de su amigo que está en Alemania? Le he escrito ya muchas veces; no obstante no me ha respondido todavía. 9. ¿ Por qué ha tirado V. su cortaplumas? Lo he tirado después de haberme cortado. 10. ¿ Cuándo almorzaron Vds. ? Almorzamos después de habernos afeitado. 11. ¿ Qué hizo V. esta mañana ? Salí de la ciudad muy de mañana á ver como estaba el campo. 12. ¿Se levantó V. temprano? Me levanté al rayar el alba.

EXERCISE

1. How is your father? He is only fairly well. 2. How art thou? I am tolerably well. 3. How long has your cousin been learning Spanish? He has been learning it only three months. 4. Is it long since you heard of my uncle? It is hardly a fortnight since I heard of him. 5. How long did your cousin stay at Paris? He stayed there only a month. 6. Why does he laugh at you? He laughs at me because I speak badly. 7. Do you doubt what I am telling you? I do not doubt it. 8. Have you at last bought the horse which you wished (quería) to buy last month? I have not bought it, for I have not been able to procure the money. 9. Have you at last agreed about the price of that picture? We have agreed as to it. 10. Have you agreed with your partner? I have agreed with him. 11. Does he consent to pay you the price of the ship? He consents to pay it to me. 12. Have you seen your old friend again? I have seen him again. 13. Did you recognize him? I could hardly recognize him, for, contrary to his custom, he was wearing a large hat. 14. How is he? He is very well. 15. Has your father already written to you? Not yet; but I expect to receive a note from him to-day. 16. Of what do you complain? I complain of not being able to procure some money. 17. Is your uncle well? He is better than he usually is. 18. What have you done with the books which the English captain has lent you? I have returned them to him after reading them. 19. When did your brother go to the ball? He went (thither) after dressing himself. 20. Why have you punished your boy? I have punished him because he has broken my finest glass.

FIFTY-SIXTH LESSON-Lección Quincuagésimasexta

To go to the village.
To be in the village.
To go to the exchange.
To be at the exchange.

Ir á la aldea. Estar en la aldea. Ir á la lonja. Estar en la lonja.

The parlor. The kitchen. The cellar. The church. The school. The play. The opera.

To go hunting.

To hunt. To fish.

The whole day. All the day.

The whole morning. The whole night.

The whole night, all night.

The whole week. The whole society.

All at once. Suddenly, of a sudden. La sala. La cocina El sótano. La iglesia. La escuela. La comedia. La ópera.

Ir á caza, ir á la caza, ir á cazar

Cazar. Pescar.

Todo el día. Toda la mañana. Toda la noche. Toda la noche. Toda la semana.

Toda la sociedad. De una vez, á la vez.

De repente, súbitamente.

The following are the modes of salutation:

Good morning. Good afternoon. Good evening.

Good night.

English.

Buenos días. Buenas tardes. Buenas noches.

They are always used in the plural, and are employed as in

What books have I? You have yours and hers. Has she not hers and mine? She has hers, but not yours. You have yours. I have yours. She has here and his. He has his and hers. I have his. I have hers. I have theirs.

What do you wish to send to your ¿Qué quiere V. enviar á su señora aunt?

I wish to send her a tart.

Qué libros tengo !

V. tiene los suyos y los de ella. No tiene ella los suyos y los míos ? Tiene los suyos, pero no los de V. V. tiene los suyos, (las suyas). Tengo los de V., (las de V.). Ella tiene los suyos y los de él. Él tiene los suyos y los de ella. Tengo la suya, (la de él). Tengo la suya, (la de ella).

Tengo la suya, (la de ellos, or la de ellas).

tía f Quiero enviarle una empanada,

Do you wish to send her some ¿Quiere V. enviarle también alfruit also ? guna fruta ? Yes, I will send her some. Sí, quiero enviarle alguna. Have you sent the books to my Ha envisdo V. los libros á mis sisters ? hermanast I have sent them to them. Se los he enviado. This week. Esta semana. This year. Este año. (La semana pasada, la semana Last week. próxima pasada. La semana próxima. Next week. La semana que entra. Every woman. Todas las mujeres. Every time. Cada vez, todas las veces. Every week. Cada semana, todas las semanas. Your mother. Su madre de V. Your sister. La hermana de V. Your sisters. Las hermanas de V. A person. Una persona. Dolor de oído. The earache. The heartache. Mal de corazón. The ache. El dolor. The tart. La empanada. The peach. El durazno. The strawberry. La fresa. The cherry. La cereza. The gazette. La gaceta. The newspaper. El periódico. La mercadería, las mercaderías. The merchandise. The aunt. La tía. The female cousin. La prima. La sobrina. The niece. La criada. The maid-servant. The female relation. La parienta. The female neighbor. La vecina. The female cook. La cocinera.

The following nouns express their gender by different terminations:

El cuñado.

La cuñada.

The brother-in-law.

The sister-in-law.

MASCULINE.		FEMININE.		
An abbot,	Un abad.	An abbess.	Una abadesa.	
An actor.	Un actor.	An actress.	Una actriz.	
An ambassador.	Un embajador.	An ambassadress	.Una embajado-	
	•		ra, or emba-	
			jatriz.	
A baron.	Un barón.	A baroness.	Una baronesa.	
A canon.	Un canónigo.	A canoness.	Una canonesa.	
A singer.	Un cantor.	A female singer.	Una cantora, or cantatriz.	
A count.	Un conde.	A countess.	Una condesa.	
A dancer.	Un bailarín.	A female dancer.	Una bailarina.	
A god.	Un dios.	A goddess.	Una diosa.	
A deacon.	Un diácono.	A deaconess.	Una diaconisa.	
A duke.	Un duque.	A duchess.	Una duquesa.	
An elector.	Un elector.	An electress.	Una electriz, or	
	,		electora.	
An emperor.	Un emperador.	An empress.	Una emperatriz.	
A hero.	Un héroe.	A heroine.	Una heroina.	
A poet.	Un poeta.	A poetess.	Una poetisa.	
A priest.	Un sacerdote.	A priestess.	Una sacerdotisa,	
A prince.	Un principe.	A princess.	Una princesa.	
A prior.	Un prior.	A prioress.	Una priora.	
A prophet.	Un profeta.	A prophetess.	Una profetisa.	
A king.	Un rey.	A queen.	Una reina.	
Sir, (addressing).		1/9/17	Señora.	
	Caballero.	•	Dama.	
In some cases there are different words for each gender.				
Father.	Padre.	Mother.	Madre.	
Godfather.	Padrino.	Godmother.	Madrina.	
Stepfather.	Padrastro.		Madrastra.	
Son-in-law.	Yerno.	Daughter-in-law.		
Man.	Hombre.		Mujer.	
Horse.	Caballo.		Yegua.	
Ram.	Carnero.	_	Oveja.	
Bull.	Toro.		Vaca.	
To hire, to let.		Alquilar, arrenda		
		Dar, or tomar en alquiler, or		
	ļ	arrendamiento.		
Have you already	hired a room ?	Ha alquilado V.		
	((or aposento, or	una camara).	

Admitir, conceder. To admit, grant. Confesar* una cosa. To confess. Concede V., or admite V. eso ? Do you grant that? Lo concedo, lo admito. I grant it. Do you confess your fault? Confiesa V. su falta? I confess it. La confieso. I confess it to be a fault. Confieso que es una falta. To confess, to avow, to own, to (Confesar, declarar, protestar, reacknowledge. conocer. As, or so much, as, or so many. Tanto-tanta, Tantos-tantas. She has so many candles that she Ella tiene tantas velas que no puede usarlas todas. can not use them all.

To catch a cold.

To make sick.

Resfriarse, acatarrarse. Coger un resfriado.

(Poner malo. Hacer mal, daño.

If you eat so much it will make Si V. come tanto, le pondrá malo, vou sick.

Does it suit you to lend your Le conviene & V. prestar su escoshotgun ?

It does not suit me to lend it. Where did you catch that cold? I caught a cold on going from the

opera.

(or le hará daño).

peta ? No me conviene prestarla.

En dónde cogió V. ese resfriado. Me resfrié al salir de la ópera.

To have a cold.

Tener catarro. The cold. El catarro, el resfriado.

The cough. I have a cold. You have a cough. The brain. The chest.

La tos. Tengo catarro. V. tiene tos. El cerebro. El pecho.

CONVERSACIÓN

1. ¿ Ha hecho ya la sopa la cocinera de V.? La ha hecho, puesto que está en la mesa. 2. ¿ Va muy á menudo á la iglesia su madre de V.? Va todas las mañanas y todas las tardes. 3. ¿ Qué aprendes en la escuela? Aprendo á leer, escribir y hablar. 4. ¿ Saben hablar el alemán sus hermanas de V.? Todavía no saben hablarlo, pero hace mucho que lo estudian. 5. ¿ Le gustan á V. los duraznos? Me gustan mucho. 6. ¿ Tiene algunas fresas su prima de V. ? Tiene

tantas que no puede comérselas todas. 7. § En dónde se resfriaron ellas? Se resfriaron anoche al salir de la ópera. 8. § Dónde estuvo V. anoche? Estuve en casa de mi cuñado. 9. § Hay en la gaceta alguna cosa nueva? Yo no he leído ninguna cosa nueva. 10. § Ha alquilado V. ya un cuarto? He alquilado uno. 11. § Qué dice su tío de V. de aquella esquela? Dice que está muy bien escrita; pero confiesa que ha hecho mal en enviársela al capitán. 12. § Qué tiene V.? Tengo un terrible dolor de cabeza, y un resfriado.

EXERCISE

1. Where is your cousin? He is in the kitchen. 2. Has your sister gone to school? She has gone there. 3. Dost thou go to school to-day? I go there. 4. What dost thou learn at school? I learn to read, write, and speak (there). 5. Where is your aunt? She has gone to the play with my little sister. 6. Has your father gone hunting? He has not been able to go hunting, for he has a cold. 7. Is your father still in the country? Yes, madam, he is still there. 8. How long did you stay with my mother? I stayed with her the whole evening. 9. Are these girls as good (discreto) as their brothers? They are better than they. 10. What has your niece brought you? She has brought us good cherries, good strawberries and good peaches. Have you eaten many cherries this year? I have eaten many. 12. Did you give any to your little sister? I gave her so many that she can not eat them all. 13. Were there any pears (la pera) last year? There were not many. Why do not your sisters go to the play? They can not go there because they have a cold, and that makes them very ill. 15. Did you sleep well last night? I did not sleep well, for my children made too much noise in my room. 16. Have you read the gazette to-day? I have read it. 17. Is there anything new in it? I have not read anything new in it. 18. What does my aunt say? She says that she wishes to see you. 19. I admire (admirar) that family, (la familia,) for the father is the king and the mother is the queen of it. The children and the servants are the subjects (el sujeto) of the state. (el estado). The tutors of the children are the ministers, (el ministro,) who share with the king and queen the care (el cuidado) of the government, (el gobierno). 20. For whom has your father hired a room? He has hired one for his son, who has just arrived from France.

FIFTY-SEVENTH LESSON—Lección Quincuagésimaséptima

THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE

As has been said, the present participle is formed by dropping the infinitive ending, and adding *ando* to verbs of the first conjugation, and *endo* to those of the second and third conjugations.

1. To speak	, hablar.	Speaking,	hablando.
2. To sell,	vender.	Selling,	vendiendo.
8. To receive	ve, recibir.	Receiving,	recibiendo.

Verbs ending in *eer* and uir, (including those in $g\ddot{u}ir$, but not those in guir,) change the i into y:

To read,	leer.	Reading,	leyendo.
To instruct,	instruir.	Instructing,	instruyendo.
Argüir.		Arguyendo.	

In general, the present participle is used as in English, the verb estar, to be, being employed to make the progressive form. As was stated, this participle is not often used after prepositions, but gives place to the infinitive.

Temporal adverbs are frequently omitted in Spanish, where they are used in English with the present participle:

He eats while walking. Él come andando.

The man eats while running. El hombre come yendo corriendo.

El hombre come al ir corriendo.

Yo escribo mientras leo.

He questions while speaking.

Él pregunta mientras (or cuando)
está hablando.

V. habla al tiempo de responderme.

You speak while answering me. V. habla mientras (cuando) me responde.

The cravat. La corbata.

The carriage. El coche, el carruaje.
The house. La casa.

The letter, epistle.

The letter (of the alphabet).

The table.

The family.

La familia.

The promise.

La carta.

La letra.

La mesa.

La familia.

La promesa.

The leg.

La pierna.

The sore throat.

El mal de carga

The sore throat. El mal de garganta.

The throat. La garganta.

I have a sore throat. Yo tengo mal de garganta. Yo tengo la garganta mala.

The meat.

Salt meat.

Fresh meat.

Carne salada.

Carne fresca.

Raw meat.

Carne cruda.

Carne cruda.

Carne cruda.

Cold water.

Agua fría.

The food, victuals.
The dish, mess.
Salt meats.
The traveler.

El alimento, la comida.
El plato, las viandas.
Carne en escabeche.
Viajero, viajante.

To march, to walk, to step. Andar, caminar, dar un paso.

To walk, to promenade, to saunter, to take a walk, is passar or passarse; but the ordinary word for walk is andar. This verb describes the motion of the clock or watch:

The clock or watch runs. El reloj anda.

I have walked a good deal to- Hoy he and ado muchísimo.

I have been walking in the garden with my mother. He estado paseando con mi madre en el jardín.

To take a step. Dar un paso.

To take a step (meaning to take \(\) Tomar sus medidas. measures). \(\) Valerse de medios.

To go on a journey.

Ir á un viaje.
Salir á un viaje.
Hacer un viaje.

To do business.

To make a speech.

A piece of business.

An affair.

Un negocio, un asunto.

To transact business.

Negociar, hacer negocio

Negociar, hacer negocios. Llevar or traer negocios.

To meddle. Meterse, entremeterse, ingerirse. (¿En qué se mete V.? What are you meddling with?).En qué os metéis? I am meddling with my own busi-Yo me meto en mis propios negocios. That man always meddles with Ese hombre se mete siempre en los negocios agenos, (de otros). other people's business. I do not meddle with other peo-Yo no me entremeto en los negocios agenos. ple's business. Others, other people. Otros, otras gentes. Se ocupa en pintar. Se ocupa en la pintura. He employs himself in painting. Trabaja de pintor. El arte de la pintura. The art of painting. La pintura. La química. Chemistry. The art. El arte. Extraño, asombroso, maravilloso. Strange. To employ one's self. Emplearse, ocuparse. To concern, import, to concern Concernir,* importar, interesar, one, to have importance to. tocar. To look. Mirar. I do not like to meddle with things No me gusta meterme en cosas que that do not concern me. no me tocan, (or importan). Eso no toca (interesa) á ninguno. That concerns nobody. To attract. Atraer.* Loadstone attracts iron. El imán atrae al hierro. (Su canto me atrae. Her singing attracts me. El canto de ella me atrae. To charm. ·Hechizar, encantar, embelesar. To enchant.

Goodness. La bondad.

Nouns ending in ad, dad, or tad, expressing properties or qualities, are feminine; as also are those terminating in ción, sión.

I am charmed with it.

Beauty.

The harmony.

The voice.

The power.

To repeat.

The repetition.

La harmonia.

La voz.

El poder.

Repetir.*

The repetición.

Digitized by Google

Estoy encantado de (or con) ello.

La hermosura.

The commencement, beginning. El principio, or comienzo.

The wisdom. La sabiduría. Study. El estudio. The lord, master. El señor.

A good memory. Una buena memoria.

A memorandum. SApunte, nota. Razón, apuntamiento.

The nightingale. El ruiseñor.

All (the) beginnings are difficult. Todos los principios son difíciles.

The bird. El ave. The soul. El alma.

Feminine nouns which begin with an accented a or ha take masculine article in singular for the sake of euphony.

To create.

Creation.

The Creator.

The benefit.

The fear of the Lord.

Heaven.

Crear.

La creación.

El Criador.

El beneficio.

El temor de Dios.

Heaven. El cielo.
The earth. La tierra.
Solitude. La soledad.
The lesson. La lección.
The goodness. La bondad.
Flour, meal. Harina.
The mill. El molino.

Many Spanish nouns may be readily formed from similar English nouns by changing the tion of the latter to ción for the Spanish, ction into cción, ssion to sión, and simply transferring those that end in sion:

The conversation.

The action.

The possession.

The provision.

La conversación.

La acción.

La posesión.

La provisión.

CONVERSACIÓN

1. ¿ Qué tienen Vds. que comer ? Tenemos buena sopa, carne fresca y salada. 2. ¿ Ya quiere V. comer ? Sí, puesto que tengo mucha hambre. 3. ¿ Viajan Vds. á pie ó en coche ? Viajamos en coche. 4. ¿ Caminó V. mucho á pie en su último viaje ? Me gusta mucho caminar así; pero á mi tío le

gusta ir en coche. 5. ¿ Qué dijo él ? Pronunció un gran discurso sobre la bondad de Dios, después de decir: "La repetición es la madre de los estudios, y una buena memoria es un gran don de Dios." 6. ¿ Tienen estos ruiseñores más poder sobre V. que las bellezas de la pintura ó la voz de la tierna madre de V.? Confieso que la armonía del canto de estos pájaros tiene más poder sobre mí que las palabras de mis más queridos amigos. 7. ¿ En qué se divierte su tío de V. en su soledad? Se ocupa en la pintura y la química. 8. ¿ Por qué se mezcla su tío en los negocios de V.? No se mezcla generalmente en los negocios de otras personas; pero se interesa en los míos porque me quiere mucho. 9. ¿ Quién corrige los ejercicios de V.? Mi maestro los corrige. 10. ¿Canta la hermana de V. mientras baila? Canta mientras trabaja; pero no puede trabajar mientras baila. 11. ¿ Va V. todas las mañanas al campo? No voy todas las mañanas. sino dos veces á la semana.

EXERCISE

1. Will you dine with us to-day? With much pleasure. 2. Do you like milk food? I like it better than all other food. 3. Do you travel alone? (solo). No, madam, I travel with my uncle. 4. What do you intend to spend your time in this summer? I intend to take a short journey. 5. What have you been doing at school to-day? We have been listening to our professor. 6. After saying, "Repetition is the mother of studies, and a good memory is a great benefit of God," he said, "God is the creator of heaven and earth; the fear of the Lord is the beginning of all wisdom." 7. What does your niece amuse herself with in her solitude? She reads a great deal, and writes letters to her mother. 8. Has your teacher made you repeat your lesson to-day? He has made me repeat it. 9. Did you know it? I knew it pretty well. 10. I do not generally meddle with things that do not concern me, but I love you so much that I concern myself much (que yo me intereso) about what you are doing. 11. Does any one trouble his head about you? No one troubles his head about me, for I am not worth the trouble. 12. How many things does your master

14

do at the same time? (á la vez). He does four things at the same time. 13. How so? (cómo). He reads and corrects my exercises, speaks to me and questions me all at once. 14. Has your mother left? She has not left yet. 15. When will she set out? She will set out to-morrow evening. 16. Where have you spent the morning? I have spent it in the country. 17. Why has not your niece called upon me? She is very ill, and has spent the whole day in her room.

FIFTY-EIGHTH LESSON—Lección Quincuagésimaoctava

THE FUTURE PERFECT

The future perfect relates to some known future action, event, or state, which will have taken place before or at the time of some other action, event, or state; and is composed of the verb haber and some past participle:

I shall have loved. Thou wilt have loved. He, or she will have loved. You will have loved. We shall have loved. You will have loved. They will have loved. You will have loved. I shall have come. Thou wilt have come. He will have come. She will have come. You will have come. We shall have come. You will have come. They will have come. You will have come. I shall have been praised. Thou wilt have been praised. He will have been praised. She will have been praised. You will have been praised.

Yo habré amado. Tú habrás amado. Él, or ella habrá amado. V. habrá amado. Nosotros habremos amado. Vosotros habréis amado. Ellos or ellas habrán amado. Vds. habrán amado. Yo habré venido. Tú habrás venido. Él habrá venido. Ella habrá venido. V. habrá venido. Nosotros habremos venido. Vosotros habréis venido. Ellos or ellas habrán venido. Vds. habrán venido. Yo habré sido alabado. Tú habrás sido alabado. Él habrá sido alabado. Ella habrá sido alabada. V. habrá sido alabado.

We shall have been praised.

You will have been praised.

They will have been praised.

You will have been praised.

To remain over, to have left over, Quedar, sobrar, restar. to be superfluous.

When I have paid for the horse, Cuando yo haya pagado el (or there will remain to me only ten dollars.

How much money have you ¿Cuánto dinero le queda á V.? left f

I have five dollars left.

I have only one dollar left.

He has one dollar left.

How much has your sister left ?

She has only a few pence left.

How much have your brothers left f

They have a hundred dollars Les han quedado cien pesos. left.

they will have a hundred dollars left.

Nosotros (or nosotras) habremos sido alabados, (alabadas).

Vosotros (or vosotras) habréis sido alabados, (alabadas).

Ellos (ellas) habrán sido alabados.

(alabadas). Vds. habrán sido alabados, (ala-

badas).

por el) caballo, sólo me quedarán diez pesos.

Me quedan cinco pesos. Me queda sólo un peso.

How much has your brother left? Cuánto le resta (or queda) al hermano de V. ?

Le queda un peso.

manos de V. ?

¿Cuánto le queda á la hermana de V. 🕈

Le quedan sólo unos centavos. ¿Cuánto ha quedado á sus her-

When they have paid the tailor, Cuando ellos havan pagado al sastre, les quedarán cien pesos.

The conjunctions when, as soon as, after, etc., usually take the present subjunctive, or the future indicative, or the perfect subjunctive.

When I am at my aunt's, will you I Irá V. á verme, cuando yo esté come to see me ?

will you take a turn with me?

You will play, when you have V. jugará cuando haya acabado finished your exercise,

en casa de mi tía ?

After you have done writing, ¿Gustará V. dar un paseo (una vuelta) conmigo después que hava acabado de escribir?

su ejercicio.

When I have spoken to your Cuando yo haya hablado al herbrother, I shall know what I have to do.

What will you do when you have dined? Qué hará V. después que haya comido? Qué hará V. después de comer?

mano de V. sabré lo que he de hacer.

IDIOMS WITH HACER

How is the weather?

It is fine weather.

It is bad weather.

It is hot, it is very hot. It is cold, it is very cold.

The wind blows hard.

It is a long time since I saw Hace mucho tiempo que lo vi.

It is becoming late.

The night is falling.

He causes an investigation to be Él hace hacer una información.

made.

feigns to be an idiot).

He acts as a broker.

To ridicule any one.

To boast of. Out of doors.

To enter, to go in, to come in.

Will you go into my room ?

I shall come in.

To fill.

To fill a bottle with wine.

Do you fill that bottle with wa- Llena V. de agua esta botella?

ter f

I fill my purse with money.

The pocket.

¿ Qué tiempo hace ?

(Hace buen tiempo. Hace hermoso tiempo.

Hace mal tiempo.

Hace calor, hace mucho calor.

Hace frío, hace mucho frío.

Hace mucho viento.

Se hace tarde.

Se hace noche, anochece.

She counterfeits the idiot, (or Ella hace la boba, (la tonta).

Hace de corredor.

Not to mind a person, (or thing). No hacer caso de una persona,

(or cosa).

Hacer chacota (or burla) de al-

guno.

Hacer alarde. Fuera, afuera. Entrar, ir adentro.

¿Quiere V. entrar en mi cuarto,

or aposento !

Yo entraré. Llenar.

Llenar de vino una botella.

Yo lleno de dinero mi bolsa.

La bolsa, el bolsillo. La faltriquera.

Have you come quite alone? Ha venido V. absolutamente solo f No, I have brought all my men No, yo he traído toda mi gente along with me. (todos mis hombres) conmigo. To bring. Traer.* He has brought all his men with El ha traido toda su gente con-Have you brought your brother & Ha traido V. consigo & su herwith you? mano f Yo lo he traído conmigo. I have brought him with me. Have you told the groom to bring Ha dicho V. al mozo de caballos me the horse? (caballerizo) que traiga mi caballo ! (El mozo de caballos. The groom. El caballerizo. Are you bringing me my books? Me trae V. mis libros ? I am bringing them to you. Yo se los traigo á V. To take, to carry. Llevar. Will you take that dog to the Llevará V. ese perro á la caballestable ? riza f I shall take it there. Yo lo llevaré allá. Are you carrying that gun to my Lleva V. esa escopeta á mi pafather ? dre f I carry it to him. Yo se la llevo. La caña, el palo, el bastón. The cane, the stick. The stable. El establo, la caballeriza. To come down, to go down. Bajar á, descender.* Bajar al pozo. To go down into the well. Bajar el cerro. To go, or come down the hill. Descender del cerro. Bajar el río. To go down the river. To alight from one's horse, or dis- (Apearse del caballo. mount. Desmontarse. Apearse, bajar, salir de. To alight, to get out. To go up, to mount, to as- Subir, montar, ascender.* cend. Subir el monte. To go up the mountain.

To get into the coach.

To get on board a ship.

pray.

Entrar (subir) en el coche.

Embarcarse.

To desire, to beg, to request, to Desear, suplicar, pedir, rogar.*

Will you ask your brother to come & Quiere V. suplicar & su hermano down ? que baje ?

Verbs signifying to beg, to request, to command, etc., govern the subjunctive mode.

The beard. La barba.
The river. El río.

The stream, torrent. La corriente, el torrente.

CONVERSACIÓN

1. ¿ Daremos una vuelta hoy? No daremos un paseo hoy: porque hay mucho lodo en las calles. 2. ¿ Quiere V. entrar en aquel cuarto? No entraré allí, porque hay humo. 3. ¿ Cuánto dinero les queda á tus hermanos? Sólo les quedan tres pesos. 4. ¿ Cuándo irán á Francia los hermanos de V.? Irán allá así que sepan el francés. 5. ¿ Cuánto dinero ha ganado V. f He ganado sólo un poco; pero mi primo ha ganado mucho. 6. ¿ Quién cuidará de mi criado ? El posadero. 7. Ha bebido V. vino francés alguna vez? Nunca lo he bebido. 8. 4 Ha lastimado V. á mi cuñado ? No lo he lastimado; pero él me ha cortado el dedo. 9. ¿ Le ha dicho él á su caballerizo que me lo traiga? Él le ha dicho que se lo lleve á V. 10. ¿ Cuándo bajó aquel hombre al pozo ? Bajó esta mañana. 11. ¿ Quiere V. decirle que baje ? Se lo diré; pero no está vestido todavía. 12. ¿ Es mejor andar en coche que ir á bordo de un barco? No vale nada andar en coche, o ir á bordo de un barco cuando uno no tiene deseo de viajar.

EXERCISE

1. Will your parents go into the country to-morrow? They will not go, for it is too dusty. 2. Shall we go in? We will go in if you like. 3. Will you not come in? 4. Will not you sit down? I will sit down upon that large chair. 5. Will you tell me what has become of your brother? I will tell you. 6. Hast thou spent all thy money? I have not spent all. 7. How much hast thou left? I have not much left. 8. Have you money enough left to pay your tailor? I have enough left to pay him; but if I pay him I shall have but little left. 9. When will

you go to Italy! I shall go as soon as (luego que) I have (hava) learned Italian. 10. How much money shall we have left when we have (hayamos) paid for our horses? When we have (hayamos) paid for them we shall have only a hundred dollars left. 11. Do you gain anything by (en) that business? I do not gain much by it, (en el.) but my brother gains a good deal by it. 12. Why does not that man work? He is a scamp, for he does nothing but eat all the day long. 13. With what have you filled that bottle? I have filled it with wine. 14. Does your servant take care of your horses? He does take care of them. 15. Is it long since you ate French bread? It is almost three years since I ate any. 16. With what has he cut your finger? With the knife which you have lent him. 17. Have they cut off that man's leg? They have cut it off. 18. Are you pleased with your servant? I am much pleased with him, for he is fit for anything, (para todo). 19. Has your brother returned at last from England? He has returned, and has brought you a fine horse.

FIFTY-NINTH LESSON-Lección Quincuagésimanovena

THE IMPERFECT TENSE

The imperfect tense is one of the most regular forms of the Spanish verb, and, as has been said, it is used to describe what is past, as progressive, continuous, habitual, attempted, etc.

When I was at Cadiz I often Cuando yo estaba en Cádiz, iba á went to see my friends.

When you were in Madrid you Cuando V. estaba en Madrid, iba often went to the Prado.

Cesar was a great man.

Our ancestors went hunting every Nuestros abuelos cazaban todos dav.

The Romans cultivated the arts Los romanos cultivaban las artes and sciences, and rewarded merit.

Were you taking a walk? I was not taking a walk.

menudo á ver á mis amigos.

frecuentemente al Prado.

César era un gran hombre.

los días.

y las ciencias, y premiaban el mérito.

i Estaba V. paseándose ? No me paseaba.

Were you in Toledo when the ¿Estaba V. en Toledo cuando el king was there ?

I was there when he was there.

Where were you when I was in En donde estaba V. cuando yo Havana ?

Did you work while he was work- A Trabajaba V. mientras él traba-

I studied while he was working. A little fish.

Some game.

rose earlier than I do now.

all day.

A thing.

The same thing. The same man.

The man himself.

It is all the same.

Such.

Such a man. Such men. Such a woman.

Such things. Such men merit esteem.

Mr. So and So, such a one.

rey se hallaba allí ?

Yo estaba allí cuando él se hallaba allí.

estaba en la Habana ?

iaba f

Estudiaba mientras él trabajaba. Un poco de pescado.

La caza.

When I lived at my father's I Cuando yo vivia en casa de mi padre, me levantaba más temprano que ahora.

When I was sick I kept in bed Cuando yo estaba enfermo, estaba en cama todo el día.

Una cosa.

La misma cosa. El mismo hombre.

El hombre mismo. (Es lo mismo.

Es igual. Tal.

Tal hombre.

Tales hombres. Tal mujer.

Tales cosas. Tales hombres merecen estimación.

Señor Fulano de tal, Don Fulano. Don Mengano, (Zutano).

These phrases are employed when it is desired to allude to one whose name is not called.

The church is outside the town.

La iglesia está fuera de la ciudad.

I shall wait for you just outside Aguardaré à V. fuera de las puer-· the town gate.

The city gate. Seldom.

The life.

tas de la ciudad.

La puerta de la ciudad. Raramente, rara vez, raro.

La vida.

To gain one's livelihood. I gain my livelihood by working. Gano mi vida trabajando. By what means does that man ¿De qué manera gana ese hombre make a living ?

To proceed, to go on. To continue. He continues his discourse.

A good appetite.

Narrative, story, tale. The edge, the border, bank.

The shore.

The edge of the brook. The bank of the river.

On the seashore.

People, folks. They are good folks. They are wicked people. Ganar su vida.

su vida !

(Proceder, proseguir.

Continuar.

Él continúa su discurso.

Un buen apetito.

Narración, cuento.

Margen, orilla, borde.

Costa, ribera, playa.

La margen del arroyo.

La orilla del río.

En la plava del mar. La gente, las gentes.

Ellas son buenas gentes.

Ellos son gentes malvadas.

CONVERSACIÓN

1. ¿ Cuándo estuvo V. en España? Estaba allí mientras V. estaba en Italia. 2. ¿ Estaba V. en Berlín cuando el rev estuvo allí? Sí, yo estaba allí cuando él estuvo. 3. ¿ Á qué hora almorzaba V. cuando estaba en Francia? Almorzaba siempre á las ocho de la mañana. 4. ¿ V. se acuerda de los antiguos romanos? ¿ Qué puede decir de ellos? Que en mucho eran buenos é ilustrados, puesto que cultivaban las artes y las ciencias, y recompensaban el mérito. 5. ¿Qué hacían Vds. cuando vivían en el campo? Cuando vivíamos alli ibamos á pescar muy á menudo. 6. ¿ Hay mucha fruta este año? No sé; pero el verano pasado había mucha fruta cuando yo estaba en el campo. 7. ¿ Ganan estos señores la vida trabajando? La ganan sin hacer nada, puesto que son demasiado perezosos para trabajar. 8. ¿ Cómo ha ganado su amigo de V. aquel dinero? Lo ha ganado trabajando. 9. ¿Cómo ganaba V. la vida cuando estaba en Inglaterra? La ganaba escribiendo. 10. ¿Ganaba su primo de V. la vida 11. Ha visto V. escribiendo? La ganaba trabajando. alguna vez á tal persona? No, nunca. 12. ¿ Ya ha visto V. nuestra iglesia? Todavía no la he visto.

EXERCISE

1. Were you esteemed when you were in Dresden? was not hated. 2. Who were loved and who were hated? Those that were good, diligent, and obedient were loved, and those who were naughty, idle, and disobedient were punished. 3. Where was your father when you were in Vienna? He was in England. 4. On what did our ancestors live? They lived on fish and game, for they went hunting and fishing every day. 5. Did you sometimes go to the Champs-Elysées when you were at Paris? I went there often. 6. Did vou not go out walking? I went out walking sometimes. 7. Did you sometimes stay in bed when you lived at your uncle's? When I was ill I remained in bed all day. 8. How do vou earn a living? I get my livelihood by working. By what means did your friend earn that money? He earned it by working. 10. Have you ever seen such a person? I have never seen such a one. 11. Do vou know where our church is located? If you wish to see it I shall go with you to show it to you. 12. Why will not you go hunting any more? I hunted yesterday the whole day, and I killed nothing but an ugly bird, so that I shall not go hunting any more. 13. For whom are you looking? I am looking for my little brother. He is seated under the large tree under which we were sitting yesterday. 14. You have learned your lesson; why has not your sister learned hers? She has taken a walk with my mother; so she could not learn it, but she will learn it to-morrow.

SIXTIETH LESSON-Lección Sexagésima

A plate.
Sister.
A son-in-law.
A step-son.
A daughter-in-law.
A step-daughter.
The father-in-law.
The mother-in-law.
To improve in one's studies.
To forget.

Un plato.
Hermana.
Un yerno.
Un hijastro.
Una nuera.
Una hijastra.
El suegro, padre político.
La suegra, madre política.
Adelantar en los estudios.

Olvidar.

IMPERFECT INDICATIVE

I forgot, was forgetting, etc.

Olvidaba. Olvidabanos,
Olvidabas. Olvidabais.
Olvidaba. Olvidaban.

PRETERIT

I forgot, did forget, etc.

Olvidé. Olvidamos. Olvidaste. Olvidó. Olvidaron.

When we went to school we Cuando ibamos á la escuela, oloften forgot our books. Vidábamos á menudo nuestros libros.

When we received some money Cuando recibíamos dinero, lo emwe employed it in purchasing pleábamos en comprar buenos good books. libros.

Has your sister succeeded in Logró componer la corbata de mending your cravat?

V. su hermana?

She has succeeded in doing it.

Sí, lo logró.

Has the woman returned from & Ha vuelto de la plaza la mujer?

the market?
She has not yet returned. Todavía no ha vuelto.

Did the women agree to that? Han convenido en esq las mujeres?

They agreed to it. Convinieron en ello.

Where has your sister gone? Adonde fué su hermana de V.? She went to the church. Fué á la iglesia.

THE IMPERFECT SUBJUNCTIVE

There are three forms of the imperfect subjunctive mode. The first of these, sometimes called the conditional mode, and here regarded as the first imperfect subjunctive, is formed by adding the following terminations to the infinitive mode of all conjugations of regular verbs:

 SINGULAR.
 PLUBAL.

 1. ia.
 1. iamos.

 2. ias.
 2. iais.

 3. ia.
 3. ian.

In the case of irregular verbs, these endings are added to the stem of the future indicative.

The second imperfect subjunctive is made by adding the following endings to the preterit stem:

FIRST CONJUGATION

PLURAL.	
1. áramos.	
2. arais.	
3. aran.	

SECOND AND THIRD CONJUGATIONS

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. era.	1. éramos
2. eras.	2. erais.
3. era.	3. eran.

The third imperfect subjunctive consists of the following terminations added to the Preterit stem:

FIRST CONJUGATION

SINGULAR.		P	LUKAL		
1.	ase.			1.	ásemos.
2.	ases.			2.	aseis.
3.	ase.			3.	asen.
8E	COND	AND	THIRD	CONJUGA	TION8
	1777 A TO			ъ	TTTDAT

INGULAR.		PLURAL.
1.	ese.	1. ésemos
2.	eses.	2. eseis.
8.	ese.	3. esen.

FIRST FORM OF THE IMPERFECT SUBJUNCTIVE

 $\bar{\mathbf{I}}$ should have, thou wouldst have, Tendría, tendrías, tendrías he or she would have.

We should have, you would have, Tendríamos, tendríais, tendrían they would have.

SECOND FORM OF THE IMPERFECT SUBJUNCTIVE

I might or should have, thou Tuviera, tuviera, tuviera, mightest or wouldst have, he might or would have.

We might or should have, you Tuviéramos, tuvierais, tuvieran. might or would have, they might or would have.

THIRD FORM OF THE IMPERFECT SUBJUNCTIVE

I might or should have, thou Tuviese, tuvieses, tuvieses mightest or wouldst have, he might or would have.

We might or should have, you Tuviésemos, tuvieseis, tuviesen. might or would have, they might or would have.

The first imperfect subjunctive is chiefly used in conditional sentences, of which it forms the conclusion, while the clause with si, if, states the condition, and in doing this employs either one of the other forms:

If he had money, he would pay Si él tuviera (tuviese) dincro me me. lo pagaría.

The conclusion of the sentence containing the first subjunctive is sometimes placed first:

My friend would salute me, if he Mi amigo me saludaría si me saw me.

The forms in ara, era, and ase, ese are interchangeable.

Sometimes the condition which would be expressed in either of these forms is merely implied:

I should not believe it by any Yo no lo creería de modo alguno, means.

The first form is used to express a desire or modest wish:

I should like to see her.

Desearía verla.

It is, however, more common to use the form in ara, era, for this purpose:

I should like to examine your Quisiera examinar sus muestras samples. de V.

The first form is also used to indicate an approximate or uncertain statement:

It was (would be) about six o'clock Serían las seis de la tarde. in the afternoon.

Finally, it is used to express possibility or fitness:

Could that be possible?

Ought I indeed to do it?

Sería posible eso f

¿Debería de hacerlo yo?

PAST PERFECT SUBJUNCTIVE

The past perfect subjunctive is a compound of the three forms of the imperfect subjunctive of haber, and the past participle of some other verb:

- I might, should, or would have Yo habria, hubiera, or hubiese had.
- Thou mightest, wouldst have bought.
- He or you might, should, or would El or V. habría, hubiera, or huhave come.
- If I had received my money, I Si hubiera (hubiese) recibido mi should have bought new books.
- would have recalled the word.
- If you had risen early, you would Si V. se hubiera levantado temnot have caught a cold.
- If they had gotten rid of their Si se hubiesen deshecho de su old horse, they would have procured a better one.
- would have dried them.
- have behaved differently.
- If thou hadst taken notice of that, thou wouldst not have been mistaken.

- tenido.
- shouldst, or Tú habrías, hubieras, or hubieses comprado.
 - biese venido.
 - dinero, habría comprado nuevos libros.
- If he had possessed a pen, he Si él hubiera (hubiese) tenido una pluma, se habría acordado de la palabra.
 - prano, no se habría resfriado.
 - caballo viejo, habrían comprado otro meior.
- If he had washed his hands, he Si él se hubiera lavado las manos, las habría enjugado.
- If I had known that, I should Si hubiese sabido eso, me habria portado diferentemente.
 - Si hubieras (hubieses) notado eso. no te habrías equivocado.

As has been said, the conclusion, with the first form of the imperfect subjunctive, is often placed first:

- learned it?
- if I had learned it?
- I should have learned it if you Yo lo habría aprendido, si V. lo had learned it.
- Would you learn Spanish if I & Aprendería V. el español, si yo lo aprendiera, (lo aprendiese) ?
- I should learn it if you learned Yo lo aprendería si V. lo aprendiera, (lo aprendiese).
- Would you have learned German, ¿ Habría V. aprendido el alemán, si yo lo hubiera (hubiese) aprendido!
 - hubiera (hubiese) aprendido.

Would you go to Spain if I went & Iría V. á España, si yo fuera there with you?

I should go, if you went with me. Yo iria, si V. fuera conmigo.

Would you have gone to France Habria ido V. & Francia, si yo if I had gone with you?

Would you go out if I remained & Saldría V. si yo me quedara at home ?

if I had written a note?

(fuese) con V. 1

le hubiera (hubiese) acompañado f

(quedase) en casa ?

I should remain at home if you Me quedaría en casa si V. saliera, (saliese).

Would you have written a letter & Habria escrito V. una carta si yo hubiera (hubiese) escrito un billete ?

CONVERSACIÓN

1. ¿ Dejaban algunas veces sus libros de Vds. en la escuela? De vez en cuando lo hacíamos. 2. ¿ Olvidamos alguna cosa? Vds. no olvidaron nada. 3. ¿ Empleaban Vds. el dinero en comprar libros? No; lo empleábamos socorriendo á los pobres. 4. ¿ Ha vuelto de la iglesia su madre de V.? Todavía no ha vuelto. 5. ¿Quiénes son ésos? Son unos extranjeros que desean hablarle á V. 6. ¿ Dónde están nuestras primas? Están allí en la puerta. 7. ¿ Tiene las manos frías su hermana de V.? No, pero tiene los pies fríos. 8. ¿Tendría V. dinero si su padre estuviera aquí? Yo lo tendría si él estuviese aquí. 9. ¿ Habría sido alabada mi hermana si ella no hubiera sido hábil? Ciertamente ella no habría sido alabada si no hubiera sido muy hábil, y si no hubiera trabajado desde por la mañana hasta la noche. 10. Habría escrito V. á su hermana si yo hubiera ido á París? Yo le habría escrito, y le habría enviado algún regalo, si V. hubiese ido allá. 11. Uno de los avudas de cámara de Luis XIV. suplicaba á este Príncipe, al tiempo que se acostaba, que recomendara al señor primer presidente un pleito que él tenía contra su suegro, y le decía urgiéndole: "¡Ah! señor. Vuestra Majestad no tiene que decir más que una palabra." "Bien," dijo Luis XIV, "no es ésto lo que me embaraza: pero dime: si tú estuvieras en el lugar de tu suegro, y tu suegro en el tuyo, ¿ te alegrarías tú de qué yo dijera esa palabra?"

EXERCISE

1. Did you forget anything when you went to school? We often forgot our books. 2. Did your mother pray for any one when she went to church? She prayed for her children. 3. When you received your money, what did you do with it? We spent it in buying some good books. 4. Did you always pay in cash when you bought of that merchant? We always paid in cash, for we never buy on credit, 5. Where has your aunt gone? She has gone to church. 6. Who is there? It is I, (yo soy). 7. Where is my book? There it is. 8. Where is your sister? There she is. 9. Where are you, John? (Juan). Here I am. 10. Why do you sit near the fire? My hands and feet are cold; that is the reason why I sit near the fire. 11. Is anything the matter with you? My head pains me. 12. Has your sister a good appetite? She has a very good appetite; that is the reason why she eats so much. 13. Why has not your daughter written her exercises? She has taken a walk with her companion. (fem.); that is the reason why she has not written them; but she promises to write them to-morrow, if you do not scold her. 14. Would you have praised my little brother if he had been good? If he had been good I should certainly not only have praised, but also esteemed, honored, (honrar), and rewarded him. 15. Would not my brother have been punished if he had written his exercises? would not have been punished if he had written them. Would you give me something if I were very good? If you were very good, and if you worked well, I should give you a fine book. 17. Would you have spoken to my mother if you had seen her? I should have spoken to her, and asked her (rogar) to send you a handsome gold watch, if I had seen her. 18. If the men should come, it would be necessary to give them something to drink. 19. I should like to know why you went out walking without me? I have heard, my dear sister, that you are angry with me, (estar enfadado), because I went out walking without you. I assure you that if I had known that you were not ill I should have come for you: but I inquired at your physician's about your health,

and he told me that you had been in bed (estar en cama) the last eight days, (por ocho días). 20. A French officer, having arrived at the court (corte) of Vienna, the Empress Theresa (Teresa) asked (preguntar) him, if he believed that the Princess of N., whom he had seen the day before, was really the handsomest woman in the (del) world, as had "Madam," replied (replicar) the officer. "I been said. thought so vesterday."

SIXTY-FIRST LESSON—Lección Sexagésimaprimera

What has become of your aunt?

I do not know what has become No sé lo qué se ha hecho de ella. of her.

To die, to lose life. I die, thou diest, he or she dies. Shall or will you die? I shall die. his wife died this afternoon.

This man is dead. The wine sells well.

Wine will sell well next year.

That door shuts easily. That window does not open easily.

That picture is seen from a distance.

Far off, from afar.

That can not be comprehended.

To conceive, to comprehend.

It is clear.

According to circumstances. According to.

The circumstance. That is according to circumstances.

It depends.

15

¿ Qué se ha hecho de su señora tía de V. 1

Morir.* Morirse. Perder la vida. Muero, mueres, muere. Morirá (or se morirá) V.? Moriré. Me moriré.

That man died this morning, and Ese hombre murió esta mañana, y su mujer murió esta tarde.

> Este hombre está (or ha) muerto. El vino se vende bien.

El vino se venderá bien el año próximo, (or el año que viene). Esa puerta se cierra fácilmente.

Esa ventana no se abre fácilmente.

Ese cuadro (esa pintura) se ve de lejos.

De lejos. Desde lejos. Eso no se comprende. Concebir.* Comprender. Es claro. Eso es claro.

Según las circunstancias. Según. Conforme á.

La circunstancia.

Conforme á) as circunstancias Depende de **\(\)**

Glad. Alegre. Pleased. Contento. Sentido. Displeased. Triste. Sad. Are you rich? LES V. rico ? Sí. Soy rico. Sí, lo soy. I am. Are the women handsome? Son hermosas las mujeres ? They are; they are rich and hand-Sí, son, (sí, lo son); son ricas y hermosas. Estar enfadado con alguno. To be angry with somebody. Enfadarse con alguno. Enojarse. To be angry at something. Enfadarse de algo. De qué se enfada V. ? What are you angry about ?) i Qué le enfada á V.? Are you sorry to have done it? Siente V. haberlo hecho? I am sorry for it. Lo siento. Civil. Polite. Civil. Cortés. Político. Impolite. Incivil. Descortés. Impolítico. Dichoso. Feliz. Happy. Lucky. Desdichado. Infeliz. Unhappy. Unlucky. Desgraciado. Fácil. Easy. Difícil. Difficult. Útil. Useful. Useless. Inútil. Is it useful to write a great ¿Es útil escribir muchísimo? deal ? Es útil. It is useful. Is it well (right) to take the prop- (Es justo tomar lo ageno? LEs bien tomar lo que es de otro! erty of others! Another's property. Lo ageno. Es malo. Es injusto. It is bad, (wrong). It is not well, (wrong). No es bien. Es malo. Well, right. Bien. Justo. Malo. Injusto. Bad, wrong. (¿ De qué sirve eso ? Of what use is that. Para qué sirve eso ? (De nada sirve eso. That is of no use. Para nada sirve. What is this? 4 Qué es esto ? I do not know what it is. No sé lo qué es.

What is your name?

¿Cómo se llama V. ? Cuál es su nombre de V. 1 ¿Cuál (cómo) es la gracia de V. ?

My name is Charles. Me llamo Carlos.

What do you call this in Spanish? ¿Cómo se llama esto en español?

What is that called ! George the Third. Charles the Seventh.

How do you say this in Spanish? ¿Cómo se dice esto en español?

LCómo se llama eso? Jorge Tercero. Carlos Séptimo.

After the Christian name of a sovereign, the ordinal numbers without the article are used up to the tenth, after which the cardinals are usually employed.

Louis the Fourteenth. Henry the Fourth.

Charles the Fifth spoke several Carlos Quinto hablaba corriente-European languages fluently.

Europe. European.

Fluently. Rather.

Rather — than.

Rather than squander my money I shall keep it.

To keep, (to remain with).

I shall rather pay him than go Más bien quiero pagarle que ir there.

I shall rather burn the coat than wear it.

He has arrived sooner than I. A half-worn coat.

To do things imperfectly.

Luis Catorce. Enrique Cuarto.

mente varias lenguas europeas.

Europa. Europeo. Corrientemente.

Más bien. Antes. Mejor que. Más bien que. Antes que.

Antes que (más bien que) disipar mi dinero me quedaré con él.

Quedarse con. Guardar.

allá. Más bien quiero quemar la casaca

que usarla, (ponérmela). Ha llegado más pronto que vo. Una casaca medio usada.

Hacer las cosas imperfectamente. Hacer las cosas á medias.

CONVERSACIÓN

1. ¿ Qué se ha hecho de su tía de V.? No sé qué se ha hecho de ella. 2. ¿ Se vendía bien el vino el año pasado? No se vendía muy bien; pero se venderá mejor el año que viene. 3. Si V. quiere ir con nosotros al campo verá el castillo de mi padre. Es V. muy fino, caballero; pero ya he visto ese castillo. 4. ¿ Se levantará V. temprano mañana? Esto dependerá de las circunstancias. Si me acuesto temprano hoy, me levantaré temprano entonces. 5. ¿ Comerá V. mañana con nosotros? Si V. hace preparar el plato que me gusta comeré con V. 6. ¿ Divisó V. de lejos á aquel hombre? No había necesidad de divisarlo de lejos, porque pasé á orillas del río. 7. ¿ De dónde tomó V. ese libro? Lo tomé del cuarto de la amiga de V. 8. ¿ Por qué se queja Carlos de su hermana? Porque ella le ha cogido las plumas. 9. ¿ De quiénes son estos buenos libros? Les pertenecen á Guillermo y Juan. 10. ¿ Es V. de Francia? No, caballero, soy de Alemania. 11. ¿ Sentiría V. que su señora madre llegara hoy? No lo sentiría; pero lo sentiría si viniese sin avisarme. 12. ¿ Dónde estaba V. cuando ella se fué? Estaba en mi cuarto; pero lo siento mucho, porque deseaba verla.

EXERCISE

1. What has become of your uncle? I shall tell you what has become of him 2. Why do you not sit down? If you will stay with me I shall sit down; but if you go, I shall go along with you. 3. Will you tell me what has become of your sister? I shall tell you what has become of her. 4. Is she dead? She is not dead. 5. Are your parents still alive? They are dead. 6. Why do you open the door? Do you not see how it smokes here? 7. Did you often go fishing when you were in that country? We often went fishing and hunting. 8. When did you see my father's castle? I saw it when I was traveling last year. 9. Can not everything be expressed in your language? Everything can be expressed, but not as in yours. 10. Will you love my children? If they are good, I shall love them. 11. Have you already read the letter which you received this morning? I have not yet opened it. 12. Is it useful to sucak much? That is according to circumstances; if one wishes to learn a foreign (extranjero) language it is useful to speak a great deal. 13. Is it useful to write everything that one says? That is useless. 14. What is your name? My name is William. 15. Who is right? They are both wrong. 16. How do you say that in Spanish? You say it thus. 17. Of what country is that lady? She is from France. 18. Are

you angry with any one? I am angry with Louisa, who went to the opera without saying a word to me about it. 19. Charles V., who spoke fluently several European languages, used to say, (soler decir.) that we should speak (que se debía hablar) Spanish with the gods, Italian with our friend, (fem.), French with our friend, (masc.), German with soldiers, English with geese, (gansos,) Hungarian (húngaro) with horses, and Bohemian (bohemio) with the devil, (el diablo).

SIXTY-SECOND LESSON-Lección Sexagésimasegunda

As to, as for, concerning.

As to me.

to say.

En cuanto á. (En cuanto á mí.

Por lo que á mí me toca.

As to that, I do not know what En cuanto á eso, no sé qué decir.

I do not know what to do.

I do not know where to go.

He does not know what to an swer.

We do not know what to buy.

To die of a disease.

She died of the smallpox.

The smallpox.

The fever.

The intermittent fever.

The apoplexy.

He had a cold fit. He has an ague.

His fever has returned.

He has been stricken with apoplexy.

To strike. Sure.

I am sure of that.

I am sure that she has arrived.

I am sure of it.

No sé qué (cosa) hacer.

No sé adónde ir.

He does not know what to an- Él no sabe qué (cosa) responder.

No sabemos qué (cosa) comprar. Morir (morirse) de una enfermedad.

Ella murió de las viruelas.

Las viruelas.

Calentura. Fiebre.

La terciana.

La apoplejía.

El tuvo un ataque de fiebre.

Él tiene calentura.

Le ha vuelto la fiebre.

Él ha tenido un ataque de apoplejía.

Le ha dado una apoplejía.

Herir. Golpear. Dar.

Seguro.

Estoy seguro de eso, (de ello).

Estoy seguro de que ella ha llegado.

Estoy seguro de ello.

Something has happened.

What has happened ?

To shed.

To pour out.

A tear.

To shed tears.

To pour out a drink.

I pour out a drink for that man. With tears in his, her, our, my eyes.

Sweet. Mild.

Sour. Acid.

Some sweet wine.

A mild aspect.

A mild zephyr.

A soft sleep.

Nothing makes life more agreeable than the society of, and intercourse with our friends.

To repair to.

regiment.

An army.

A regiment.

I repaired to that place.

He repaired there.

To cry. To scream. To shriek.

To help. The help.

I help him to do that. I help you to write.

I shall help you to work.

To cry for help.

To inquire after some one.

Will you have the goodness to

pass me that plate?

you please !

Algo ha sucedido. ¿ Qué ha sucedido !

> Derramar. Echar.

Una lágrima.

Derramar lágrimas.

Echar un trago.

Echo un trago á ese hombre. Con lágrimas en los ojos.

Dulce. Apacible.

Agrio. Ácido.

Vino dulce.

Un semblante apacible.

Un dulce céfiro.

Un dulce sueño.

Nada hace la vida más agradable que la compañía y el trato de nuestros amigos.

Ir á alguna parte. Volver á. To repair to the army, to one's Ir al ejército, volverse á su regimiento.

Un ejército.

Un regimiento.

Fuí á ese lugar.

Él fué allá.

Gritar. Dar gritos. Chillar.

Ayudar. Socorrer.

El socorro. La ayuda. La asistencia.

Le ayudo á hacer eso.

Le ayudo á V. á escribir. Le ayudaré á V. á trabajar.

Pedir socorro á voces.

(Informarse de alguno.

Preguntar por.

L'Tiene V. la bondad de pasarme ese plato?

Me hace V. el favor de pasar ese plato ?

Will you pass me that plate, if (Gusta V. de pasarme ese plato? LSe servirá V. pasarme ese plato ?

If you please. Si V. gusta. As you please. At your pleasure.) Como V. guste. Como le guste As you like. áV. To knock at the door. Llamar á la puerta. Tocar á. Confiarse á (de) alguno. To trust some one. Tener confianza en alguno. Fiarse de alguno. To distrust one. Desconfiar de. Do you trust that man! Se fía V. de ese hombre! I do trust him. Me fío de él. He trusts me. Él se fía de mí. We must not trust everybody. No nos debemos fiar de todo el mundo. Everybody, (every one). Cada uno. Everybody, (all the world). Todo el mundo To laugh at something. Reirse de algo. I laugh at that. Me río de eso. We will laugh at it. Nos reiremos de ello. (Reirse de uno en sus barbas. To laugh in a person's face. Reirse de uno en sus bigotes. Nos reímos en su cara. We laughed in his face. To laugh at, to deride some Reirse de uno. Burlarse de one. uno. Se rieron Vds. de nosotros? Did you laugh at us? Les Se han reido Vds. de nosotros? (No nos reimos de Vds. We did not laugh at you. No nos hemos reído de Vds. Full. Lleno. A book full of errors. Un libro lleno de errores. Tener medios (proporción) de. To afford. Poder. ¿Tiene V. medios de comprar ese Can you afford to buy that horse? caballo ? l Puede V. comprar ese caballo ? I can not afford it. No tengo medios. No puedo. I can afford it. Tengo proporción. Puedo. Who is there? ¿ Quién está ahí ? It is I. Yo. Soy yo. Yo soy. It is not I. No soy. No soy yo.

Es él. Él es.

No es él. Él no es.

It is he.

It is not he.

When a verb has two pronouns for its subject, it is put in the plural, and takes the first person rather than the second, and the second rather than the third; as, You and I shall do it. V. y yo lo haremos; You and he will write the letters, Vosotros y él escribiréis las cartas.

You and I shall go into the V. y yo iremos al campo. country.

You will go to the country, and I V. irá al campo, y yo volveré á la shall return to city. ciudad.

A lady. Una señora.

What were you doing when your Qué hacia V. cuando su ayo tutor was here?

I was doing nothing.

I said nothing.

No decia nada.

No decia nada.

CONVERSACIÓN

1. ¿Cómo está su hermano de V.? Mi hermano ya no vive. Hace tres meses que murió. 2. ¿ Qué se ha hecho de la mujer que yo vi en la casa de su señora madre de V.? Murió esta mañana de apoplejía. 3. Ha ayudado V. á su padre á escribir sus cartas? Yo le he ayudado. 4. ¿ Tendrá V. la bondad de prestarme aquel plato? Con mucho gusto. 5. ¿Quiere V. que yo le pase el pan á su hermana? V. le dará mucho gusto á ella si se lo pasa. 6. ¿ Quién llama á la puerta? Es un extranjero. 7. ¿Ya ha engañado ese malvado á alguien? Ha engañado á algunos comerciantes que le han fiado. 8. ¿ Tiene el hermano de V. medios para comprar una casa grande ? No los tiene. 9. ¿ Recibió V. mi La recibí ayer con mucho gusto. 10. ¿ Eres tú, Carlos, quien ha manchado mi libro? No fui vo: fué su hermanita de V. quien lo ha manchado. 11. ¿ Aprenderá V. el español? Mi hermano y yo lo aprenderemos. 12. ¿ Qué le ha dicho á V. mi hermano? Me ha dicho que él sería el hombre más feliz del mundo si supiera la lengua española, una de las más útiles de todas las lenguas para los americanos en la actualidad.

EXERCISE

1. Of what illness did your sister die? She died of fever. 2. How is your friend's mother? She is not well; she had an attack of ague the day before yesterday, and this morning the fever has returned. 3. Do your pupils learn their exercises by heart? They would rather tear them up than learn them by heart. 4. Why does the mother of our old servant shed tears? What has happened to her? She sheds tears because the old clergymen, (eclesiástico), her friend, who was so very good to her, (que la favorecía tanto), died a few days ago. 5. Of what illness did he die? He was stricken with apoplexy. 6. Have you inquired about the merchant who sells so cheap? I have asked about him, but nobody could tell me what has become of him. 7. How does your sister like those apples? (la manzana). She likes them very much, but she says that they are a little too sweet. 8. Shall I pass you this fish? Thanks, if you will do me the favor to pass it. 9. What dost thou ask me for? Will you be kind enough to (tenga V. la bondad) give me a little bit (un pedacito) of that mutton? 10. Why do you not eat? I do not know what to eat. 11. What has happened to you? Nothing has happened to me. 12. Must I sell to that man on credit? You can (poder) sell to him, but not on credit; you must not trust him, for he will not pay you. 13. Do those merchants trust you? They trust me and I trust them. 14. Why do those people laugh at us? They laugh at us because we speak badly; we ought to correct our mistakes, (faltas). 15. Can you afford to buy a horse and a carriage? I can afford it. 16. Have you already received Caledrón's and Moratín's works? I have received those of Moratín: as to those of Calderón, I hope to receive them next week. 17. Are they the ladies about whom you have spoken to me? They are. 18. Shall we go to the country tomorrow? I shall go to the country, and you will remain in town. 19. What did you say when your tutor was scolding you? I said nothing because I had nothing to say, for I had not done my task, and he was in the right to scold me.

SIXTY-THIRD LESSON-Lección Sexagésimatercera

Between, among, amid.

To make some one's acquaintance.

To become acquainted with some-

I have made his or her acquaint-)

I have become acquainted with him or her.

To be acquainted with.

Are you acquainted with him? Lo conoce V.? La conoce V.? (her).

I know him, (her). The acquaintance.

He is an acquaintance of mine.

She is my acquaintance.

acquaintance.

To enjoy.

Do you have good health !

To be well. She is well.

To imagine.

Entre.

Entablar (hacer) conocimiento con alguno.

Tener trato con alguno.

He entablado conocimiento con él, or con ella.

He hecho amistad con él, or con ella.

Conocer. (See verbs in cer.)

Yo lo (la) conozco.

El conocido. La conocida.

Es un conocido mío. Es conocida mía.

He is not a friend, he is but an No es amigo, sólo es conocido mío.

Gozar.

1 Goza V. de buena salud ?

Estar bueno. Ella está buena.

Imaginar. Imaginarse.

Conocer has the sense of to become acquainted with; saber means to know, to have knowledge of:

I know that gentleman.

I know that he is a good man.

To resemble some one.

To look like some one.

That man resembles my brother.

We resemble each other.

They do not resemble each other. The two brothers love each other.

We are.

Conozco á ese caballero.

Sé que es hombre de bien. Parecerse á uno. Parecer.

Asemejarse á uno.

Ese hombre se parece á mi her-

Nos parecemos el uno al otro.

No se parecen el uno al otro. Los dos hermanos se aman uno á otro.

Are you pleased with each other? ¿Están Vds. satisfechos el uno del otro? (or uno de otro).

Sí. Estamos.

As, or as well as.

The appearance, the countenance. La apariencia. El semblante. Face.

To show a disposition to.

That man whom you see shows a desire to approach us.

To look pleased with some one. To look cross at some one.

When I go to see that man, instead of receiving me with pleasure, he looks displeased.

A good-looking man.

A bad-looking man.

To go to see some one. To pay some one a visit. To frequent a place.

To associate with some one. To look like, to appear. How does he look ? He looks gay (sad, contented).

You appear very well.

You look like a doctor.

It is all over with me.

It is all over.

A place.

I know a good place in which to Conozco un buen sitio para nadar. swim.

To experience, to undergo.

I have passed through a great many misfortunes.

Como. Así como. Tan biencomo.

Cara, rostro.

Manifestar una intención de.

Parecer deseoso de.

Ese hombre que V. ve parece deseoso de acercarse á nosotros.

Mostrar (hacer) buena cara.

Mostrar (hacer) mala cara.

Cuando voy á ver á ese hombre, en vez de recibirme con gusto, me muestra (me pone) mala cara.

Un hombre de buen parecer, (de buena traza).

Un hombre de mal parecer, (de mala traza).

Ir á ver á alguno.

Hacer una visita á alguno.

Frecuentar un paraje. Concurrir á.

Frecuentar á uno.

Tener semblante. Parecer.

¿Qué semblante tiene ?

Tiene semblante alegre, (triste contento).

V. tiene muy buen semblante.

(V. parece médico.

V. tiene traza de médico.

Acabóse todo (para mí) para conmigo.

Acabóse.

Un lugar. Un paraje. Un sitio,

Experimentar. Padecer.

Pasar por.

He padecido muchos infortunios. He pasado por muchas desgra-

Sufrir. Padecer.

L Sufres (padeces) tú?

To suffer. Dost thou suffer ! I do suffer. He suffers.

I felt a pain in my eye.

To neglect. To vield. We must yield to necessity.

To spring forward.

The cat springs upon the rat. To leap on horseback.

To lose one's wits.

That man has lost his wits, and he does not know what to do.

Obstinately, by all means.

That man wishes by all means to lend me money.

To follow.

lows.

To pursue.

To preserve, to save.

Padezco. Sufro. Él sufre. Él padece. To feel a pain in one's head or (Tener dolor de cabeza. Padecer de la cabeza (del pie). (He padecido de los ojos. He tenido mal de ojos. Descuidar de. Ceder. Rendirse. Sujetarse. Se debe ceder á la necesidad. Saltar. Abalanzarse á. Echarse sobre. El gato se abalanza á la rata. Saltar sobre un caballo. Perder la cabeza.

>) Írsele á uno la cabeza. Ese hombre ha perdido la cabeza, (el juicio,) y no sabe qué hacer.

Á ese hombre se le ha ido la cabeza, y no sabe qué hacer. Por fuerza. Positivamente.

À toda fuerza. Absolutamente. Ese hombre quiere absolutamente (por fuerza) prestarme dinero.

Seguir.* I follow, thou followest, he fol- Sigo. Sigues. Sigue.

> Perseguir.* Preservar. Ahorrar.

CONVERSACIÓN

1. Si V. continúa asociándose con esas gentes le saldrá mal, puesto que tienen muchos enemigos. 2. ¿Ve V. á aquellos hombres que parecen estar deseosos de aproximarse á nosotros? Los veo; pero no los temo, porque no hacen mal á nadie. 3. ¿ Quiere V. esperarme fuera de la puerta de la ciudad? Le aguardaré á V. allí; pero le suplico que no lo olvide. 4. ¿ Por qué no vino V. á comer? He estado impedido, pero Vds. han podido comer sin mí. 5. Á un cierto hombre le gustaba el vino, pero halló en él dos malas cualidades; por que decía: "Si le mezclo agua," lo echo á perder y si no se la mezclo, él me echa á perder á mí. 6. ¿ Cómo está su tía de V.? Está muy bien; casi nunca se enferma. 7. ¿ Es bueno reirse así de todo el mundo? Si me río de la casaca de V. no me río de todo el mundo. 8. ¿ Por qué no bebe V.? No sé qué beber, porque me gusta beber el vino bueno, y el de V. parece vinagre. 9. ¿ Ha conocido V. durante mucho tiempo á mi padre? Poco tiempo ha que lo conozco, porque sólo llegué á conocerlo la semana pasada. 10. ¿ Por qué parece V. tan triste? Me han sucedido muchas desgracias. Después de haber perdido todo mi dinero, he sido apaleado por unos hombres de muy mal parecer, y para mi mayor desgracia, me dicen que mi buen tío, á quien amo tanto, ha tenido un ataque de apoplejía.

EXERCISE

1. Why do you associate with those people? I associate with them because they are useful to me. 2. Do you know a good place in which to swim? I know one. Where is it? On that side of the river, behind the wood, near the highway, (el camino real). 3. When shall we go to swim? This afternoon, if you like. 4. Why does your cousin ask me for money and books? Because he is imprudent; of me, (á mí,) his most intimate friend, he asks nothing. 5. How long (hasta qué hora) did you wait for me? We waited for you till a quarter past seven; and, as you did not come, we dined without you. 6. How does your uncle look? He looks very gay, for he is much pleased with his children. 7. Do vou like your sister? I like her very much; and, as she is very good-natured (es muy cariñosa) with me I am so to her; but how do you like yours? We love each other, because we are pleased with each other. 8. Do your sisters resemble each other? They do not resemble each other; for the elder (mayor) is idle and naughty, and the younger (la menor) good-natured with everybody. 9. Is that man angry with you? I think he is angry with me because I do not go to see him; but I do not like to go to his house, for when I go to him, instead of receiving me with pleasure, he

 $\mathsf{Digitized} \ \mathsf{by} \ Google$

looks displeased. 10. He is the best man in the world; but one must know him in order to appreciate him. 11. There is a great difference (la diferencia) between you and him; you appear to be pleased with all those who come to see you, and he looks cross at them. 12. Does your son resemble any one? He resembles no one. 13. If you wish to have some wine I shall go down (bajar) into the cellar to fetch you some. You are too polite, Sir; I shall drink no more to-day. 14. Whenever I had not written my exercises he wrote them for me, and when he had not written his I did them for him. 15. Why does your father send for the physician? He is ill, and as the physician does not come he sends for him.

SIXTY-FOURTH LESSON-Lección Sexagésimacuarta

How, how much, and how many, in exclamatory sentences, are translated by cuan and que, before adjectives, and cuanto, or cuantos before nouns.

[] Cuán! | Qué!

l'Cuánto! | Cuántos!

¡Cuán dichoso es V.!

Agradecérselo á uno.

se ha tomado por mí.

Estimárselo á uno.

How!

How happy you are!

der obligation.

have taken for me.

To thank some one for something.

(¡Cuán bueno es V.! How good you are! Cuánta bondad tiene V. ! How foolish he is! t Cuán necio es! How foolish she is! ¡ Cuán necia es ella! ¡Cuán rico es ese hombre! ¡ Cuántas riquezas tiene ese hom-How rich that man is! bre! How handsome that woman is! : Cuán hermosa es esa señora! Deber atenciones. To be under obligations to some Tener obligaciones. one. Estar obligado á uno. Le debo (le tengo) muchas aten-I am under many obligations to him. Le estoy muy obligado. How many people! ¡ Cuánta gente!

I thank you for the trouble you Le agradezco á V. el trabajo que

To thank, to be obliged, to be un- (Agradecer, dar gracias.

Is there anything more grand? Is there anything more cruel? Is there anything more wicked?

¿Qué cosa hay más grande?

¿ Qué cosa hay más cruel?

¿Qué cosa peor hay? (más mala hay).

Can anything be more handsome?

How large? Of what size? How high? Of what height? How deep? Of what depth?

¿Qué cosa más hermosa puede haber ?

LDe qué tamaño ₹

De qué alto? De qué altura?

De qué profundidad?

The verb tener is used in giving age or dimensions.

Of what height is her house?

It is nearly fifty feet high.

Our house is thirty feet wide.

That river is twenty feet deep.

The size.

Of what size is that man ?

How was that child dressed? He was dressed in green. The man with the blue coat. The woman with the red gown.

The truth.

It is true (lit., it is a truth) that Es verdad que su casa se ha quehis house is burnt.

> It is true. It is not (true). Is it not ? (true).

> > Perhaps.

I shall perhaps go there. To share. To divide. Whose horse is this? It is mine. It belongs to me. Whose horses are these? They are mine. They belong to me. Son mios.

¿Cuánto tiene de alto (de altura) la casa de ella?

¿ Qué altura tiene la casa de ella ? Tiene cerca de cincuenta pies de alto, (de altura).

Nuestra casa tiene treinta pies de ancho, (de anchura).

Ese río tiene veinte pies de profundo, (de profundidad).

El tamaño. El talle. La estatura. (¿Qué tamaño tiene ese hombre? La De qué tamaño es ese hombre?

¿Cómo estaba vestido ese niño? Estaba vestido de verde.

El hombre de la casaca azul. La mujer del vestido encarnado.

mado.

Es verdad.

La verdad.

No es verdad. No es verdad?

Quizá. Quizás. Acaso. Por ventura. Tal vez.

Quizá iré allá.

Partir. Dividir. Participar.

LDe quién es ese caballo ? Es mío.

De quién son estos caballos ?

not, (no es verdad)?" Milton asked an Italian. "Not so many as when you were there," answered the Italian. 11. Is it true that your uncle has arrived? I assure you that he has arrived. 12. Will you dine with us? I can not dine with you, for I have just eaten. 13. Have they succeeded in extinguishing the fire? They have at last succeeded in it; but it is said that several houses were burnt. 14. What has happened? A great misfortune has happened. What is the day before Monday called? The day before Monday is Sunday.

SIXTY-FIFTH LESSON-Lección Sexagésimaquinta

To propose, purpose.

I purpose going on a journey.

party.

A game at chess.

A game at billiards.

A game at cards.

To succeed.

Do you succeed in doing that? I do succeed in it.

To endeavor.

I endeavor to do it.

I endeavor to succeed in it. Endeavor to do better.

Since, considering.

complain? To be thoroughly acquainted Conocer una cosa á fondo.

with a thing.

acquainted with a thing.

ness perfectly.

(Proponer.* Proponerse.*

Hacer cuenta de.

Me propongo hacer un viaje. Hago cuenta de hacer un viaje.

He intends joining a hunting Intenta juntarse á una partida de caza.

Una partida de ajedrez.

(Una partida de billar.

Una mesa de billar.

(Un juego de cartas.

Una partida de naipes.

(Conseguir.* Alcanzar.

Lograr. Salir bien.

Logra V. hacer eso?

Sí, logro hacerlo.

Esforzarse.* Procurar, Intentar.

Procuro hacerlo.

Procuro lograrlo.

Esfuerce V. hacer mejor.

Ya que. Pues que. Puesto que.

Since you are happy, why do you Ya que es V. dichoso, por qué se queja ?

To make one's self thoroughly Enterarse á fondo en (de) una

That man understands that busi- Ese hombre conoce á fondo ese asunto, (ese negocio).

Since or from. Desde. From that time. Desde ese tiempo. From my childhood. Desde mi niñez, (infancia). From morning until night. Desde por la mañana hasta la noche. From the beginning to the end. Desde el principio hasta el fin. From here to there. Desde aquí hasta allí. I have had that book for two Ya van dos años que tengo ese libro. vears. Soplar. Apagar. To blow, to blow out. To reduce. Reducir. To produce. Producir. See verbs in ucir. To translate. Traducir. To introduce. Introducir. Destruir. To destroy. See verbs in uir. To construct. Construir. To reduce the price. Reducir (bajar) el precio. To translate from Spanish into Traducir del español al inglés. English. Le introduzco en su casa de V. I introduce him to you. Yo se lo presento á V. Mismo. Misma. Self, selves. Mismos. Mismas. Yo mismo. Yo misma. Myself. Tú mismo. Tú misma. Thyself. Él mismo. Sí mismo. Himself. Herself. Ella misma. Sí misma. Nosotros mismos. Nosotras mis-Ourselves. mas. (V. mismo. V. misma. Yourself. Sí mismo. Sí misma. Vds. mismos. Vds. mismas. Sí mismos. Sí mismas. Yourselves. Vosotros mismos. Vosotras mismas. One's self. Sí mismo. He himself has told it me. Él mismo me lo ha dicho. He has told it me, (to myself, not Él me lo ha dicho á mí mismo. to another person).

One does not like to flatter him- No gusta uno de lisonjearse á

sí mismo.

self.

Even. Not ---- even. Ni ---- aun. He has not even money enough No tiene bastante dinero aun to buy some bread. para comprar pan. We must love everybody, even Debemos amar á todo el mundo, our enemies. aun á nuestros enemigos. Otra vez. Again, (anew). De nuevo. Volver á Habla otra vez. Habla segunda He speaks again. Vuelve á hablar. To fall. Caer. Baiar. The price of the merchandise falls. Baja el precio de las mercaderías. Deducir. Rebajar. To deduct. Sobrecargar. To overcharge, to ask too much. { cio. Not having overcharged you, I No habiéndole puesto á V. muy can not deduct anything. precio) no puedo rebajar nada. Una vara. A yard. A mile. Una milla.

A league. To produce, (to yield, to profit).

How much does that employment ¿Cuánto le produce á V. al año yield you a year?

An employment. To make one's escape. To run away, flee.

To take to one's heels.

To desert. The thief has run away. By no means.

Not at all.

Poner alguna cosa á mucho pre-

subido el precio (muy alto el

Una legua.

Dar. Vender. (Producir.

Tener. Ganar.

ese empleo ?

Un empleo. Escaparse. Huir. Huir. Escaparse.

Apretar los talones.

Poner los pies en polvorosa. Tomar las de Villadiego.

Desertar.

El ladrón se ha escapado.

De ningún modo.

No del todo. De ningún modo.

Nada de eso.

CONVERSACIÓN

1. V. me lisonjea. No; le aseguro á V. que yo estaría muy satisfecho si todos mis discípulos trabajaran tan bien

como V. 2. ¿Tendré yo el gusto de ver á V. mañana? Si V. quiere, yo vendré. 3. V. tendría alguna compasión de los pobres, v no sería tan sordo á sus ruegos, si hubiera estado en la misma miseria alguna vez. 4. i No han podido salvar ninguna cosa sus hermanos de V.? Estuvieron muy afortunados en salvar á las personas que estaban en la casa. pero de las cosas que estaban allí, no han podido salvar ninguna. 5. ¿ Cuánto vale ese paño? Se lo vendo á V. á tres duros la vara. 6. ¿ Tendrá V. la bondad de enseñarme algunas piezas de paño inglés? Con mucho gusto se lo muestro. 7. ¿ Qué le manda á V. hacer su maestro de español ? Me hace leer una lección, después me hace traducir ejercicios ingleses al español de la lección que me ha puesto (set) á leer: v desde el principio hasta el fin de la lección me habla en español y me obliga á responderle en la misma lengua. 8. ¿ Enseña también el alemán su maestro de V.? Sí. lo enseña. 9. 1 Cuántos ejercicios traduce V. al día? Si los ejercicios no son difíciles traduzco de tres á cuatro cada día; y cuando lo son, traduzco solamente uno. 10. ¿ Cuánto le da ese empleo á su padre de V.? Le da más de cuatro mil pesos. 11. ¿ Por qué se ríen algunas personas cuando hablo? Son gentes impolíticas. 12. ¿ Por qué se queja su señorita hermana de V.? No sé por qué, pues logra tanto cuanto quiere, y es feliz, y aun más feliz que nosotros. Tal vez se que ja porque no está perfectamente impuesta de ese negocio. Eso puede ser.

EXERCISE

1. Well, (y bien,) does your sister make any progress? She would make some, if she were as assiduous as you. 2. Why do not you go out to-day? I should go out if it were fine weather. 3. Will you have occasion (occasión) to go to town this evening? I do not know, but I should go now if I had an opportunity. 4. Man would not experience so much misery in his career. (la carrera.) and he would not be so unhappy, if he were not so blind, (ciego). 5. Why has not your sister written her exercises? She would have written them if she had not been prevented. 6. Do you already know what has happened? I have not heard anything. The

house of our neighbor has been burnt down. 7. Who has told you that? Our neighbor himself has told me it. 8. Why are you without a light? The wind blew it out as you came in. 9. Has not the price of cloth fallen? It has not fallen; the price of all goods has fallen, except that of cloth. 10. In learning a foreign language, is it useful to translate? It is useful to translate when you almost know the language you are studying; but while you do not yet know anything it is entirely useless. 11. Have you paid a visit to my aunt? I went to see her two months ago, and as she looked displeased, I have not gone again since that time. 12. How do you like that soup? I think it is very bad; but since I have lost my appetite, (el apetito,) I do not like anything. 13. If you did as I do you would speak well. You must study a little every day, and you will soon be no longer afraid to speak. 14. Why does your sister complain? I do not know; since she succeeds in everything. and is happy, even happier than you and I.

SIXTY-SIXTH LESSON-Lección Sexagésimasexta

Kind, sort, (species).

What kind of fruit is that?

A stone, (of a fruit).

A stone of a peach, an apricot, a Un hueso de melocotón. albariplum.

Stoned fruit.

One must break the stone to get Es necesario romper el hueso para at the kernel.

A kernel.

An almond.

Kerneled fruit.

To gather.

I gather, I was gathering, I shall Cojo. Cogía. Cogeré. gather.

To gather fruit. To serve the soup.

To bring in the dessert.

The fruit.

An apricot.

Género. Especie. Clase. ¿ Qué especie de fruta es esa!

Hueso, (de fruta).

coque, ciruela.

Fruta de hueso.

conseguir la almendra.

Una pepita. Una almendra.

Una almendra. Fruta de pepita.

Coger.

Coger fruta. Servir la sopa. Servir el postre.

> La fruta. Un albaricoque.

A peach. A plum. An anecdote. Roast meat.

The last.

Last week.

To cease, to leave off. I leave off reading.

She leaves off speaking.

To avoid. To escape.

To escape a misfortune. He ran away to avoid death. To deprive one's self, to do with-

Can you do without bread?

I can do without it.

ont.

There are many things which we Hay muchas cosas sin las cuales must do without.

To execute a commission. To discharge a commission.

I have executed your commission.

Have you executed my commis- Ha cumplido V. con mi encargo? sion ?

I have executed it.

To do one's duty.

To discharge, to do, or to fulfill \ one's duty.

That man always does his duty. That man always fulfills his duty.

To rely, to depend upon something.

He depends upon it.

I rely upon it.

You may rely upon him.

Un melocotón, un durazno.

Una ciruela. Una anécdota.

El asado.

(El último. La última.

Pasado. Pasada.

La semana pasada, (última).

Cesar. Parar. Dejar de. Ceso de leer.

Ella cesa de hablar.

Evitar. Escapar.

Evitar una desgracia.

Se huyó para evitar la muerte.

Privarse de. Pasar sin.

🕻 Puede V. pasarlo sin pan 🕈 🕽 i Puede V. privarse de pan 🕈

(Puedo pasarlo sin él. Me puedo privar de él.

se puede pasar. Cumplir con un encargo. Ejecutar una comisión. Hacer una comisión.

He cumplido con su encargo de V.

(comisión).

He cumplido con él, (ella).

Cumplir con su obligación, (deber).

Hacer su deber.

Ese hombre cumple siempre con su obligación.

Contar con. Confiar en.

Él confía en eso. Cuento con eso.

V. puede contar con él, (confiar en él).

To suffice, to be sufficient. Is that bread sufficient for you? It is sufficient for me. Will that money be sufficient for ¿Será suficiente ese dinero para that man ?

It will be sufficient for him.

To add.

To build.

To embark, to go on board.

A sail.

To set sail.

To set sail for.

To set sail for America. To sail.

Under full sail.

To set under full sail.

He embarked on the sixteenth of Se embarcó el diez y seis del mes last month.

stant.

The instant, the present month.

The fourth or fifth instant.

The letter is dated the sixth in- La carta lleva fecha del seis del stant.

That is to say, (i. e.).

Et cætera, (etc., &c.).

My pen is better than yours. I write better than you.

Dinner (or supper) is on the table.

Shall I help you some soup? little.

To serve, to attend.

Bastar. Ser bastante, (suficiente). Le basta á V. ese pan ?

Sí. Me basta.

ese hombre ?

Será suficiente para él. (Añadir. Acrecentar.*

Aumentar.

Edificar, Fabricar,

(Embarcar. Embarcarse.

lr á bordo.

Una vela.

Hacer vela. Hacerse á la vela.

Hacer vela para.

Hacerse á la vela para la América.

Navegar.

Á velas llenas. Á velas tendidas. Andar á buena vela.

pasado. He sailed on the thirteenth in- Se hizo á la vela el trece del corriente.

El corriente.

corriente.

El cuatro ó cinco del corriente.

Es decir. Á saber. Es á saber.

Et cétera, (etc., &a.).

Mi pluma es mejor que la de V.

Escribo mejor que V.

La comida (ó la cena) está en la mesa.

¿Le serviré á V. un poco de sopa? Do me the favor to give me a Hágame V. el favor de darme un poco.

(Servir. Servirse. Poner en la mesa.

CONVERSACIÓN

1. Si V. hubiera estudiado sus lecciones mejor, no tendría miedo de hablar: porque para hablar bien es menester que

se sepa, y es muy natural que el que no sabe bien lo que ha aprendido, sea corto. 2. Vengo á darle á V. los buenos días. V. es muy bondadoso. 3. Necesito quinientos duros, y suplico á V. que me los preste. Se los devolveré á V. luego que haya recibido mi dinero. 4. ¿ Comerá V. de este carnero? Dová V. las gracias, pero me gusta más el pollo. 5. ¿ Le ofrezco á V. un traguito de vino? Agradezco á V. que me lo dé. 6. ¿Le gusta á V. la fruta? Me gusta la fruta, pero no tengo más apetito. 7. ¿ Puede V. pasarse sin jabón? En cuanto al iabón, puedo pasarme sin él; pero es menester que tenga una toalla para enjugarme las manos. 8. ¿ Por qué no han procurado sus hermanos de V. mejor caballo? Si ellos se hubieran deshecho de su caballo viejo, habrían procurado uno mejor. 9. 4 Ha ejecutado su hermano de V. el encargo que le dí? Lo ha ejecutado. 10. Buenos días, hijos míos. han hecho Vds. sus tareas? V. sabe muy bien que las hacemos siempre, puesto que sería necesario que estuviésemos enfermos para no hacerlas. 11. ¿ Procurarán Vds. no hacer faltas? Procuraremos no hacer ninguna. 12. 1 Me promete V. hablar á su hermano? Se lo prometo á V., y puede contar conmigo.

EXERCISE

1. I should like to know why I can not speak as well as you? I shall tell you; you would speak quite as well as I, if you were not so bashful, (corto). 2. Would you do me a favor? Tell me what you wish; for I should do anything (cualquier cosa) to oblige you, (servirle). 3. Will you ask your brother whether (si) he is satisfied with the money which I have sent him? As to my brother, he is satisfied with it, but I am not; for having suffered shipwreck (naufragar), I am in want of the money which you owe me. 4. Have they served the soup? They served it some minutes ago. 5. Shall I help you to some of this roast meat? I shall trouble you for a little. 6. Have they already brought in the dessert? They have brought it in. 6. What kind of fruit is that? It is stoned fruit. 7. Will you wash your hands? I should like to wash them, but I have no towel with which to wipe them. 8. Will you do me the favor to give me a little water? Here

is some. 9. Why did that man run away? Because he had no other means of escaping the punishment (castigo) which he deserved, (merecer). 10. Has your father arrived already ! Not yet, but we hope that he will arrive this very day, (hoy mismo). 11. Have you executed my commission? I have executed it. 12. Will you ask the merchant whether (si) he will sell me the horse at the price that I offered him? I am sure that he would be satisfied, if you would add a few dollars more. 13. What lesson do you give us to-day? give you the sixty-sixth lesson, and the exercise belonging to it. 14. When did your brother embark for America? He sailed on the 30th of last month. Will you work better (mejor) in the next lesson than you have done for this? shall work better.

SIXTY-SEVENTH LESSON-Lección Sexagésimaséptima

To be a judge of. Are you a judge of cloth? I am a judge of it. To draw.

To trace, (to counterdraw).

To draw a landscape. To draw after life.

> The drawing. The drawer. Nature.

To manage

How do you manage to make a ¿Cómo hace V. para encender fire without tongs?

I do it thus.

You go about it the wrong way. I go about it the right way.

How does your brother manage ¿De qué modo procura su herto do that ?

Skillfully. Handily. Dexterously. Cleverly. Entender de. Poder juzgar de. Lentiende V. de paños? Sí. Entiendo. Dibujar. Bosquejar.

Dibujar con yeso. Trazar. Delinear. Calcar.

Dibujar un paisaje. Dibujar al natural. El dibujo.

El dibujador. El dibujante.

La naturaleza

(Conocedor de.

(Manejar. Hacer para. Procurar. Lograr.

lumbre sin tenazas ?

Lo hago de esta manera. V. lo hace mal, (al revés).

Lo hago bien.

mano de V. hacer eso ?

Diestramente. Mañosamente. Hábilmente,

Digitized by Google

Awkwardly.

Unhandily. Badly.

To forbid.

I forbid you to do that.

To lower, to cast down. To cast down one's eye.

The curtain.

The curtain rises—falls.

The stocks have fallen.

The day falls.

Night comes on.

It grows dark.

It grows late.

To stoop.

To smell.

To feel.

It smells of garlic.

To feel some one's pulse.

To consent to a thing.

I consent to it.

To hide, to conceal.

The mind.

Indeed.

In fact.

The effect.

True.

It is true, (a truth).

A true man.

To think much of, (to esteem),

To esteem.

I do not think much of that man.

I esteem him much.

The case.

The flower, the bloom, the blos- La flor. som.

Desmañadamente. Toscamente. Torpemente. Malamente.

Prohibir.

Le prohibo á V. hacer eso.

Bajar.

Bajar los ojos.

La cortina. El telón.

(La cortina se levanta, (baja).

El telón se levanta, (se baja).

Los fondos públicos han baiado.

El día cae. El sol se pone.

Anochece. Se hace noche. Obscurece.

Se hace tarde.

Encorvarse. Inclinarse.

Bajarse.

Oler.*

Sentir.*

Huele á ajo.

Tomar el pulso de alguno.

Consentir.*

Consiento en ello.

Esconder, Ocultar, El entendimiento. La mente.

En verdad. Á la verdad.

En efecto.

El efecto.

Verdadero.

Es verdad.

Un hombre sincero.

Hacer gran (or mucho) caso de.

Hacer estimación.

Estimar á. Apreciar.

Yo no hago gran caso de ese

No tengo en mucho á ese hombre.

Le estimo mucho.

El caso.

On a level with, even with. That house is on a level with the Esa casa está á flor de agua. water.

To blossom, (to flourish).

To grow. To grow tall.

can even see it.

Corn. Maize.

A cover.

A shelter.

A cottage. A hut.

To shelter one's self from something.

To take shelter from something. Let them shelter themselves from the rain, the wind.

Let us enter that cottage to shelter Entremos en esa choza para guaourselves from the storm, (the tempest).

Everywhere. All over. Throughout.

All over (throughout) the town.

A shade.

Under the shade.

Sit down under the shade of that Siéntese V. á la sombra de ese tree.

To pretend.

That man pretends to sleep.

That young lady pretends to know Spanish.

They pretend to come near us.

From morning. From the break of day.

From this time forward.

Á nivel de. Á flor de.

Echar flores. Florecer.

Crecer. (See verbs in cer, Elements.)

That child grows so fast that we Ese niño crece tan rápidamente que podemos verlo.

The rain has made the corn grow. La lluvia ha hecho crecer el grano.

Maíz.

Un albergue. Una posada. Una guarida. Un abrigo. (Una cabaña. Una choza, Jacal, (in Mexico).

Ponerse al abrigo (á cubierto) de alguna cosa. Abrigarse.

Pónganse al abrigo (á cubierto) de la lluvia, del viento.

recernos de la tempestad.

Por todo. Por toda. Por todos. Por todas. Por todas partes.

(Por toda la ciudad. Por todo el pueblo.

Una sombra. Á la sombra.

árbol.

Aparentar. Fingirse.

Hacerse. Hacer que, or como que.

(Ese hombre se finge dormido, Se hace (se finge) dormido.

Esa señorita hace que sabe el español.

Fingen acercarse á nosotros.

Desde la mañana. Desde el amanecer. Desde hoy en adelante.

As soon as. As soon as I see him I shall speak Así que lo vea (subi.) le hablaré. to him.

From the cradle. From a child.

For fear of.

To catch a cold.

catching a cold. He does not wish to go to town. Él no quiere ir á la ciudad por

for fear of meeting one of his creditors.

He does not wish to open his purse, for fear of losing his money.

To copy. To transcribe. To decline.

To make a clean copy. A substantive. An adjective.

A pronoun. A verb. A preposition.

A grammar. A dictionary.

Luego que. Así que.

Desde la cuna. Desde la nifiez. (Por miedo de. Por temor de. Por no.

Resfriarse.

I shall not go out for fear of No saldré por temor de resfriarme.

temor de encontrarse con uno de sus acreedores.

No quiere abrir su bolsa por miedo de perder su dinero.

Copiar. Transcribir.

Declinar.

Sacar en limpio. Copiar. Un adjetivo. Un substantivo. Un pronombre. Un verbo.

Una preposición.

Una gramática. Un diccionario.

CONVERSACIÓN

1. ¿ Quiere V. comprarme algunas varas de paño? Si V. me da el dinero, se lo compraré. V. me hará un favor. 2. ¿ Cómo hace V. para tener mercaderías sin dinero? Compro á crédito. 3. ¿ Almorzaremos hoy en el jardín? Hace tan buen tiempo hoy, que debemos aprovecharlo. 4. ¿ Por qué se agacha V.? Me agacho para levantar mi pañuelo. De quién tienen miedo sus hermanas de V.? Tienen miedo de su aya, que les regañó ayer porque no habían hecho sus tareas. 6. ¿ Cómo está su hijo de V.? Está muy bueno; V. no podrá conocerlo, porque ha crecido mucho en poco tiempo. 7. Se levanta el viento; ya hay truenos; ¿ los oye V.? Los oigo, pero la tempestad está muy lejos todavía. 8. ¿ Adónde iremos ahora? ¿ Qué camino tomaremos? El más corto será el mejor. 9. ¿ Quién es aquél que está sentado debajo del árbol? No lo conozco. Parece que quiere estar solo. puesto que cuando nos acercamos á él finge estar dormido. 10. ¿ Está lejos la tempestad? No tan lejos como á V. le

parece; vea V. como relampaguea. 11. ¿ Es lejos de aquí á Madrid? No es tan lejos como de aquí á París; pero el camino es malo y peligroso. 12. ¿ Á qué hora sale la luna esta noche? ¿ Quién sabe? Voy á preguntarle al maestro; él debe poder decírnoslo, puesto que es astrónomo.

EXERCISE

1. Are you a judge of cloth? I am a judge of it. 2. What must I take for to-morrow's lesson? You will make a clean copy of your exercise, write three others, and study the next lesson, (siguiente). 3. But how does your brother manage to study without a dictionary? He manages it very awkwardly; he reads, and looks for the words in his friend's dictionary. 4. Why does your sister cast down her eyes? She casts them down because she is ashamed of not having done her task. 5. How do you like that coffee? I like it very much. 6. Why do your sisters hide themselves? They would not hide themselves if they did not fear to be seen. 7. Have you already seen my son? I have not seen him yet; how is he? 8. Why does that man give nothing to the poor? He is too avaricious, (avaro); he does not wish to open his purse, for fear of losing his money. 9. What sort of weather is it? It is very warm; it is a long time since we had any rain; I believe we shall have a storm, (una tempestad). 10. What a shower! (qué aguacero). If we go into some place, we shall be sheltered from the storm. Let us go into that cottage then, (pues); we shall be sheltered there from the wind and the rain. 11. We have too much sun, and I am still very tired; let us sit down under the shade of that tree. 12. That gentleman is like your sister; he understands French very well, but when I begin to speak to him, he pretends not to understand me.

SIXTY-EIGHTH LESSON—Lección Sexagésimacetava THE PAST PERFECT.

This tense is formed with the imperfect of the auxiliary haber, and the past participle of a principal verb.

It describes a past action, state, or event as preceding some other

past action, state, or event; as, I had already finished my task when you came in-Ya había acabado mi tarea, cuando V. entró.

I had dined when he arrived.

You had lost your purse when I V. había perdido su bolsa cuando found mine.

Had you finished your exercise LHabía acabado V. su ejercicio when I came in ?

No. Sir, I had not finished it.

We had dined when it struck Habiamos comido cuando dieron

twelve.

wrote mine.

Yo había comido cuando él llegó.

hallé la mía.

cuando vo entré?

No, señor: no lo había acabado.

las doce.

I had read your letter when I Yo había leído la carta de V. cuando escribí la mía.

THE PRETERIT PERFECT

This tense is composed of the preterit of haber and a past participle, and is used to describe the same order of actions, states, or events as the past perfect, but only in connection with certain conjunctions:

As soon as

(Luego que. Así que. Al momento que. Después que. Cuando.

After. When. No sooner, scarcely.

Apenas.

doce.

It also usually expresses what is quickly completed, and in this respect partakes of the nature of the true preterit:

As soon as I had finished my work Luego que hube acabado mi I carried it to him.

trabajo se lo llevé á él.

As soon as I had dressed myself Así que me hube vestido salí.

I went out. When I had dined it struck Asi que hube comido dieron las

twelve. I had soon finished eating.

Pronto hube acabado de comer.

CONVERSACIÓN

1. ¿ Qué hiciste después de levantarte esta mañana? Cuando hube leído la carta del conde polaco salí para ver el teatro del Príncipe que todavía no había visto. 2. ¿ En dónde han estado Vds. desde que los vi? Nos quedamos en la orilla del mar hasta que llegó el barco que nos trajo á Francia. 3. Cuéntenos V. lo que le sucedió el otro día. Con

mucho gusto, pero bajo la condición de que Vds. me escuchen sin interrumpirme. 4. Estando en el teatro vi representar "La Pintura Parlante" y "La Mujer Llorosa." No divirtiéndome mucho esta última comedia fuí al concierto, en donde la música me dió una fuerte jaqueca. Dejé entonces el concierto maldiciéndolo, y me fuí en derechura á la casa de los locos, para ver á mi primo. 5. ¿ Y qué le sucedió allí? Entrando en el hospital de mi primo, quedé penetrado de horror al ver á algunos locos que se acercaron á mí saltando y aullando. 6. ¿ Qué hizo V, entonces? Ya quedamos en que Vds. no me interrumpirían; y ésta es la segunda vez que lo han hecho. Por eso no voy á acabar el cuento; se quedará para siempre envuelto en mi lengua. Pero amigo, V. debe saber que en esto hace mal. Nadie debe quejarse tan pronto. V. ha de saber que entre los hombres del mundo hay un modo de portarse muy diferente del que V. ha manifestado. 8. ¡ Av de mí! ¡ Perdónenme Vds., caballeros! ¡Qué facilmente me enojo! Sin embargo, reconozco mi flaqueza, v les pido perdón.

EXERCISE

1. What did you do when you had finished your letter ? I went to my brother, who took (llevar) me to the theater. where I had the pleasure of finding one of my friends whom I had not seen for ten years. 2. What did your father do when he had breakfasted? He shaved himself and went out. 3. When do you set out? I do not set out till tomorrow; for before I leave I shall once more see my good friends. 4. Where did your uncle go after he had warmed himself? He went nowhere. 5. At what time did he get up? He got up at sunrise. 6. What is it that distresses you? I am distressed by that accident. 7. When did your relation die ? He died last month. 8. What sort of weather was it when you were on the way to Vienna? It was very bad weather, for it was stormy, and snowed and rained very heavily, (á cántaros). 9. A peasant who observed that old men used spectacles to read, went to an optician (óptico) and asked for a pair. He then took a book, and having opened it, said the spectacles were not good. The optician

Digitized by Google

then put another pair of the best that he could find in his shop (la tienda) upon the peasant's nose; but he being still unable to read, the merchant said to him: "My friend, perhaps you can not read at all?" "If I could, (si yo supiera leer)," said the peasant, "I should not want your spectacles." 10. Henry IV. met one day in his palace (palacio) a man whom he did not know, and asked him to whom he belonged. "I belong to myself," replied this man. "My friend," said the king, "you have a stupid master." 11. On entering the hospital (hospital) of my cousin I was struck with horror (estar penetrado de horror) at seeing several madmen, (el loco,) who came up to me, jumping (saltar) and howling (aullar). What did you do then? I did the same; and they burst into laughter (echar á reir) as they were retiring.

SIXTY-NINTH LESSON-Lección Sexagésimanovena.

First, at first, at the beginning.

Firstly.

Secondly.

Thirdly, etc.

Is your mother at home? She is.

I am going to her house.

A cause.

A reason.

A motive.

A subject, cause.

Ready.

A cause of complaint.

She has reason to be sad.

Grief, sorrow, sadness.

Is that woman ready to go out?

She is.

Primero. Al principio.

Desde luego.

Primeramente. Primero.

En primer lugar.

Segundamente. Segundo.

En segundo lugar.

(Terceramente. Tercero.

En tercer lugar, etc.

¿ Está en casa su madre de V.? Sí, está. Sí, señor, (señora).

Voy á casa de ella. (Voy á su casa.)

Una causa.

Una razón.

Un motivo.

Un motivo.

Listo, pronto, dispuesto.

Un motivo de queja.

Ella tiene motivo de estar triste. Pesar. Pesadumbre. Tristeza. ¿ Está esa mujer lista para salir ?

Sí. está.

Notwithstanding, in spite of.

In spite of him, her, them.

To manage.

work every Saturday night? Try to do that, to oblige me.

No obstante. Sin embargo. A pesar de.

Á pesar de él, de ella, de ellos.

(Conseguir. Lograr. Procurar.

Do you manage to finish your A Consigue V. acabar su trabajo todos los sábados por la noche ? Procure V. hacer eso para ser-

Para with the infinitive mode, and para que with some tense of the subjunctive, expresses aim or design:

I shall do everything to oblige Lo haré todo para servir á V.

To look upon, into. The window looks into the street. La ventana cae á la calle. The window looks out upon the La ventana mira al río.

The back door looks into the gar- La puerta trasera da al jardin.

To drown.

To drown a dog.

To be drowned, to be drowning. To drown one's self, to get drowned.

To leap through the window. To throw out of the window.

I am drowning.

To fasten.

They fastened him to a tree.

The cattle. To keep warm.

To keep cool.

To keep clean.

some one. Keep on your guard against that Guardese V. de ese hombre.

To take care (to beware) of some- Guardarse de. body or something.

virme.

Caer á. Dar á. Mirar á.

Anegar. Ahogar. Ahogar un perro en el agua.

Ahogarse.

Saltar por la ventana. Echar por la ventana.

Me ahogo. Me estoy ahogando.

Atar. Amarrar. Lo amarraron (ataron) á un árbol.

El ganado.

Mantenerse caliente. Mantenerse fresco.

Mantenerse limpio, (aseado).

To keep on one's guard against (Guardarse de alguno, (de uno). Estar sobre aviso con respecto 🏔

Tener cuidado de (con) alguno, (con alguna cosa).

If you do not take care of that Si V. no se guarda de ese caballo horse it will kick you. le dará coces. A kick, (of a horse or ox). Una coz. Take care that you do not fall. Tenga V. cuidado de no caerse. Cuidado. Cuidado, though a substantive, is often used in the sense of take care, be careful: Take care, little one. Cuidado, chiquito. A thought. Un pensamiento. An idea. Una idea. Un dicho agudo. Un chiste. A sally of wit. Una agudeza. Un arranque. Una viveza. Un repente. Darle golpe á uno un pensamiento. To be struck by a thought. Hacerle fuerza á uno una idea. A thought strikes me. Me da golpe un pensamiento. Eso nunca me pasó por el pensamiento. That never passed my mind. Eso jamás me entró en el pensamiento. He took it into his head lately to Últimamente se le puso en la rob me. cabeza robarme. What is in your head? (¿Qué le pasa & V. por la cabeza! A penny for your thoughts. 🛦 Qué tiene V. en la cabeza. In my place. En mi lugar. All things ought to be put in their Todas las cosas se deben poner en place. su lugar. Around, round. Alrededor. We sailed around England. Navegamos alrededor de Inglaterra. They went about the town to look Fueron por toda la ciudad para at the curiosities. examinar las curiosidades. (Ir alrededor de la casa. To go around the house. Dar la vuelta de la casa.

To go about the house.

To cost.

How much does that cost you? It costs me three dollars and a half. Me cuesta tres pesos y medio. That table costs him twenty dol- Esa mesa le cuesta veinte pesos. lars,

Costar.* LCuánto le cuesta á V. eso ?

(Ir por toda la casa.

Andar toda la casa.

Alone, by one's self.

I was alone. One woman only. One God.

God alone can do that.

The very thought of it is criminal. A single reading is not sufficient to satisfy a mind that has a true taste.

To kill by shooting.

He has blown out his brains,

He served for a long time, ac- Sirvió largo tiempo, adquirió quired honors, and died contented.

He arrived poor, grew rich in a short time, and lost all in a still shorter time.

Solo. Sola. Por sí solo. Por sí sola. Yo estaba solo, (sola). Una sola mujer. Un solo Dios. Sólo Dios puede hacer eso.

El mero pensamiento es culpable. Una sola lectura no basta para satisfacer á un ingenio que tiene un gusto exacto.

Matar á tiros.

Se ha levantado la tapa de los

Se ha tirado un tiro (mortal).

honores, y murió satisfecho. (contento).

Llegó aquí pobre, se hizo rico (enriqueció) en poco tiempo, y perdió cuanto tenía en menos tiempo todavía.

CONVERSACIÓN

1. ¿ En dónde se ahogó su amigo de V. ? Se ahogó en el río que está detrás de la casa. 2. ¿ No tiene V. miedo de ahogarse? No, señor, porque yo sé nadar. 3. ¿ Quién le enseñó á V. á nadar? El verano pasado tomé algunas lecciones en la escuela de natación. 4. Esta es mi tarea: "Los que habían contribuído más á su elevación al trono de sus abuelos fueron los que habían trabajado con más paciencia. Luego que César hubo pasado el Rubicón no tuvo más tiempo para deliberar; debió vencer ó morir ignominiosamente. V. tiene sed siempre que ve un mesón. Si entramos, beberé á la salud de V. 6. ¿ Cuándo me pagará V. lo que me debe ? Cuando tenga dinero; es inútil pedírmelo hoy, porque V. sabe muy bien que no se puede recibir nada de uno que no tiene nada. 7. ¿ No se parece mi casaca á la de V.? No se le parece, porque la mía es corta, y la de V. es demasiado larga; la mía es negra y la de V. es verde. 8. Si uno quiere aprender el comercio, ha de traficar; sólo de esta manera

puede un muchacho hacerse útil en los negocios. 9. ¿ Qué es lo que se dice de la patria ? Que la gloria y la prosperidad de la patria son nuestra propia gloria y prosperidad. 10. Defender la patria es defender nuestra familia, y sostener los intereses de la patria es sostener nuestros bienes. 11. Prestad á la patria los servicios que reclame de vosotros, y recibiréis de ella un rico galardón.

EXERCISE

1. What is the matter with you? Why do you look so melancholy? (parecer). I should not look so melancholy if I had no reason to be sad. I heard just now that one of my best friends has shot himself with a pistol, and that one of my wife's best friends has drowned herself. 2. Yesterday, at four o'clock in the morning, she arose without saving a word to any one, leaped out of the window which opens upon (looks upon) the garden, and threw herself into the river, where she was drowned. 3. Where will you bathe? In the river. 4. When had you finished your task? I had finished it when you entered. 5. As soon as Cæsar (César) had crossed (pasar) the Rubicon, he could no longer deliberate, (deliberar): he was obliged to conquer (vencer) or die. 6. Do you perceive that house? I perceive it; what house is it? It is an inn, (mesón); if you like we shall go into it to take a glass of wine, for I am very thirsty. 7. When do you think you will have money? I think I shall have some next year. 8. Why do you laugh at me? I do not laugh at you, but at your coat. 9. Why do you associate with that man? I should not associate with him if he had not rendered me great services. 10. Why do you work so much? I work in order to be some day useful to my country. 11. Would you copy your exercises if I copied mine? I should copy them if you copied yours. 12. Would she have set out if I had set out? I can not tell you what she would have done if you had set out.

Let us always love and practice Amemos y practiquemos siempre virtue, and we shall be happy, both in this life and in the next

To practice.

Let us see which of us can shoot Veamos cuál de nosotros puede best.

To express.

To express one's self.

To make one's self understood. To have the habit.

To accustom.

To accustom one's self to something.

Children must be early made accustomed to labor.

To be accustomed to a thing.

I am accustomed to it.

I can not express myself in Spanish, because I am not in the habit of speaking.

You speak properly.

To converse.

To chatter, to prate.

A prattler, a chatterer.

I practice speaking. To permit, to allow. The permission.

I permit you to go there.

Do good to the poor, have compassion on the unfortunate, and God will take care of the rest.

To have compassion on some one.

Compassion.

Pity.

The rest.

la virtud, y seremos felices tanto en esta vida como en la otra.

Practicar. Ejercer. Hacer.

tirar mejor.

Expresar.

Expresarse.

Hacerse comprender, (entender). Tener costumbre. Soler.*

Acostumbrar. Acostumbrarse.

Acostumbrarse á alguna cosa.

Á los niños se les debe acostumbrar temprano al trabajo. Estar acostumbrado á una cosa.

Estoy acostumbrado á ello.

No puedo expresarme en español, porque no tengo costumbre de hablar.

V. habla propiamente.

Conversar.

Charlar, platicar.

(Un charlante. Un hablador.

Un platicón. Parlante.

No hago más que hablar.

Permitir. Conceder. El permiso (la licencia).

Le permito á V. que vaya allá.

Haga V. bien á los pobres, tenga compasión de los infortunados, y Dios cuidará de lo demás.

(Compadecerse.

Tener compasión de alguno. Compasión.

Lástima.

El resto. Lo demás.

The present subjunctive may not be used after si, if, as in English, but either the indicative present or future, or one of the imperfect subjunctives must be employed;

If he comes, tell him I am in the Si viene, digale V. que estoy en el garden.

let me have the horse at the price which I have offered him. iardín.

Ask the merchant whether he can Informese V. del mercader si puede dejarme (venderme) el caballo por el precio que le he ofrecido.

There one laughs and weeps by Alli uno rie y llora por turnos.

If they knew what you have Si supieran lo que V. ha hecho. done.

found.

pressed clearly.

whom we owe so much.

It is from a king (Agesilaus) that De un rey (Agesilao) es de quien we have that excellent maxim-"That a man is great only in so far as he is just."

The country where diamonds are El país (la tierra) en donde se hallan los diamantes.

What is conceived well is ex- Lo que se concibe bien se expresa con claridad.

We do not like to see those to No nos gusta ver á aquellos á quienes debemos tanto.

> tenemos esa gran máxima-"Que uno es grande sólo en cuanto es justo."

CONVERSACIÓN

1. No tenga V. miedo de sus acreedores; esté V. seguro de que no le harán daño. Esperarán si V. no les puede pagar todavía. 2. No he olvidado que yo soy deudor de V., puesto que pienso en ello todos los días; nunca lo negaré. 3. ¿ Qué quiere V. hacer con mi bastón? Quiero enseñárselo á mi padre. 4. Si V. no quiere que lea hoy, ¿ qué he de hacer? Dibuje V. este paisaje, y cuando lo haya dibujado. conjugue estos verbos y explíquemelos. 5. Ya que deseamos ser felices hagamos bien á los pobres, y tengamos compasión de los infortunados; obedezcamos á nuestros maestros, y no les demos jamás ninguna pena; amemos á nuestro prójimo como á nosotros mismos, y no aborrezcamos á los que nos havan ofendido; en una palabra, desempeñemos nuestras obligaciones, y Dios cuidará de los demás. 6. ¡Qué quieto está ese muchacho, hijo de V., caballero! Sí, es muy buen muchacho cuando duerme. Mire V. que está dormido ahora. 7. ¿Se divirtió V. mucho cuando estuvo en Alemania el otoño pasado? No mucho, porque estaba muy ocupado. 8. TodaTo astonish, to surprise.

To be astonished, to wonder.

To be surprised at something.

I am surprised at it.

An extraordinary thing happened which surprised everybody.

To take place.

Many things have come to pass which will surprise you.

Many days will pass before that Pasarán muchos días antes que will take place.

A man came in who asked me Entró un hombre que me prehow I was.

Then, thus, consequently.

Therefore.

The other day.

Lately.

In a short time.

In.

week is elapsed).

journey, (he made it in a week).] Gastó ocho días en su viaje.

He will have finished his studies Habrá acabado sus estudios denin three months.

He finished his studies in a year. He has applied himself particu-

larly to geometry.

To apply one's self. Mr. Lewis Martinez wrote me lately that his sisters would be here in a short time, and requested me to tell you so. You will then be able to see them, and give them the books which

Asombrar. Pasmar. Sorprender, Asombrarse. Estar asombrado. Admirarse. Maravillarse.

Estar asombrado de alguna cosa (de algo).

Estoy sorprendido de ello, (de eso). Aconteció una cosa extraordinaria que sorprendió á todos.

Acontecer. Suceder.

Han acontecido muchas cosas que le sorprenderán á V.

suceda (acontezca) eso.

guntó cómo estaba, (cómo lo pasaba).

(Pues. Entonces.

Por consiguiente.

(Por consiguiente. Así pues.

Por tanto. El otro día.

Ultimamente. Poco ha.

(Dentro de poco tiempo.

Dentro de poco. Dentro de. En.

He will arrive in a week, (when a (Él llegará dentro de una semana De aquí á ocho días.

It took him a week to make this (Hizo este viaje en una semana.

tro de tres meses.

Acabó sus estudios en un año. Se ha dedicado particulamente á

la geometría. Dedicarse. Aplicarse.

Me escribió el otro día el Señor Don Luis Martinez que sus hermanas estarían aquí dentro de poco tiempo, y me rogó se lo dijera á V. Entonces podrá V. verlas y darles los libros que ha

you have bought. They think that you will make them a present of them. Their brother has assured me that they esteem you, without knowing you personally.

To be or to become tired. How could I become tired in your company?

He gets tired everywhere.

Agreeable, (pleasing).

To be welcome.

You are welcome everywhere.

comprado. Ellas piensan que V. se los presentará como un regalo. Su hermano me ha asegurado que estiman á V., sin conocerlo personalmente.

Aburrirse. Fastidiarse. Cansarse.

¿Cómo podría aburrirme en la
compañía de V.?
Él se fastidia en todas partes.
Agradable. Gustoso. Placentero.
Ser bien venido. Agasajar.
{En todas partes le agasajan á V.
Es V. bien venido (recibido) en
todas partes.

CONVERSACIÓN

1. V. dice que es la una y media, y en mi reloj son solamente las doce y media. 2. Pronto darán las dos. Perdóneme V.; todavía no ha dado la una. Le aseguro é V. que es la una y veinticinco minutos, porque mi reloj anda muy bien. 3. ¿ Compró V. su reloj en París? Yo no lo compré; mi tío me lo regaló. 4. ¿ Pide alguno la mano de esa señorita? El caballero que pide su mano es un noble de la vecindad. ¿ Es rico? No; es un pobre que no tiene ni un peso. 5. ¿ De qué se admira V.? Me admiro de hallarle á V. todavía en cama. 6. ¿ Han dado ya las doce? Sí, señora, ya son las doce v media. 7. ¿ Es tan tarde ? ¿ Es posible ? Eso no es tarde: todavía es temprano. 8. ¿ Va bien el reloj de V.? No. Señorita, adelanta un cuarto de hora. 9. Y el mío atrasa media hora. Quizá se ha parado. En efecto tiene V. razón. 10. ¿ Le dió V. cuerda? Le dí cuerda, y sin embargo no anda. 11. ¿ Oye V. ? Está dando la una. Entonces voy á arreglar mi reloj é irme á casa. 12. Hágame V. el favor de quedarse un poco más. No puedo, porque comemos á la una en punto.

EXERCISE

1. Will you drink a cup of tea? No, thank you; I do not like tea. 2. Do you not get tired here? How could I get

tired in this agreeable society? As to me I always wish amusement. If you did as I do you would not wish amusement, for I listen to all those who tell me anything. this manner I learn a thousand agreeable things, and I have no time to get tired; but you do nothing of that kind, (de eso); that is the reason why you wish amusement. 4. I should do everything like (como) you, if I had no reason to be sad. 5. Have you seen Mr. Lambert? I have seen him; he told me that his sisters would be here in a short time, and desired (me rogó se lo dijera á V.) me to tell you so. 6. When they have (hayan) arrived, you may give them the gold rings which you have bought; they flatter themselves that you will make them a present of them, for they love you without knowing you personally. 7. Has my sister written to you already? She has written to me; I am going to answer her. 8. Shall I tell her that you are here? Tell her: but do not tell her that I am waiting for her impatiently, (con impaciencia). 9. Why have you not brought your sister along with you? Which one? The one you always bring, the youngest. She did not wish to go out, because she has the toothache. am very sorry for it, for she is a very good girl. How old is she? She is nearly fifteen years old. She is very tall (alto) for her age, (edad). 11. How old are you? I am twentytwo. Is it possible! I thought you were not yet twenty. (no llegaba V. á los veinte).

SEVENTY-SECOND LESSON.—Lección Septuagésimasegunda.

To cease.

To dare.

To be able.

Osar. Atreverse.

Poder.

You continually ask me for money.

Continuamente me pide V. dinero. Siempre me anda V. pidiendo dinero.

Cesar. Parar. Desistir. Dejar de.

She does not cease complaining.

I do not dare to ask you for it. I can not go there.

Ella no cesa de quejarse. Ella siempre se está quejando. Ella no para en sus quejas.

No me atrevo á pedírselo á V. No puedo ir alla.

Digitized by Google

They found a document in the Hallaron un papel escrito de la handwriting of Lucinda herself, in which she stated and declared that she could never be the wife of Don Fernando, but of Cardenio, since even then she was his wife.

misma letra de Lucinda, en que decía y declaraba que ella no podía ser nunca esposa de Don Fernando, sino de Cardenio, de quien va lo era.

-D. Quixote, Cap. 28.

Moreover, besides.

Besides what I have just said. There is no means of finding money now.

To push.

Along the road.

All the year round.

To enable.

To be able.

To the right. On the right side. On the right hand. On the left. On the left side. On the left hand.

nearest way to the city?

Go to the foot of the street, and Vaya V. por la calle abajo, y cuanwhen you are there, turn to the right.

And then ?

You will then enter a broad street Entonces entrará V. en una calle which will bring you to a great square, where you will see a blind alley.

Además de. Á más de esto, (eso). Por otra parte.

Además de lo que acabo de decir. No hay medio de hallar dinero ahora.

Empujar. Impeler. Importunar. Molestar.

Á lo largo (por lo largo) del camino.

Todo el largo del camino.

(Por todo el año.

Todo el año completo.

Poner en situación de. Habilitar. Poder. Poner en estado de.

Ser capaz. Poder.

Tener facultad.

Á la derecha. Al lado derecho. Á mano derecha.

Á la izquierda. Al lado izquierdo. Á mano izquierda. Á mano siniestra.

Could you not tell me what is the & No podría V. decirme cuál es el camino más corto para ir á la ciudad ?

> do llegue al fin, dé vuelta sobre la derecha.

(Y qué más !

Y qué haré entonces!

ancha que le llevará á una grande plaza, en donde verá V. un callejön sin salida.

on your left, and pass under the arch that is near it.

Then you must ask again.

An arch. The alley. The shore, (the bank).

To get married, (to enter into Casarse. Contraer matrimonio. matrimony).

To marry somebody.

To marry, (to give in marriage). My cousin, after having given his

sister in marriage, married Miss Álvarez.

Is your cousin married? No, he is still a bachelor. Bachelor.

Embarrassed, puzzled, at a loss.

An embarrassment, a puzzle.

You embarrass me, (puzzle me).

The marriage. He asked my sister in marriage. The measure.

I shall take other measures. The fault.

It is not my fault.

Do not lay it to my charge.

To lay to one's charge.

Who can help it? Whose fault is it? I can not help it.

The delay.

He does it without delay.

You must leave the blind alley Dejará V. el callejón á la izquierda, y pasará debajo del arco que está junto á él.

> Entonces tendrá V. que informarse de nuevo.

Un arco.

El callejón.

La orilla, (costa, ribera, playa, margen).

Casarse con alguno, (alguna).

Casar. Dar en matrimonio. Después de haber casado á su hermana, mi primo se casó con la

Señorita Álvarez.

Lestá casado su primo de V. ? No: todavía es soltero.

Soltero.

Perplejo. Embrollado. Confundido. Perdido.

J Una perplejidad.

Un embrollo. Una confusión.

V. me confunde (me deja perplejo, or me embroila).

El casamiento.

Él pidió la mano de mi hermana. La medida.

Tomaré otras medidas.

Culpa. Falta.

No es culpa mía. No es mi falta

No tengo la culpa.

No me lo or la impute V. á mí.

(Imputar á uno.

Echar la culpa á.

Quién lo puede remediar? Quién tiene la culpa ?

No puedo remediarlo.

(La tardanza. La dilación. La detención. La demora.

Lo hace sin tardanza.

I must go, (must be off).

Go away! Begone!

To jest. The jest, joke.

You are jesting.

He can not take a jest.

To beg some one's pardon.

To pardon.

I beg your pardon.

The pardon. To advance.

The watch goes too fast, (gains). To retard.

The watch goes too slow, (loses).

My watch has stopped.

To stop.

Where did we stop?

page one hundred and thirtysix.

> To wind up a watch. To regulate a watch.

Your watch is twenty minutes too El reloj de V. adelanta veinte fast, and mine a quarter of an hour too slow.

It has not struck twelve yet.

It will soon strike twelve.

Has it already struck twelve? On condition, provided.

He will lend you money, provided you will henceforth be more economical than you have been hitherto.

(Tengo que irme. Es menester que me vaya.

¡ Váyase V.! ¡ Márchese V.!

Burlarse. Chancearse.

La burla. La chanza.

V. se burla. V. se chancea.

El no entiende de burlas.

(Pedir perdón á alguno.

Pedir el perdón de alguno.

Perdonar.

Pido perdón á V.

Pido el perdón de V.

Perdóneme V. Con perdón de V.

El perdón.

Adelantar.

El reloj adelanta.

Atrasar.

El reloj atrasa.

Se paró mi reloj.

Mi reloj se ha parado.

Pararse. Parar.

▲ Dónde hemos parado ?

We left off at the fortieth lesson. Nos paramos en la lección cuarenta página ciento treinta y seis.

> Dar cuerda á un reloj. Arreglar un reloj.

minutos y el mío atrasa un

cuarto de hora.

Todavía no han dado las doce.

Las doce están al dar.

(Las doce van á dar.

Pronto darán las doce.

Han dado ya las doce ? Con tal que. Con condición

que.

El le prestará á V. dinero con tal que en adelante sea V. más económico de lo que ha sido hasta ahora.

Hereafter, for the future, hence- (En adelante. De aquí en adelante, forth. En lo venidero. En lo futuro. Lo venidero, El The future. Lo futuro. porvenir. (Económico. Frugal. Parco. Economical. Moderado. Hasta ahora. Hitherto. Seguir el consejo de alguno. To follow advice, (counsel). You look so melancholy. V. parece tan melancólico. Adiós. Vaya V. con Dios. Adieu, farewell. Quede V. con Dios. God be with you, good-by. Espero tener el gusto de volverle I hope to see you again soon. Espero volverle á ver á V. pronto.

CONVERSACIÓN

1. ¿Á qué hora se levanta V. por la mañana? En el verano, cuando ordinariamente estoy muy ocupado, me levanto á las seis y media, y almuerzo á las siete. 2. ¿ Tiene V. una larga familia? No; tengo dos hijos y una hija. Los hijos, que ya son grandes, van al colegio, y no los veo por aquí sino los sábados y los domingos. 3. ¿ Qué negocio trae ese anciano que viene á nuestra aldea de vez en cuando ? Es vendedor de libros. Su modo de obrar es ir de casa en casa, llamando á la puerta, mandando una tarjeta sucia á las señoras, y, después de efectuar la entrada, cansarlas muchísimo, procurando venderles algunos de sus libros. 4. Y, i qué sucede ? i Algunas se los compran ? Sin duda; porque así ganan la vida esos hombres. 5. Algunas señoras se los compran porque son ignorantes, otras por librarse de los vendedores, y algunas por la compasión que les tienen. 6. ¡ Qué vida tan infeliz! ¿ Por qué dice V. eso? ¿ Le parece tan difícil ir por las casas vendiendo libros? ¿ No es mucho peor ir por las casas sin vender, y á pesar de esto tener que sufrir todo cuanto pueda sucederles? 7. ¿ Es verdad que en el mundo no hay contento? Se dice que es así. Por donde quiera se encuentran personas que nunca desean lo que Dios les ha proporcionado, y viven siempre en busca de otro modo de ganar la subsistencia. 8. Pero puede ser

que este espíritu sea lo que mueve el mundo; sin él nadie se esforzaría por mejorar su condición.

EXERCISE

1. What time is it? It is half-past one. 2. How rapidly time passes in your company! You pay me a compliment which I do not know how to answer. 3. What has that woman intrusted to you? She has intrusted me with a secret about a count who is in great difficulty on account of the (á causa) marriage of one of his daughters. 4. You say you have no friends among your schoolfellows. (el condiscipulo); but is it not your fault? You have spoken ill of them, and they have not offended you. 5. Believe me, he who has no friends deserves (merece) to have none. 6. Charles, have you taken the clothes to Count Narissi? Yes, sir; I have taken them to him. 7. What did he say? He said nothing but that he had a great mind to give me a box on the ear, (bofetadas) because I had not brought them sooner. 8. What did you answer him? Sir. said I. I do not understand that joke; pay me what you owe me; and if you do not do so instantly. I shall take other measures. Scarcely had I said that, when he put his hand to his sword. (á su espada) and I ran away. 9. What is the matter with you, my dear friend? why do you look so melancholy? Nothing is the matter with me (nada tengo). 10. Are you in any trouble? (está V. apurado). I have nothing, and even less than nothing, for I have not a penny, and I owe a great deal to my creditors; am I not very unhappy? 11. When a man is well and has friends, he is not unhappy. 12. Dare I ask you a favor? What do you wish? Have the goodness to lend me fifty dollars. I am willing to lend you this money with all my heart; but on condition that you renounce gambling, (abandone el juego), and be more economical than you have been hitherto. I see now that you are my friend, and I esteem you too much not to follow your advice.

SEVENTY-THIRD LESSON-Lección Septuagésimatercera

To last, to wear well.

(Durar.

Durar largo tiempo, (mucho). How long has that coat lasted ¿Cuánto tiempo le ha durado á V. esa casaca ?

you ! To my liking.

Á mi gusto.

Nobody can do anything to his Nadie puede hacer cosa alguna liking.

que le guste, (que le agrade).

A boarding-house. A boarding-school. Casa de huéspedes. Posada. Pupilaje.

To board with any one, or any-

Hospedarse (tomar posada) con alguno.

where.

Vivir con alguno.

To exclaim. To make uneasy. Estar en posada con alguno.

To become or grow uneasy.

Exclamar.

Inquietar. Molestar. Desasosegar. (Inquietarse. Molestarse.

To be uneasy.

Desasosegarse. Incomodarse. Estar inquieto, (ansioso, cuidadoso, desasosegado, incómodo).

Why do you fret, (are you uneasy)? I do not fret, (am not uneasy). That news makes me uneasy. I am uneasy at not receiving any

Por qué se inquieta V.? No me inquieto. Esa noticia me inquieta.

The uneasiness, trouble.

news.

La inquietud. La incomodidad. El desasosiego.

Me inquieta el no recibir noticias.

Quiet.

Tranquilo. Sosegado. Quieto. (Tranquilizar. Sosegar.

To quiet.

Aquietar. Apaciguar.

Compose yourself. To alter, to change. Tranquilicese V. Sosiéguese V. Alterar. Cambiar. Mudar.

That man has altered a great deal Ese hombre se ha mudado mucho since I saw him.

desde que lo vi.

To use instead of, to serve for, to Servir de. Usar como. be in place of.

I use my gun as a stick.

Mi escopeta me sirve de bastón. Uso mi escopeta como bastón.

This hole serves him as a house.

Este hueco le sirve de casa.

To avail.

What avails it to you to cry?

It avails me nothing.

Opposite, in front of. Opposite that house. Opposite the garden.

Opposite to me.

He lives opposite the castle.

I live opposite the king's library.

To sieze, to take hold of.

To take possession of.

To witness, to show.

Servir de. Aprovechar de.

(¿De qué le sirve á V. llorar ? 🕽 i Qué le aprovecha á V. llorar 🕈

De nada me sirve.

Enfrente. Frente á.

Enfrente de esa casa. Enfrente del jardín.

Frente á mí.

Vive enfrente del castillo.

Vivo enfrente de (frente á) la biblioteca real.

Asir. Agarrar.

Apoderarse de.

Atestiguar. Testificar. Manifes-

To give evidence against some (Ser testigo contra alguno. one.

Salir testigo contra alguno.

The witness. El testigo.

He has shown a great deal of Me manifestó mucha amistad. friendship to me.

To ridicule.

To become ridiculous.

To make one's self ridiculous.

To be born.

Where were you born ? I was born in this country.

They were born in Spain.

The boarder.

The pouch.

Where was your sister born?

Volverse ridículo.

Ridiculizar.

Nacer. (See Appendix.)

LEn dónde nació V. ? Nací en este país.

En dónde nació su hermana de V. 1

(Hacerse ridículo. Ridiculizarse.

She was born in the United States of America.

Where were your brothers born ?

Nació en los Estados Unidos de A mérica.

LEn dónde nacieron los hermanos

de V.

Nacieron en España.

El huésped. El pensionista,

El morral. La bolsa de cazadores.

Una funda.

A pillow. Plumón. Down, (feathers).

CONVERSACIÓN

1. Señor, me atreveré à preguntarle à V. en donde vive el Conde de B. Vive junto al castillo del otro lado del río.

2. 1 Me podría V. decir qué camino debo tomar para ir allá ? Siga V. la orilla, y llegará á una pequeña calle á la derecha, que le conducirá en derechura á su casa. 3. Es una hermosa casa; V. la hallará fácilmente. Muchas gracias, caballero. 4. ¿ Vive aquí el Conde de N. ? Sí, señor; sírvase V. pasar adelante. 5. ¿ Está en casa el señor conde ? Deseo tener el honor de hablarle. 6. Sí, señor, su señoría está en casa; ¿ á quién tendré vo el honor de anunciar? Yo soy de Barcelona, v me llamo Don Fermín; él me conoce bien. 7. ¿ Cuál es el camino más corto de aquí al arsenal? Vava V. por esta calle abajo, v cuando llegue al cabo, dé vuelta á la izquierda v pase por la encrucijada. 8. Luego entrará V. en una calle bastante estrecha, que le llevará á una grande plaza, en donde verá V. un callejón. 9. ¿ Por el cual debo pasar ? No, porque no hay salida. 10. Debe V. dejarlo á la derecha, y pasar debajo del arco que está junto á él. ¿Y luego? Y luego debe V. informarse. 11. Le doy á V. muchas gracias. No hay de qué. 12. ¿ Puede V. traducir una carta inglesa al español? Sí, puedo. 13. ¿ Quién le enseñó à V.? Mi maestro de español.

EXERCISE

1. Why does your mother fret? She frets at receiving no news from her son, who is with the army. 2. She need not be uneasy about him, for whenever he gets into a difficulty he knows how to get out of it again. 3. Last summer when we were hunting together, (juntos) night came upon us (se cerró la noche) at about ten leagues from our country-seat. (quinta). 4. Well, (pues,) where did you pass the night? I was very uneasy at first, but your brother was not in the least so; on the contrary, he quieted me, so that I lost my uneasiness. We at last found a peasant's hut where we passed the night. 5. Here I had an opportunity to see how clever your brother is. A few benches and a truss of straw (un haz de paja) served him to make a comfortable bed; he used a bottle as a candlestick, our pouches served us as pillows. 6. When we awoke in the morning, we were as fresh and well as if we had slept on down and silk. 7. A candidate (un candidato) petitioned (pedir)

the King of Prussia (Prusia) for a position, (un empleo). This prince asked him where he was born. "I was born in Berlin," answered he. 8. "Begone!" said the monarch, (el monarca,) "all the men of Berlin are good for nothing." "I beg your majesty's (majestad) pardon," replied the candidate, "there are some good ones, and I know two." 9. "Who are those two?" asked the king. "The first," replied the candidate, "is your majesty, and I am the second." 10. The king could not help laughing (no pudo menos que reir) at this answer, and granted (conceder) the request, (la súplica).

SEVENTY-FOURTH LESSON-Lección Septuagésimacuarta

To lose sight of. The sight.

is bad, (I have bad sight).

I am near-sighted.

The ship is so far off that we shall El buque está tan lejos que pronto soon lose sight of it.

As it is long since I was in Eng- Como hace mucho tiempo desde land. I have lost sight of your brother.

To owe, ought.

You ought to do that.

You ought not to speak thus to V. no debería hablar así á su pahis father.

He ought to have managed the El podría haber heche la cosa thing better than he has done. To desire.

I bid you a good morning. I wish you a good morning.

To play, (diversion). To play the flute.

> A fall. To have a fall. A stay, a sojourn.

Perder de vista. La vista.

I wear spectacles because my sight Llevo anteojos porque tengo la vista mala.

Tengo la vista corta.

lo perderemos de vista.

que estuve en Inglaterra, he perdido de vista á su hermano de V.

Deber.

V. debería hacer eso.

dre de él.

mejor de lo que la ha hecho.

Desear.

Muy buenos días tenga V. Deseo á V. felices días. Buenos días.

Jugar.

Tocar la flanta.

Una caída. Dar una caída. Residencia. Morada.

To make a stav. Does your brother intend to make ¿ Piensa su hermano de V. estar a long stay in the town?

Estar de asiento. Morar. Residir. largo tiempo de asiento en la ciudad ?

He does not intend to make a No piensa estar de asiento en ella. long stay in it.

To purpose, to intend.

Proponerse. Pensar. Intentar. Tener intención.

I purpose going on that journey. I intend to join a hunting party.

Pienso hacer ese viaje. Intento juntarme á una partida de caza.

To suspect, to guess.

Sospechar. Recelar. Adivinar. Suponer.

I guess what he has done.

Adivino lo que ha hecho él. He does not suspect what is go- No sospecha lo que va á sucederle.

ing to happen to him. Of whom do you think? Of what do you think? On purpose.

¿En quién piensa V.? 🛦 En qué piensa V. 🕈 A propósito.

Se calla V. ?

Me callo.

on purpose. To be still, to hold one's tongue. Do you keep still tongue? I hold my tongue.

I beg your pardon, I did not do it Pido perdón á V., no lo hice á propósito. Callarse. Callarse la boca.

He holds his tongue. held his tongue.

Él se calla. After speaking half an hour, he Después de haber hablado por

media hora, se calló.

CONVERSACIÓN

1. Habiendo entrado un ladrón en una posada, se robó tres capas. Al salir se encontró con uno de los pensionistas que tenía waa hermosa capa bordada. Viendo tantas capas, preguntó al hombre dónde las había tomado. El ladrón respondió con mucho sosiego que eran de tres caballeros de casa que se las habían dado para que las limpiase. "Entonces limpie V. también la mía, pues lo ha menester," dijo el pensionista; "pero," añadió, "V. tendrá que devolvérmela á las tres." "No faltaré, señor," respondió el ladrón, llevándose las cuatro capas, que todavía no han aparecido. Vds. están cantando, caballeros, pero éste no es tiempo de

cantar; deberían callarse, y escuchar lo que se les dice. 3. Estamos perplejos. 1 De qué están Vds. perplejos ? Vov á decirselo á V.: se trata de saber cómo pasaremos nuestro tiempo gustosamente. 4. Jueguen Vds. una mesa de billar ó un juego al ajedrez. 5. Teníamos intención de unirnos á una partida de caza; ¿ viene V. con nosotros ? 6. No puedo. porque no he acabado mi tarea; y si descuido hacerla, mi maestro me regañará. 7. Cada uno á su gusto; si á V. le gusta más estarse en casa que ir á cazar, no se lo impediremos. 8. i Va con nosotros el señor B. ? Puede ser. 9. No me gustaría ir con él, porque es un gran hablador. 10. i Qué tiene V.? Parece estar enfadado. Tengo motivo de estar enfadado, porque no hay ningún modo de obtener dinero ahora. 11. Ha ido V. á ver al señor A. Fuí á su casa: pero no hay ningún medio de pedirle algo prestado. 12. Yo sospechaba que no me prestaría nada, y esa es la razón por la cual no quería pedírselo; y si V. no me hubiera dicho que lo hiciera, yo no me habría expuesto á ser desairado.

EXERCISE

1. I supposed that you would be thirsty, and that your sister would be hungry; that is the reason why I brought you here. 2. I am sorry, however, not to see your mother. Why do you not drink your coffee? If I were not sleepy I should drink it. Sometimes you are sleepy, at others (otras) cold, sometimes warm, and at times you seem to be afflicted with all the ills of the flesh. 3. I believe that you think too much of the misfortune which has happened to your friend, (fem). If I did not think about it, who would think about it? 4. Of whom does your brother think? He thinks of me, for we always think of each other (uno de otro) when we are not together, (juntos). 5. The Biscayans are excellent swimmers, (nadadores). 6. The two chessplayers were very skillful. 7. Do you know any flutist, (flautista), or any violinist, (violinista)? I know a very good flutist, but I do not know any violinist. 8. Why do you ask? Because I intend to have a musical entertainment. 9. Do you sometimes make music? Very often; for I like it very much. 10. What instrument do you play? I

play the violin and my sister plays the piano. My brother. who plays the bass (el contrabajo) accompanies (acompañar) us, and Miss Stolz sometimes applauds (aplaudir) us. Does she not also play some (musical) instrument? She plays the harp, (el arpa), but she is too proud (orgulloso) to practice music with us. 12. A very poor town went to considerable expense (hizo gastos considerables) in feasts and illuminations (fiestas é iluminaciones) on the occasion when the prince passed through, (cuando pasó su principe). 13. He himself seemed astonished at it. "It has only done," said a courtier, (cortesano), "what was due to your majesty." "That is true," replied another, "but all that it has done was due."

SEVENTY-FIFTH LESSON-Lección Septuagésimaquinta

Toward ((literally). (figuratively).

He comes toward me. He behaved very well toward me. The behavior of others is but an echo of our own. If we behave well toward them, they will also behave well toward us: but if we use them ill, we must not expect any better from them.

To treat well. To ill-treat.

Others.

I shall not use you ill.

To delay (to tarry). Do not let it be long before you No tarde V. en volver.

return. I shall not be long in returning.

To long to or for.

Hacia. Con. Para con.

Viene hacia mí.

Se portó muy bien conmigo.

La conducta de los otros no es más que el eco de la nuestra. Si nos portamos bien con ellos, se portarán igualmente bien con nosotros; pero si no los tratamos bien, no debemos esperar que nos traten mejor.

Tratar bien. Tratar mal.

Otro. Otros.

As you have always used me well, Como V. siempre me ha tratado bien, no le trataré mal.

Tardar. Tardarse. Detenerse.

No tardaré en volver. Esperar con ansias.

Estar ansioso.

Desear con vehemencia. Tener gran gana.

Tener muchas ganas de.

I long to see my brother. Estoy ansioso de ver á mi herma-We long for dinner, because we Tenemos muchas ganas de coare very hungry. mer, porque tenemos mucha hambre. Estar uno con desahogo. To be at one's ease. Estar á sus anchas. Estar bien. (Estar cómodamente. To be comfortable. Pasarlo bien. (Estar incómodamente. To be uncomfortable. Pasarlo mal. I am very much at my ease in Estoy muy á mis anchuras en esthis chair. ta silla. What can that be? Qué puede ser eso ? That man is well off, for he has Ese hombre lo pasa bien, puesto plenty of money. que tiene mucho dinero. That man gets along badly, for Ese hombre lo pasa mal, porque he is poor. es pobre. To make one's self comfortable. Hacer uno lo que le acomoda. Haga V. lo que le acomode. Make yourself comfortable. To inconvenience one's self. Incomodarse, molestarse. To trouble one's self. Do not put yourself out. No se incomode V., no se moleste V. Can you, without putting your- & Puede V., sin incomodarse, presself to inconvenience, lend me tarme su escopeta ? your gun. To make entreaties. Solicitar, hacer instancias, hacer diligencias, instar. (Pedir encarecidamente. To insist. Pedir con instancia. I employed every kind of entreaty Me valí de toda especie de súplito bring him to do it. cas para empeñarlo á que lo hiciera. To solicit, to press, to sue, to en- Solicitar, instar, suplicar, rogar. treat.

Here and there.

Now and then.

Every now and then.

Digitized by Google

Aquí y allí, acá y allá, acá y acu-

De cuando en cuando. De vez en cuando.

llá.

So-so; fairly, tolerably.

tolerably well.

To impart.

Have you informed your father of that?

I have informed him of it. To postpone, to put off.

Let us put that off until to-mor-

In vain, in spite of. With all my looking about me, I saw neither man nor house: not the least sign of settlement.

A dwelling, habitation.

listen to me.

not do anything to his liking.

body will believe you.

Even though they earn so much Por más dinero que ganen, jamás money, they will never be rich.

have lost we can not find.

To salute.

To wish a good morning. I have the honor to bid you adieu.

Present my compliments to him, Encomiendeme V. á él, á ella. to her.

Remember me to him, to her.

Do me the favor to present my compliments to your sister.

Tal cual, así así.

I have written my composition He hecho mi composición tal cual.

Informar.

Dar parte.

Comunicar.

Ha informado V. de eso á su padre !

Ha dado V. parte de eso á su

Le he informado de ello.

Posponer.* Diferir.*

Difiramos eso hasta mañana.

En vano. Por más que.

Por más que volvía los ojos á todas partes, no veía ni casas, ni hombres: ni la más insignificante señal de habitación.

Una habitación.

In vain I speak, for you do not En vano hablo, pues Vds. no me escuchan.

In spite of doing my best, I can Por más que haga, no puedo hacer nada á su gusto.

You may say what you please, no- Por más que V. diga nadie lo creerá.

serán ricos.

We search in vain, for what we En vano buscamos, pues lo que hemos perdido no lo hallaremos.

Saludar.

Darle á uno los buenos días.

Tengo el honor de despedirme de V.

Digale V. muchas cosas de mi

parte.

Hágame V. el favor de encomendarme á su hermana.

Remember me (present my compliments) to him, to her.

At your service.

Dele V. memorias y expresiones finísimas mías.

Para servir á V.

CONVERSACIÓN

1. ¿Estuvo satisfecho de la composición su maestro de V.? No lo estuvo. En vano hago todo lo que puedo; no puedo hacer nada á su gusto. 2. ¿ Cómo se ha portado mi hijo con V.? Se portó bien conmigo, porque siempre se porta bien con todo el mundo. Su padre le decía á menudo: "La conducta de otros no es sino el eco de la nuestra." 3. ¿ Qué dijo su hermana? Decía que esperaba con ansia la comida, porque tenía mucha hambre. 4. ¿ Está V. cómodamente en su posada? Estoy bien cómodo allí. 5. Tengo el honor de darle á V. los buenos días. ¿ Cómo está V. Muy bien, gracias; para servir á V. ¿ Y cómo están todos en su casa? Bastante bien, ¡ á Dios gracias! Mi hermana estuvo un poco indispuesta, pero está mejor; me encargó que le presentase à V. sus más finas expresiones. Me alegro de saber que está mejor. 6. No le detendré á V. en sus ocupaciones: vo sé que el tiempo de un comerciante es precioso. Yo no tengo nada de urgente que hacer aliora. Mi correo está ya despachado. Yo no me detendré aqui por más tiempo. Al pasar por aquí sólo quise informarme de la salud de V. 7. La pérdida de tiempo es irreparable. Todo el oro del mundo no puede pagar un solo minuto. Es pues de la mayor importancia emplear bien el tiempo que consiste solamente en minutos, de los cuales se debe hacer un buen uso. 8. Para ser felices olvidemos lo pasado, no nos acongojemos acerca de lo futuro, v gocemos de lo presente.

EXERCISE

1. Have you written your Spanish composition? I have written it. 2. Can you, without putting yourself to inconvenience, lend me five hundred dollars? As you have always treated me well, I shall use you in the same manner, (modo). 3. I am willing to lend you the money you want, but on condition that you return it to me next week. 4. May I see your brothers? You will see them to-morrow.

As they have just arrived from a long journey they need sleep, as they are very tired. 5. Have you informed your brother what I told you? As he was very tired and sleepy, I have put off telling him till to-morrow. 6. As for you. vou are health itself; you can not look better. I have no time to be ill: my business would not permit it. Please to sit down; here is a chair. 7. It is very fine weather to-day. If you will allow me, I shall have the pleasure of seeing you again this afternoon, and if you have time we shall take a walk together. With the greatest pleasure. 8. We have but the present; the past is no longer anything, and the future is uncertain, (incierto). 9. If most men knew how to content themselves (contentarse) with what they have, they would be happy; but their greediness (codicia) very often makes them unhappy. 10. I was very much dejected (triste) when my cousin came to me. "What is the matter with you?" he asked. "Oh, woe is me, my dear cousin," replied I, "in losing that money I have lost everything." "Do not be disturbed," said he, "for I have found your money."

SEVENTY-SIXTH LESSON—Lección Septuagésimasexta

To mean.

What do you mean?
What does that man mean?
I do not know what he means.

To be particular.

I do not like to deal with that man, for he is too particular.

To grow impatient.
To fret.

Do not fret about that.

To sit up. To watch.
I have sat up all night,

Querer decir. Hacer ánimo. Significar.

¿Qué quiere V. decir ?

¿ Qué quiere decir ese hombre ?

No sé lo que quiere decir. (Ser singular.

Tener rarezas.

No me gusta tratar (tener negocios) con ese hombre, porque es muy singular.

Inquietarse. Enfadarse. Apurarse.

Impacientarse. Consumirse. No se impaciente V. de eso.

Velar.

He velado toda la noche.

Digitized by Google

To advise. Aconsejar. The dress. The costume. El vestido. El traje. El uso. Elegant dress. Traje elegante. Vestido de moda. To dress. Vestirse. Ese hombre se viste siempre bien. That man always dresses well. A trick. Engaño. Chasco. Burla. He played me a trick. Me dió un chasco. Take care, that man will play Cuidado, ese hombre le dará á V. un chasco. you a trick. Besides, (more). Además de. Besides the three books which Además de los tres libros que V. you have given me, I wish three me ha dado, quiero otros tres, more. (quiero tres más). Menos. Less. Three are lacking. Faltan tres. Sobran tres. Three too many. To lack. Faltar. To reach. Alcanzar. Alcanzar á entender. Mi alcance. My reach. Within my reach. Á mi alcance. Fuera de mi alcance. No alcanzo á ello. Out of my reach. No alcanzo á entenderlo. These things are not within the Todo el mundo no alcanza á entender estas cosas. reach of everybody. (Á tiro de escopeta. Within gun-shot. A gun-shot, (meaning distance). A tiro de bala. Two gun-shots. Á dos tiros de escopeta. (LCuántos tiros ha disparado V. ? How many shots have you fired ! ¿Cuántos escopetazos ha tirado V. ? ¿Cuántas veces hizo V. fuego? I wonder why that man makes Extraño mucho que haga tanto such a noise. ruido ese hombre. Mientras. En tanto que. So long as. As long as you behave well, peo- Le amaián á V. mientras se porte ple will love you. bien. (Llevarse. Quitar. To carry off, Quitar del medio. A mouthful. Un bocado. Un pedacito.

To overwhelm. To heap. To Colmar. Llenar. Abrumar.

load.

Llenar de gozo. To overwhelm with joy. Colmar de gozo. Generous. Generoso.

Charitable. Beneficent. Caritativo. Benéfico. You have heaped benefits upon V. me ha colmado de beneficios.

me.

Sincere. Sincero. Sincerely Sinceramente. An advantage. Una ventaja.

The disadvantage. The preju- La desventaja. El perjuicio.

dice.

I shall never say anything to your Nunca diré nada en perjuicio de disadvantage.

To surrender.

Rendirse.* Entregar. The enemies have surrendered. Los enemigos se han rendido. Preferir.* To prefer.

I prefer the useful to the agree- Prefiero lo útil á lo agradable. able.

Adjectives used substantively are preceded by the neuter pronoun lo. (See Elements.)

To behold, look. Mirar.

Look at those beautiful flowers, Miren Vds. (or mirad) esas herwith their colors so fresh and mosas flores, con sus colores tan frescos y vivos, (or brillantes), bright.

The color. El color. The lily. El lirio. The violet. La violeta. The forget-me-not. La trinitaria. The rose. La rosa. An emblem. Un emblema.

Words ending in ema are usually masculine.

Fresh verdure is salutary to our El verdor fresco es agradable á la vista. eyes.

CONVERSACIÓN

1. ¿ Qué quiere decir eso, caballero ? Eso quiere decir que no me gusta tratar con V., porque es V. demasiado singular. 2. Me admiro de que su hermano de V. no hava hecho su tarea. Era demasiado difícil. Ha velado toda la noche, y no ha podido hacerla, porque estaba fuera de su

alcance. 3. Su hermano hace lo mismo. Sin embargo son muy buenas gentes; no solamente son ricos y amables, sino también son generosos y caritativos. Me quieren sinceramente, así yo les quiero también, y por consiguiente nunca diré cosa alguna en perjuicio suyo. 4. ¿ Se rindieron los enemigos? No se rindieron porque no prefirieron la vida á la muerte. 5. ¿ Por qué está V. tan triste? V. no sabe lo que me incomoda, querida amiga mía. Dígamelo V., pues le aseguro que participo de sus penas tan bien como de sus placeres. 6. Estoy segura de que V. me compadece, pero no puedo decirle ahora lo que me desazona. Sin embargo, se lo diré cuando se presente la ocasión. Hablemos de otra cosa. 7. Repartamos lo que tenemos, y quedemos amigas inseparables, mientras vivamos. Será V. siempre bien venida en mi casa, y espero igualmente serlo en la suya. 8. Seremos felices cuando estemos satisfechas con lo que tengamos, y si desempeñamos nuestras obligaciones como debemos, Dios cuidará de lo demás. 9. El blanco lirio tiene el color de la inocencia; la violeta indica la dulzura; Vds. lo pueden ver en los ojos de Luisa. 10. Otra palabra más, querido amigo mió. ¿ Qué manda V.? Yo olvidaba decirle á V. que me encomendara á su señora madre.

EXERCISE

1. Why have you played a trick on that man? Because he always finds fault with everything he sees. 2. As soon as Mr. Flausen sees me, he begins to speak English, in order to perfect himself, (perfeccionarse,) and overwhelms me with politeness, (cortesias,) so that I often do not know what to answer. 3. I should like (querer) them still more, if they did not act with so much ceremony; but every one has his faults, and mine is to criticise the customs of others. 4. They had neither bread, nor meat, nor water, nor arms, nor money; nevertheless, they determined to die rather than surrender. 5. What do you think of the man who spoke to us yesterday at the concert? He is a man of much talent, (talento.) and not at all given to regard his own merits, (y nada presumido). 6. It is said that contentment surpasses (valer más) riches; let us then always be contented. 7. If

I saw you happy, I should be equally so, and we should be more contented than the greatest princes, who are not always satisfied. 8. The past being no longer anything, let us not be uneasy about the future, and let us enjoy the present. 9. Look at those beautiful flowers, ladies; how fresh and bright they are! None knows how they grow, yet they are more beautiful than any similar creation of man. 10. The forget-me-not has the color of heaven, our future dwelling, and the rose, the queen of flowers, is the emblem of beauty and joy. 11. How beautiful is the fresh verdure! It is refreshing to the eyes, and has the color of hope (esperanza,) our most faithful friend (femenine) who never deserts (abandonar) us, not even in the hour of death. 12. Do me the favor to tell your mother that I regret (sentir) not being at home when she recently honored me with a visit.

SEVENTY-SEVENTH LESSON—Lección Septuagésimaséptima

A silk gown.

A kitchen table.

A mahogany table.

A brick house.

A stone house.

A windmill.

A coffee-mill. A sugar-mill.

A velvet bonnet.

A silver tankard.

A water-mill.

A steam-mill.

Firearms.

A two-wheeled wagon.

A four-wheeled carriage.

A one-story house.

A two-story house.

A one-horse wagon.

A four-horse carriage.

Gunpowder.

Un túnico (traje, vestido) de seda.

Una mesa de cocina.

Una mesa de caoba.

Una casa de ladrillo.

Una casa de piedra.

Un molino de viento.

Un molinillo de café.

Un trapiche. Ingenio de azúcar

Un gorro de terciopelo.

Un jarro de plata.

Un molino de agua.

Un molino de vapor.

Armas de fuego.

Un carro de dos ruedas.

Un coche de cuatro ruedas.

Una casa de un piso.

Una casa de dos pisos. Un carro tirado por un caballo.

Un carruaje tirado por cuatro caballos.

Pólvora.

To exaggerate. That man exaggerates all that he Ese hombre exagera cuanto dice savs and does.

An inch.

On a small scale.

On a large scale. Thereabouts, nearly.

Alternately, turn by turn.

To endeavor, to strive.

To give one's self up to grief.

To melt.

To melt in tears.

To raise, to cause.

To raise difficulties.

To cause quarrels.

To cause suspicions.

suspicions in my mind.

To shake.

will fall.

A cover: (plate, knife, fork, spoon, napkin, and bread).

> A table with four covers. A writing-table. A desk.

A dining-room.

A bedroom.

A repeater.

An oil-bottle.

A mustard-pot.

A pitcher.

A fowling-piece.

A fishing-line.

A fishing-rod. Demand, exact. Exagerar. Ponderar.

v hace.

Una pulgada.

En pequeño. Por menor.

En grande. Por mayor.

Cerca de. Poco más ó menos.

Alternativamente. Por turnos.

Esforzarse. Empeñarse.

(Abandonarse (entregarse) al dolor.

Dejarse vencer del dolor.

Derretir.* Derretirse.

Derretirse en lágrimas.

(Excitar. Incitar. Mover.

Levantar.

Excitar dificultades.

Mover pendencias.

Excitar sospechas.

The behavior of that man raised La conducta de ese hombre me incitó á sospecharlo.

Sacudir.

Shake that tree, and the fruit Sacuda V. ese árbol, y la fruta

caerá.

Un cubierto, { (plato, cuchillo, tenedor, cuchara,
servilleta y pan).

Una mesa de cuatro cubiertos.

Una mesa para escribir. bufete.

Un comedor.

(Un dormitorio, Una alcoba.

Un aposento para dormir.

Un reloj de repetición.

Una botella para aceite.

Una mostacera.

Un jarro. Un pichel.

Una escopeta de cazador.

Una cuerda para caña de pescar.

Una caña de pescar.

Exigir.

What do you demand of me! I exact nothing of you.

A teapot.

Qué exige V. de mí ? No exijo nada de V. Una tetera.

OBSERVATIONS ON THE NAMES OF PERSONS TAKEN FROM LATIN AND GREEK

Proper nouns ending in a, as, or es are the same in both languages. But it must be observed, that nouns having a double consonant, drop one of them; that nouns that have th, suppress the h; that ph is changed into f; y into i; the diphthongs ae, ae, into e; ch into qu before e or i, and into e before ae, ae, ae, and that names beginning with S followed by a consonant, generally take E before it:

Caligula.
Dolabella.
Cleopatra.
Diana.
Julia.
Æneas.
Pythagoras.
Ulysses.
Socrates.
Philadelphia.
Acheron.
Achilles.
Achates.

Sparta.

Calígula.
Dolabela.
Cleopatra.
Diana.
Julia.
Eneas.
Pitágoras.
Ulises.
Sócrates.
Filadelfia.
Aquerón.
Aquiles.
Acates.
Esparta.

Names ending in o generally add an n:

Cicero. Cicerón.
Plato. Platón.
Scipio. Escipión.

Names ending in us change that termination into o:

Cyrus. Ciro.
Camillus. Camilo.
Orpheus. Orfeo.

Most of those ending in al or is are the same in both languages:

Juvenal. Sesostris. Juvenal. Sesostris.

Names which in English end in ander, change that termination into andro:

Alexander.

Alejandro.

Lysander.

Lisandro.

The English names of kingdoms, provinces, and towns, ending in a, are the same in Spanish; and those of towns ending in burg, add frequently o:

Arabia. Asia. Arabia. Asia. Eribura

Friburg. Hamburg. Friburgo. Hamburgo.

Dainties.

Golosinas. Manjares delicados. Él es amigo de golosinas.

He is fond of dainties.

Á él le gustan mucho las golo-

In broad daylight.

De día claro.

CONVERSACIÓN

1. ¿ Qué ha comprado ella? Ha comprado un túnico de seda un gorro de terciopelo, y un velo de encaje. 2. ¿ Pide V. una botella para vino? No, yo pido una botella de vino. pero no pido una botella para vino. 3. ¿ Qué me quiere ese hombre? Él no exige nada; pero aceptará lo que V. le dé, porque necesita de todo. 4. V. hace mal en tener tan mala opinión de él, porque le ha servido de padre á V. 5. No se abandone V. á tanto dolor, si no, me hará V. deshacerme en lágrimas. 6. Ha visto V. á su sobrina? Sí: ella es una muy buena muchacha, que escribe bien el español y lo habla aun mejor; por consiguiente es amada y honrada de todos. 7. Algunas veces se acuesta cuando es de dia claro, y finge que está malo; pero cuando nos sentamos á la mesa generalmente está mejor. 8. ¿ Por qué habla V. siempre inglés y jamás español? Porque soy demasiado tímido. V. se burla: ¿ es jamás corto un inglés ?

EXERCISE

1. Has your sister been out to-day? She has been out to buy several things. 2. What have you done with my silver tankard? It is on the kitchen table (together) with the oil-

bottle, the milk-pot, the pitcher, the mustard-pot, and the coffee-mill. If you would have the goodness to give me the key of the wine-cellar, (la bodega.) I should go for a bottle of Spanish wine. 3. I tell you that I am not fond of him. for his behavior raises suspicions in my mind. He exaggerates all that he says and does. 4. He has cheated me in a small and large way, and whenever he calls he asks for something. In this manner he has alternately asked me for all I have; my fowling-piece, my fishing-line, my repeater, and my golden candlesticks. 5. Democritus and Heraclitus were philosophers of a very different character; the first laughed at the follies (la locura) of men, and the other wept over them. 6. They were both right, for the follies of men deserved to be laughed at (se debe reir) and wept over. 7. And her brother, what is he doing? Do not speak of him; he is a naughty boy, who always writes badly, and speaks Spanish still worse; he is therefore (asi) respected by nobody. He is very fond of dainties, but he does not like books. 8. He is to study medicine, (la medicina,) but he has not the slightest liking for it, (afición). 9. He is almost always talking of his dogs, which he loves passionately, (apasionadamente). 10. My dear father and mother dined yesterday with some friends at the palace of the King of Spain. 11. Have you any money? No, Sir. Then I have nothing for you to eat.

SEVENTY-EIGHTH LESSON—Lección Septuagésimaoctava

THE PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE TERMINATIONS

First Conjugation.		Second and Third Conjugations.	
SING.	PLURAL.	SING.	PLURAL.
1. e.	1. emos.	1. a.	1. amos.
2. es.	2. eis.	2. as.	2. ais.
3. e.	3. en.	3. a.	3. an.

To have (principal). May have, let have, etc.

Tenga, tengas, tenga, tengamos, tengáis, tengan.

Tener.

To have (auxiliary)

May have, let have, etc.

Haber.

Ser.

Haya, hayas, haya, hayamos, hayanis, hayan.

To be.

May be, let be, etc.

To be.

May be, let be, etc.

Sea, seas, sea, seamos, seáis, sean. Estar.

LStar.

Esté, estés, esté, estemos, estéis, estén.

To be able.

May be able, let be able, (can).

Poder.

Pueda, puedas, pueda, podamos,

podáis, puedan.

The present subjunctive has the following uses in principal and independent sentences:

To supply the imperative, affirmatively, in the first and third persons, and negatively in all persons:

Let me be.

Let me do. Do not do. Sea yo.

Haga yo. No haga V.

To express a suggestion, an exhortation, or a gentle command:

Let the earth punish thee.

Long live the queen.

Castíguete la tierra.

Viva la reina.

To indicate indifference, indefiniteness:

Come what may.

Venga lo que venga.

Go wherever they will.

Donde quiera que vayan.

With verbs denoting an ardent wish:

God grant that it may not happen Plegue á Dios no suceda así. thus.

The present subjunctive is employed in dependent sentences which follow the conjunction *que*, that, when the principal clause denies, doubts, or questions what is contained in the dependent clause:

I doubt whether he said it.

Dudo que lo haya hecho.

When the related verb of the principal clause denotes hope, expectation, fear:

I fear that he has not arrived. T

Temo que no haya llegado.

After verbs expressing a command, direction, caution, wish, desire, entreaty, preference, concession, permission:

I regret that I was not able to Siento que no haya podido salsave him. varlo.

After the following conjunctions in sentences expressive of possibility, uncertainty, and an indefinite future:

Before. Granted that. Antes que. Dado que. Unless. A menos que. In case that. En caso de que. To the end A fin de que. Until. Hasta. that. As far as. Hasta donde. Although. As soon as. Luego que. Aunque. Although. While, Bien que. Mientras. When, as. Como. Lest. No sea que. Would that. As if. Como si, cual si. Ojalá. In order that. Notwithstand-Como quiera que. Para que. However. ing. Por . . . que. Provided that. Con tal que. Whenever. Siempre que. When. Supposing that. Cuando. Supuesto que.

Other illustrations of the subjunctive are appended below.

It will be sufficient for you to (Bastará que V. sepa eso.

What do you wish him to do? have finished his exercise before two o'clock.

¿Qué quiere V. que haga él ? It will be necessary for him to Será necesario que él hava acabado su ejercicio antes de las dos.

know that. It is enough for him to have written two letters.

Será suficiente que V. lo sepa. Basta que él haya escrito dos cartas.

I rejoice that you spoke thus.

Me alegro mucho de que V. hava hablado así.

He will give you paper, without your asking for it. Let me know when he writes.

Él le dará á V. papel, sin que V. se lo pida.

It is necessary that you be here at an early hour.

Avíseme V. cuando él le escriba. Es necesario que V. esté aquí temprano.

You must do that.

Es menester que V. haga eso. Es necesario que uno tenga di-

It is necessary that one have money.

Es menester que yo vaya á la

I must go to market.

plaza. Es menester que se vaya.

He must go away. It is just that he be punished. It is sufficient for you to know that.

Es justo que sea castigado. Basta que V. lo sepa.

It is time for you to speak,

Es tiempo de que V. hable.

We must sell our goods immedi- Es menester que vendamos inately.

mediatamente nuestras mercaderías.

What must I say?

¿Qué es menester que yo diga?

It is important that this should Importa que eso se haga. be done.

It is proper that we should set out. Conviene que partamos.

country. It is necessary that we finish to- Es necesario que acabemos hoy.

It is desirable that you go to the Es de desear que V. se vaya al campo.

It is sufficient that you are satis- Basta que Vds. estén satisfechos.

I am sorry that she is ill.

Siento que esté mala.

I am charmed that you are here.

Estoy encantado de que V. esté aquí.

I am glad that he has received Me alegro de que él haya recibido his money.

su dinero.

friend.

She is angry that you are my Está enojada de que V. sea mi amigo.

I am surprised that you are not Estoy sorprendido de que V. no more attentive.

sea más atento.

I am extremely glad that your Me alegro en extremo de que sister has recovered.

su hermana de V. esté restablecida.

Your father is distressed that you Su padre de V. está afligido de miss vour lessons.

que V. pierda sus lecciones.

I am surprised that you have not Estoy sorprendido de que V. no done your task.

haya hecho su tarea.

CONVERSACIÓN

1. Un joven príncipe, de edad de siete años, era admirado de todo el mundo á causa de su ingenio. Estando una vez en la sociedad de un oficial anciano, observó éste, hablando del joven príncipe, que cuando los niños descubrían tanto ingenio en sus tiernos años, generalmente se volvían estúpidos, cuando llegaban á la edad madura. "Si éste es el caso," dijo el joven principe, que le había oído, "vos debéis haber sido muy notable por vuestro ingenio, cuando erais niño." 2. Un inglés, en su primer viaje á Francia, encontró

en las calles de Calés á un niño chiquito que hablaba la lengua francesa con fluidez y elegancia. "¡Santo cielo!" exclamó él, "¿ es posible que aun los niños chiquitos hablen aquí la lengua francesa con pureza?" 3. Solicitemos la amistad de los buenos, y evitemos la sociedad de los malvados; porque la mala compañía corrompe las buenas costumbres. 4. ¿ Qué tiempo hace hoy? Nieva continuamente, como nevó ayer, y según todas las apariencias, nevará también mañana. 5. Que nieve; yo me alegraría de que nevara todavía más, porque estoy siempre muy bien, cuando no hace frío ni calor. 7. Hace mucho viento hoy, y haríamos mejor, quedándonos en casa. 8. Haga el tiempo que haga, yo debo salir; porque prometí estar con mi hermana á las once y cuarto, y debo cumplir con mi palabra.

EXERCISE

1. Will you relate (contar) something to me? What do you wish me to relate to you? 2. A little anecdote, if you like. A little boy one day at table (á la mesa) asked for some meat. His father said that it was not polite to ask for any, and that he should wait until some were given him, (que le dieran). 3. The poor boy, seeing every one eat, and that nothing was given to him, said to his father: "My dear father, give me a little salt, if you please." "What wilt thou do with it?" asked the father. "I wish to eat it with the meat which you will give me," replied (replicar) the child. 4. Everybody admired the little boy's wit; and the father, perceiving that his son had nothing, gave him meat without his asking for it, (sin que la pidiera). 5. Who was that little boy that asked for meat at table? He was the son of one of my friends. 6. Why did he ask for some meat? He asked for some because he had a good appetite. 7. Why did not his father give him some immediately? Because he had forgotten it. 8. Was the little boy wrong in asking for some? He was wrong, for he ought to have waited. 9. Why did he ask his father for some salt? He asked for some salt, that his father might perceive that he had no meat, and that he might give him some. 10. Do

you wish me to relate you another anecdote? You will greatly favor me. Some one who was buying some goods of a shopkeeper, said to him: "You ask too much; you ought not to sell as dear to me as to another, because I am a The merchant replied: "Sir, we must gain something by (con) our friends, for our enemies will never come to the shop."

SEVENTY-NINTH LESSON-Lección Septuagésimanovena.

THE SUBJUNCTIVE—Continued

The student ought to bear in mind what has been said already as to the use of the imperfect subjunctive.

I can go out with you?

If you had what you have not, Si V. tuviera lo que no tiene. you would be rich.

may read it.

will not go out.

Though your children are idle, Aunque los niños de V. sean perethey learn a little.

If a man had ever so little acquaintance with another, he would be bound to take a part in the dispute, and venture his person as much as if he had himself been angry.

Though she be small and ugly, she is nevertheless amiable.

though she be rich and have a great deal of wit, because she is not good hearted.

content.

Are you willing to stay here until ¿Quiere V. estarse aquí hasta que vo pueda salir con V. ?

I shall go out before he comes Saldré antes que él vuelva.

sería rico.

I send you my book, that you Le envío á V. mi libro para que (á fin de que) lo lea.

Unless you accompany her, she A menos que V. la acompañe, no aaldrá

zosos, aprenden un poco.

Por poca amistad que un hombre tuviera con otro, sería necesario que entrara en la disputa, y que arriesgara su persona tanto como si él mismo se hubiera (hubiese) encolerizado.

Aunque sea chica, y fea, no deja de ser amable.

I should not have her for a wife. No querría tomarla por mi esposa aunque sea rica, y tenga mucho talento, porque no tiene buen corazón.

Provided you are my friend, I am Con tal que V. sea mi amigo, estov contento.

Whether you are in the right or Sea que V. tenga ó no tenga rain the wrong.

Although the monkey be dressed in silk, he is still a monkey.

Aunque se vista de seda la mona, mona se queda.

Iriarte, Fábula XXVII.

But before it reaches that stage, it is necessary to travel throughout the world.

Pero antes que se llegue á ese término es menester andar por el mundo.

D. Quijote, cap. xxi. pt. i.

But be that as it may, I shall mend it in the first place where I find a blacksmith, in such a manner as not to be surpassed, nor even approached, by that which the god of smiths forged and finished for the god of war.

Pero sea lo que fuere, yo la aderezaré en el primer lugar donde haya herrero, y de suerte que no le haga ventaja, ni aun le llegue la que hizo y forjó el dios de las herrerías para el dios de las batallas.

Ditto, ditto.

I wish not to divide spoils, but to ask and beseech some friend to give me a draught of wine, and to wipe away this sweat.

Yo no quiero repartir despojos, sino pedir y suplicar á algún amigo, que me dé un trago de vino y me enjugue este sudor.

Ditto, cap. liii. pt. ii.

Some conjunctions govern the indicative, when the sentence affirms positively that the thing in question is, has been, or will be; and the subjunctive, when the sense of the phrase indicates uncertainty, condition, stipulation, contingency, futurity, or wish :

If. Although. But.

Aunque. Si no. De (de tal) forma que.

So, in such a manner. So as to.

So that.

De (de tal) manera que. De (de tal) modo que. De (de tal) suerte que.

You behave in such a manner V. se porta de manera que es that you are loved by everybody.

amado de todo el mundo.

Behave in such a manner that Portese V. de tal manera que sea you may be loved.

amado, (se haga amar).

If he lent them money, they also Si él les prestó dinero, ellos tamlent it to him.

If he should lend them money, they would also lend it to him.

Do it in such a way as to leave Hágalo V. de modo que él quede him satisfied.

But for me, he would not have Si no fuera por mí, él no lo habría known it.

If he had gained (had he gained) Si él hubiera ganado el pleito the suit, he would have lost a friend, and therefore he had no reason to be sorry.

I had never seen her.

I never should have seen her.

A comma. A pause, a stop. To breathe. Necessary, precise. bién se lo prestaron á él.

Si él les prestara dinero, ellos también se lo prestarian.

satisfecho.

sabido.

habría perdido un amigo y así no tenía razón de quejarse.

Although I had been there often, Aunque yo había estado allí á menudo, nunca la había visto.

Although I had been there often, Aunque yo hubiera estado allí á menudo, nunca la habría visto.

Una coma. Una pausa. Respirar. Preciso.

LECTURA—Reading

LA PUNTUACIÓN

Cuando leemos es preciso hacer algunas pausas, á fin de respirar y de dar á las palabras y frases que se leen el valor que les corresponde.

Lo mismo sucede cuando hablamos; pues á nadie se le ocurre decir todas las palabras á un mismo tiempo, sino que las pronuncia claramente de modo que todos las entiendan, y hace las pausas necesarias para respirar.

Estas pausas se marcan en los libros impresos y en los escritos, con diversos signos que todos los discípulos deben conocer, y son los siguientes:

, La coma, que señala la pausa más corta que se hace al leer. Como si dijéramos: uno.

; El punto y coma, que indica una pausa un poco más larga. El tiempo necesario para decir rápidamente, uno, dos.

: Los dos puntos, que marcan una pausa más prolongada. Contemos ligero, uno, dos, tres.

. El punto final que se coloca al fin de cada oración. La pausa es mucho mayor y la voz descansa por completo.

La interrogación, se usa cuando se dirige una pregunta

como: ¿ Adónde vas, Diego?

! La admiración sirve para señalar toda impresión de sorpresa, de dolor ó de admiración. Por ejemplo: "¡Hola! Mateo, qué grata sorpresa!" "¡Oh, hijo mío! ¡Cuán grandes y admirables son las obras de Dios!"

EXERCISE

1. M. de Turenne would never buy anything from tradesmen on credit, (tenderos,) for fear, he said, they might lose a great part of it, if he happened to be killed. 2. All the workmen (menestral) who were employed about his house had orders to bring in their bills (cuenta) before he set out for the campaign; and they were regularly paid. 3. You can not finish vour work to-night, unless I help you. I shall explain every difficulty, that you may not be disheartened (desanimar) in your undertaking, (empresa). 4. A wise and prudent man lives with economy when young, in order that he may enjoy the fruit of his labor when he is old. 5. Will you lend me that money? I will not lend it you unless you promise to return it to me as soon as you can, Are your sisters happy? Although they are very rich, they are not happy, as they have not learned how to be contented. 7. Behold how amiable that lady is; so for all she has no fortune, I do not love her the less. 8. Will your mother call upon me? She will call on you provided you will promise to take her to the concert. 9. Give me that penknife. I am willing to give it to you provided you will not make a bad use of it. 10. Where were you during the engagement? I was in bed in order to have my wounds dressed (curar). 11. God forbid (no quiera el cielo, with the subjunctive) that I should blame your conduct, but your business will never be done properly unless you do it yourself. 12. Why did you tell me that my father had arrived, though you knew the contrary? You are so hasty, (violento,) that no matter how little you are contradicted (contradecir) you fly into a passion (encolerizarse) in an instant. 13. Have

you finished your task? Not quite; if I had had time, and if I had not been so uneasy about the arrival (llegada) of my father, I should have finished it. He who wishes to teach an art, must know it thoroughly, (á fondo); he must give none but clear and well-digested notions (reglas) of it; he must instil (infundir) them one by one into the minds of his pupils, and above all, he must not overburden (sobrecargar) their memory with useless or unimportant rules. 14. My dear friend, lend me a dollar. Here are two instead of one. 15. Why does not your sister speak? She would speak if she were not always so absent-minded, (distraida).

EIGHTIETH LESSON—Lección Octogésima

THE SUBJUNCTIVE—Continued

However, howsoever.

Por. Por más.

Por. or por más, before a noun or an adjective, governs the subjunctive.

However good you may be. Howsoever rich they may be.

Whatever, whatsoever.

Whatsoever courage you may have, he has more than you.

No matter what mistakes you Cualesquiera faltas que V. haga, may make, I shall take care to correct them.

which you make, you never can succeed.

Whatsoever you may do for my father, he will reward you for it. I complain of nothing whatsoever.

Por bueno que V. sea. Por más ricos que sean.

Por-que. Por más-que. Cualquiera. Cualesquiera, (plur.). Todo lo que. Sea el que. (la que). Sea cual fuere. Sea cual sea.

Por valor que V. tenga, él tiene más que V.

Sea cual fuere el valor de V., él tiene más.

tendré cuidado de corregirlas.

Whatsoever may be the efforts Por más esfuerzos que V. haga, nunca podrá salir con bien.

> Todo cuanto V. haga por mi padre, se lo recompensará. No me quejo de nada, (or de cosa alguna, or de nada que valga la pena).

Nada.

The following indefinite pronouns require the subjunctive:

(Quienquiera. Whoever, whosoever. Cualquiera.

Nadie. Nobody, no one. Ninguno.

Nothing.

Of whatever person you may De quienquiera que V. hable, speak, avoid slandering him.

blamed in his conduct.

evite calumniarle.

I know nobody who is as good as No conozco á nadie (á ninguno) que sea tan bueno como V.

I have seen nothing that could be No he visto nada que pudiera tacharse en su conducta.

SOME EXAMPLES OF THE USE OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE BY WELL-KNOWN AUTHORS

Will your worship allow me to ¿Quiere vuestra merced darme confer a little with you?

licencia que departa un poco con él ?

D. Quijote, cap. xxi. pt. i.

In these cross-paths, though your En estas encrucijadas, aunque se worship conquer, and achieve the most perilous exploits, there is nobody present to witness them.

venzan y acaben las más peligrosas aventuras, no hay quien las vea, ni sepa.

Ditto. ditto.

some one to write the history of your worship's exploits.

as you, madam, say.

There will be no want there of Alli no faltará quien ponga por escrito las hazañas de vuestra merced. Ditto, ditto.

Andrew must wait for my return, Es forzoso que Andrés tenga paciencia hasta mi vuelta, como vos. señora, decis.

Ditto, cap. xxxi. pt. i.

I request thee again, not to tell Te vuelvo á encargar que á nadie it to anybody.

lo descubras.

Moratin—El Si, Act I.

But I positively wish it not to be Pero quiero absolutamente que no known, till it be done.

se sepa hasta que esté hecho. Ditto, ditto.

Is it possible that a Christian ora- LEs posible que tenga aliento para tor can have the boldness to proffer such an opinion ?

proferir semejante proposición un orador cristiano?

P. Isla—Fr. Gerundio.

not confound them with the truly learned.

In order that the ignorant may A fin de que los ignorantes no los confundan con los verdaderos sabios.

Cadalso—Eruditos á la Violeta.

all evil!

May Jupiter preserve you from ¡Júpiter os guarde de todo mal! Ditto. ditto.

Although the critics about whom I discourse, abuse me, I still am bound to draw their likeness in another fable.

Aunque renieguen de mí Los críticos de que trato, En otra fábula aquí Tengo de hacer su retrato. Iriarte—Fábula XXIII.

If the statutes of knight-errantry Si las ordenanzas de la andante were lost, they would be found in your worship's heart.

caballería se perdiesen, se hallarían en el pecho de vuestra merced. D. Quijote, cap. xvii.

If I could speak as freely as usual, Si yo pudiera hablar tanto como I might perhaps give such reasons as would convince your worship that you are mistaken in what you sav.

solía, quizá diera tales razones que vuestra merced viera que se engañaba en lo que dice. Ditto. ditto.

It is not seemly that we should No conviene que nos alegremos rejoice over the successes (of life) nor grieve over its failures.

con los buenos sucesos, ó nos angustiemos con los malos. Fr. Lavis de León.

Providence.

The treasure, the treasury.

To profit by, to take advantage of.

To dare, to venture.

To create.

To merit.

To hide.

To take out, to draw forth.

To venerate.

All-powerful.

La providencia. El tesoro.

Aprovechar. Atreverse.

Crear.

Merecer. Ocultar.

Sacar.

Venerar.

Todopoderoso.

LECTURA

LA PROVIDENCIA

Dios ha creado todo lo que existe en la tierra para bien del hombre, y nosotros, al aprovecharnos de esos tesoros, debemos alabar y dar gracias á la Divina Providencia por su inmensa bondad y sabiduría.

Tú debes, querido discípulo, adorar y reverenciar al Dios Todopoderoso, que sacó de la nada el cielo, la tierra, el hombre y cuanto existe en el mundo.

El Señor podría destruirlo todo en un momento, así como lo hizo; pero conserva la luz, el mundo, los animales y las plantas para que el hombre viva, y por sus buenas acciones merezca la felicidad eterna en el cielo.

Así, pues, debemos amar á Dios como al padre más amante; obedecerlo como al juez más sabio, y venerarlo como al señor y dueño de todo lo que existe.

Es imposible que seamos tan ingratos y tan ciegos, que nos olvidemos del amor y obediencia que se debe á nuestro Dios. Él es perfecto, y su justicia infalible; castiga á los que se han atrevido á violar sus preceptos. Así también premia en esta vida y en el cielo á los que han obrado bien.

Amigo mío, no creas que ninguna de tus acciones ó pensamientos puedan ocultarse á Dios. Aunque hubieras cometido una falta en la soledad y del modo más reservado, Dios, que está en todas partes; Dios, que lo ve todo y todo lo oye, siempre lo sabría.

EXERCISE

1. You must have patience, though you have no desire to have it, for I also must wait till I receive my money. 2. I do not believe that you have already received it; but I fear that your other creditors may already have received it. 3. Do not believe, madam, that I have had your fan, (abanico). Who tells you that I believe it? 4. I could wish you were more industrious and more attentive when I speak to you. 5. If I were not your friend, and if you were not mine, I should not speak thus to you. 6. Do not think that I am angry with him, because his father has offended me. 7. What do

you think of our king? I say he is a great man, but I add, that though kings be ever so powerful (poderoso) they die as certainly as the meanest of their subjects. 8. Whoever the enemy may be whose malice (malicia) you dread, you ought to rely upon your innocence; but the laws (las leves) condemn (condenar) all criminals (criminal) whatever they may be. 9. Whatever the reasons be which you may allege, they will not excuse your action, since it is blamable in itself. 10. Whatever you may say, your sisters will be punished, if they deserve it, and do not endeavor to amend, (enmendar). 11. What news is there of our great army? It is said to be lying between the Weser (Véser) and the Rhine, (Rhin).

EIGHTY-FIRST LESSON-Lección Octogésimaprimera TERMINATIONS

First Conjugation.		Second and	Third Conjugations.	
SING. PLURAL.		. SING.	PLURAL.	
1. are.	1. áremos.	1. iere.	1. iéremos.	
2. ares.	2. areis.	2. ieres.	2. iereis.	
3. are.	3. aren.	3. iere.	3. ieren.	
To have.		Tener.		
SING.		PLURAL.		
1. Tuviere.		1. Tuviéremos.		
2. Tuvieres.		2. Tuviereis.		
3. Tuviere.		3. Tuvieren.		

THE FUTURE SUBJUNCTIVE

The future subjunctive, which is seldom used, is employed in sentences introduced by si, if; cuando, when; mientras, while; or by a relative pronoun, or an adverb, in referring to a future contingency:

I shall come, if I have time. Vendré, si tuviere tiempo. I do not tell thee to live, or to No te digo que vivas, ni que die: live, if thou canst; die, if mueras; vive, si pudieres, y thou canst not do better. muere, si no pudieres más. Quevedo.

half all that may lie in our power.

Order what you please, renew to our good friend my sincere attachment, and say from me all that you will to all those who may remember me.

Just a little, ever so little.

Will you do me the favor to give me a piece of bread? Do you wish a great deal? No; just a little.

> To turn to account. To make the best of.

That man does not know how to make the most of his talents. That man turns his money to ac-

count in trade.

I employ it in public securities.

To boast, to brag.

I do not like that man, because he boasts too much.

Notwithstanding that. For all that, although. That man is a little bit of a rogue, but notwithstanding he passes

for an honest man. Although that man is sick, yet he works a great deal.

We have resolved to do in his be- Tenemos ya determinado que se haga en su obsequio todo lo que alcanzaren nuestras fuerzas.

Solis, lib. iii. cap. xi.

Manda lo que gustares, renueva á nuestro buen amigo mi fino afecto, y á cuantos se acordaren de mí, dirás de mi parte todo lo que quisieres.

Isla—Cartas.

Sólo un poco. No más que un poco.

Un poquito. Un poquitito. Sólo un poquito.

¿Quiere V. hacerme el favor de darme un poco de pan ?

Quiere V. mucho? No; sólo un poquito.

Hacer valer. Hacer para ganar. Aprovecharse de.

Sacar ventaja de. Servirse de. Ese hombre no sabe aprovecharse de sus talentos.

Ese hombre saca ventaja de su dinero en el comercio.

How do you employ your money? 4 Qué hace V. para ganar con su dinero ?

> Lo pongo en los fondos públicos. Jactarse. Vanagloriarse.

Preciarse. Alabarse.

Fanfarronear. Ser jactancioso.

No me gusta ese hombre, porque se jacta mucho, (es muy jactancioso).

(No obstante. Sin embargo. Con todo. Aunque.

Ese hombre no deja de ser un picarillo, con todo pasa por hombre de bien.

Aunque aquel hombre esté enfermo, no deja de trabajar mucho. I received your letter on the Recibi la carta de V. el cinco. fifth.

The top.

The bottom.

T7..... 4... 4. 3...44.....

From top to bottom.

The oldest brother.

The oldest sister. He is the oldest.

To appear, to seem.

To keep, to maintain.

My keeping costs me twelve hundred dollars a year.

To drive in, to sink.

To converse.

A conversation.

To spare.

Spare your money.

To get tired.
To be tired.

To handle.

To lean against.

Lean against the wall.

To aim at, to take aim.

Short, low.

To stop short.

Virtue is excellent. Vice is odious. Lo alto. El remate.

La cima, (cumbre, punta).

(Lo bajo. El suelo.

El fondo. El pie.

De arriba abajo.

El hermano mayor. La hermana mayor.

Él es el mayor.

Parecer. Tener apariencia de.

Pareciendo. Parecido.

Tener.* Mantener.* Conservar.

Mi manutención me cuesta mil doscientos pesos al año.

Mis gastos montan á mil y dos-

cientos pesos al año.

Clavar. Hundir. Encajar. Meter.

Conversar.

Tratar. Hablar.

Una conversación.

(Ahorrar. Economizar.

Guardar. Conservar.

Cuide V. de su dinero.

Cansarse de. Fatigarse de.

Fastidiarse de. Enfadarse de. Estar cansado, (fatigado, fasti-

diad, enfadado de).

Manosear. Manejar. Tratar.

Apoyarse. Descansar.

Reclinarse. Recostarse.

Reclinese (apóyese) V. contra la pared.

(Apuntar. Asestar. Encarar.

Tirar al blanco.

Corto. Breve. Bajo.

Pequeño. Chico.

Pararse. Detenerse. Cortarse. Perderse.

La virtud es excelente.

El vicio es aborrecible.

The definite article is used in Spanish, but rarely in English, when it designates an object, a substance, or a thought, in a universal, very general, or absolute sense, for the singular, or all the individuals of a class, for the plural:

Men are mortal.

Gold is precious.

Flour is sold at six dollars a La harina se vende á seis pesos barrel.

Beef costs sixpence a pound.

The horror of vice, and the love El horror del vicio, y el amor de of virtue, are the delights of

the wise man.

The definite article stands before the names of a few countries, provinces, cities. They are chiefly:

Japan. Brazil. Peru. Canada. Paraguay.

Florida. Havana.

Cairo. Havre.

used with them:

Los hombres son mortales.

El oro es precioso.

el barril. La carne cuesta á seis peniques

la libra.

la virtud, son las delicias del sabio.

El Japón. El Brasil. El Perú.

El Canadá. El Paraguay. La Florida. La Habana.

El Cairo. El Havre.

It is common, however, to use the article with the names of many countries in poetical and oratorical style, or when an adjective is

La América independiente.

La España católica.

When prepositions precede the names of countries, provinces, and cities, the article is not commonly used.

The articles are repeated before each substantive when a particular emphasis is placed on them; otherwise they may be omitted.

lemons, olives, and all kinds of

He ate the bread, meat, apples, and cakes; he drank the wine. beer, and cider.

Beauty, amiability, and wit, are La hermosura, el cariño, y el invaluable endowments, when heightened by modesty.

To lurk, to lie in wait for. To plow, to till.

Thessaly produces wine, oranges, Tesalia produce vino, naranjas, limones, olivas, y toda especie de frutas.

> Comió el pan, la carne, las manzanas, y los bollos; y bebió el vino, la cerveza, y la sidra.

genio, son prendas apreciables cuando están acompañadas de la modestia.

Acechar.

Arar.

Arrullar.

Cacarear.

Aullar.

Chillar.

Gemir.

Graznar.

Gruffir.

Ladrar.

Mugir.

Nadar.

Silbar.

Rugir.

Trinar.

Zumbar.

La clueca.

Rebuznar.

Piar.

To coo. To howl. To crow, to cackle. To creak, to squeak. To moan, to groan. To croak, to caw. To grunt. To bark. To low, to bellow. To swim. To chirp, to peep, (as a chicken). To bray. To whistle. To roar. To trill. To buzz, to hum. The setting, or clucking (hen).

LECTURA

LA VOZ Y LA ACCIÓN DE LOS ANIMALES

Los perros ladran, y guardan la casa de sus amos. Aullan cuando están tristes ó sufren. Los bueyes mugen, tiran de los carros y aran la tierra. Los toros braman, y son animales bravos y fuertes. Los caballos relinchan, y son fieles á su dueño. Las ovejas balan, y pacen la hierba de los campos. Los gatos maullan, y se comen á los ratones. Las gallinas cacarean cuando han puesto un huevo. Los pollitos pían, v la clueca los abriga bajo sus alas. Los patos nadan admirablemente. Los gallos cantan al amanecer, y pelean con valor. Los gansos graznan, y sus plumas sirven para escribir. Las palomas arrullan, y son muy limpias. Los asnos rebuznan; son fuertes y sufridos para el trabajo. Los puercos gruñen, son sucios y se bañan en el lodo. Las abejas zumban, y fabrican la cera y la miel. El león ruge, y es el rey de los animales. Los lobos aullan, y atacan los rebaños de ovejas. Las serpientes silban, y hay muchas cuya picadura es venenosa. Las zorras corren mucho y acechan á las gallinas. Los loros hablan lo que se les enseña, y no saben lo que dicen. Las cigarras y los monos chillan, y

atormentan los oídos. Las tórtolas gimen, y cuidan mucho á sus hijitos.

Las avecillas del cielo trinan; anuncian la madrugada á los hombres con sus alegres cantos.

EXERCISE

1. Where will you go next year? I shall go to England, for it is a fine country, where, on my return from France, I intend to spend the summer. 2. What country do these people inhabit? (habitar). They inhabit the south (sur) of Europe; their native countries are called Italy, Spain, and Portugal, and they themselves are Italians, Spaniards, or Portuguese; but the people called Russians, Swedes, and Poles, inhabit the north (norte) of Europe; and the names of their countries are Russia, Sweden, and Poland, (Polonia). Has your brother eaten anything this morning? eaten a great deal; though he said he had no appetite, vet for all that he ate of all the meat, bread, and vegetables, (legumbres), and drank of all the wine, beer, and cider. 4. Do you like grapes? (uvas). I not only like grapes, but also plums, almonds, nuts, and all sorts of fruit. 5. The fear of death and the love of life being natural to men, they ought to shun vice, (el vicio,) and adhere to (adherirse) virtue.

EIGHTY-SECOND LESSON—Lección Octogésimasegunda.

To give occasion.

Dar motivo, (causa, ocasión de [substantive] para). (With a verb in the infinitive or subjunctive.)

Dar pie para. (With a verb in the infinitive or subjunctive.)

Referirse á.* Deferirse * al dictamen.

Dejar á, (the person).

Dejar á la decisión, (al dictamen).

Ponerlo en manos, (al arbitrio de). Lo dejo á lo que V. diga, (haga).

To leave it to one.

TO TOWN O IT TO OHE

I leave it to you.

 $\mathsf{Digitized} \ \mathsf{by} \ Google$

A good bargain.

To stick, or abide by a thing.

I abide by the offer you have made me.

I do not doubt that you are my friend.

To suffer, to bear.

They were exposed to the whole fire of the place.

To examine one artfully, or to draw a secret from one.

I examined him artfully, and by that means I have made myself acquainted with all his affairs.

To bear, or to put up with.

You will be obliged to put up with all his wishes.

Thick.

A thick cloud.

A thick beard.

He has a full beard.
A burst.

A burst of laughter. So burst out laughing.

To burst.

Buen contrato, (pacto).
Buena compra, (venta).
Una ganga. Una buena suerte.
Una chiripa.
Atenerse á.* Mantenerse en.*
Pasar por. Estar por.*
Me atengo á la proposición que
V. me ha hecho.
Paso por la proposición que V.
me ha hecho.

No dudo que V. sea mi amigo.

Sufrir. Aguantar. Experimentar.
Sostener.* Padecer.*
Resistir. Arrostrar.
Ellos estaban expuestos á todo el fuego de la plaza.
Sufrieron todo el fuego de la plaza.

Examinar con maña. Hacer cantar á alguno. Sacarle un secreto. Hacerle desembuchar.

Yo le he examinado con maña, y de este modo me he hecho dueño de todos sus negocios.

Pasar. Sobrellevar. Sufrir. Dejar que. Aguantar.

No hacer caso de.

V. se verá obligado á sufrir por cuanto él quiera.

Espeso. Denso. Grueso. Una nube espesa.

Una barba poblada, (espesa).

Tiene la barba muy espesa. Un reventón.

Una carcajada. Caerse de risa.

Reventar. Estallar. Brotar.

Romper. Quebrar. Prorrumpir.

To burst out laughing.

Splendor, brightness.

To make a great show.

To light.

The cinnamon.

The dose. The root.

The rhubarb.

The sap.

The sulphate.

The bone, the stone (of fruit).

The seed.

The herb, the plant, the grass.

The rind, hull, husk.

The pulp. The kernel.

An almond, an almond-like ker-

nel.

The germ, the bud. To adhere, to cling to. To mature, to ripen. Fleshy, meaty. Purgative. Vegetal, vegetable.

To suffer one's self to be beaten.

To let or to suffer one's self to fall. To suffer one's self to be insulted. To suffer one's self to die.

To send back, to return.

To let one's self be struck.

To extol, to praise up.

Reir á carcajadas. Soltar el tra-

po (fam.).

Esplendor. Resplandor. Brillo. Lustre. Brillantez. Claridad.

Pompa. Magnificencia.

Hacer ostentación.

Hacer un gran papel. Alumbrar. Iluminar.

Dar luz. Encender.

La canela.

La dosis.

La raíz. El ruibarbo.

La savia El sulfato.

El hueso.

La semilla.

La hierba

La cáscara. La pulpa.

La pepita.

La almendra.

El germen. Adherir. Madurar.

Carnoso. Purgativo.

Vegetal.

Dejarse aporrear, (golpear, maltratar, sacudir).

Dejarse caer.

Dejarse insultar. Dejarse morir.

Dejarse apalear.

Devolver.*

Remitir (enviar) otra vez.

Hacer volver.

Engrandecer. Alabar.

Magnificar. Ensalzar. Aplaudir.

Engrandecer. Exaltar.

To boast, to praise one's self.

Go thither.

Let us go. Go thou.

Go (thou) thither. Go (thou) away.

Let him go thither.

Let them go thither.

Go away, begone.

Let us go, let us be going.

Give me.

Give it to me.

Give it to him.

Let us set out.

Let us breakfast. To finish.

The starling.

We can now almost carry on a Ahora podemos mantener casi conversation in Spanish.

This phrase does not seem to us Esta frase no nos parece correccorrect.

We should be ungrateful if we Seriamos ingratos si dejáramos permitted such an opportunity to pass without expressing our liveliest gratitude to you.

In all cases, at all events.

Jactarse. Vanagloriarse.

Alabarse, Exaltarse, Preciarse,

Echar plantas.

Vaya V. ahí, (or allá). Id vosotros ahí, (or allá).

Vé tú allá, (or ahí).

Vamos.

Vé tú.

Vé allá.

Vete.

Vávase él allá.

Que se vaya él allá.

Váyanse ellos allá.

Que se vavan ellos allá.

(Vete. Márchate.

Vávase V. Márchese V.

(Vámonos. Marchémonos.

Quitémonos de aquí.

Deme V. Denme Vds. Dadme.

(Démelo (démela) V.

Dádmelo. Dádmela vosotros.

(Déselo (désela) V.

Dádselo, (or la).

Salgamos. Marchemos. Partamos. Vámonos.

Almorcemos.

Acabar, Terminar, Concluir,

El estornino.

toda una conversación en es-

pañol.

ta.

pasar tal oportunidad de manifestar á V. nuestro más vivo reconocimiento.

En todo caso.

En todo evento, (suceso).

En todas ocasiones.

Suceda lo que suceda.

The native.

El nativo. El natural.
 El originario de. El hijo de.
 La dificultad insuperable.

The insurmountable difficulty.

LECTURA

LA VEGETACIÓN—VEGETATION

Casi todo el suelo está cubierto de una capa de tierra llamada vegetal, porque hace crecer las plantas ó vegetales. La mayor parte de las plantas están adheridas á la tierra por medio de raíces, que beben el jugo ó substancia de ella transformándola en savia. La savia hace nacer las flores y las hojas cuando pasa de la raíz al tronco y sus ramas, produciendo en seguida las flores y después los frutos que sirven de alimento al hombre una vez que han madurado por la acción del sol.

El hueso ó semilla que contienen las frutas y que se planta en la tierra, hace reproducir los árboles y las plantas de la misma clase. Las plantas cuyo tronco se endurece y de las cuales se saca la madera se llaman árboles, y aquellas cuyo tallo es tierno y siempre verde se llaman hierbas.

La mayor parte de las frutas tiene una cáscara que cubre una pulpa ó substancia carnosa que contiene uno ó muchos granos llamados huesos ó pepitas. La pulpa es una substancia cuyas pequeñas cavidades ó células contienen un jugo dulce ó ácido. Los huesos y pepitas están formados de una cáscara que encierra una almendra en la cual se encuentra el germen de la planta.

EXERCISE

1. Will you take a cup of coffee? Thank you, I do not take coffee. 2. Let us take a walk. With much pleasure; but where shall we go? 3. How do you like that wine? I like it very much; but I have drunk enough of it. 4. What is the matter with you? I do not know; but my head is giddy, (estoy aturdido); I think I am fainting. (pienso que me desmayo). 5. How long have you been in Spain? A few days. Really? You doubt it, perhaps, because I speak Spanish; I knew it before coming to Spain. 6. Do you not think of the future? Now allow me to speak also. All you have just said seems reasonable; but it is not my fault, if

I have lost my reputation; it is that of my wife: she has sold my finest clothes, my rings, (anillos), and my gold 7. How long have you been studying Spanish? I do not remember the days, weeks, and months which I have devoted to it; but I can truly say that I have passed the eighty-second lesson.

EIGHTY-THIRD LESSON-Lección Octogésimatercera.

The half.

The third part.

The fourth part.

You think you have returned me V. piensa que me lo ha devuelto all; a great deal is wanting.

elder by far.

man.

To resort to violence.

A fact.

It is a fact.

Else. Or else.

To make fun of.

To contradict, to give one the lie. Desmentir.* Contradecir.* If he said so, I should give him Si él dijera eso, yo le desmentiria. the lie.

His actions belie his words.

To scratch.

To escape.

1 fell from the top of the tree to the bottom, but I did not hurt myself much.

I escaped with a scratch.

The thief was caught, but he will escape with a few months' imprisonment.

La mitad.

La tercera parte, (fem.).

El tercio, (masc.).

La cuarta parte. Un cuarto.

todo; pero falta muchisimo.

The younger is not as good as the El menor no es con mucho tan bueno como el mayor.

He talks at random like a crazy Él habla á tontas y á locas como un hombre sin juicio.

Venir á las manos.

Un hecho.

Es un hecho.

(O. De otra suerte. De otro modo

De otra manera. Si no.

Burlarse de. Chancearse con.

Reirse de. Hacer burla.

Hacer chacota de.

Sus acciones contradicen sus palabras.

Arañar. Rasguñar.

Escapar. Escaparse. Salir libre. Caí de la cima del árbol hasta en pie: pero no me lastimé mucho.

Escapé con un araño, (rasguño). El ladrón fué tomado, pero saldrá libre (escapará) con algunos meses de prisión.

By dint of.

You will cry your eyes out.

I obtained of him that favor by Conseguí de él ese favor á fuerza dint of entreaty.

That excepted.

That fault excepted, he is a good Quitada esa falta, es buen homman.

To vie with each other.

Those men are trying to rival each other.

> Clean. Clean linen.

The more -

The less --- as.

I am the more discontented with his conduct as he is under many obligations to me.

I am the less pleased with his Estoy tanto menos satisfecho de conduct, as I had more right to his friendship.

I wish that.

I wish that house was mine.

To muse, to think. I thought a long time on that af- Reflexioné largo tiempo en este fair.

To be naked.

To have the head uncovered.

Á fuerza de.

Á fuerza de llorar, perderá V. los

Se le secarán á V. los ojos.

de súplicas.

Excepto (salvo, menos) eso.

bre.

(Á competencia. Á porfía.

À cual más. Á cual mejor.

Esos hombres trabajan á competencia.

Están procurando excederse uno á otro.

> Limpio. Ropa limpia.

Tanto más —— cuanto.

Tanto más ---- cuanto más.

Tanto menos —— cuanto.

Tanto menos --- cuanto menos, or más.

Estoy tanto más descontento de su conducta, cuanto él me debe muchas obligaciones.

su conducta, cuanto más derecho tenía á su amistad.

Quiero (deseo) que.

Querría (quisiera) que esa casa fuese mía.

Deseara (desearía) que esa casa fuese mía.

Meditar, reflexionar, pensar (en). negocio.

(Estar desnudo, (desnuda).

Estar (andar) en cueros.

Tener la cabeza desnuda. Estar descubierto.

Tener la cabeza al aire.

To have the feet uncovered.

To be barefooted.

To be bareheaded.

To ride barebacked.

To be on the eve of, to almost, (verb).

I almost lost my money. I thought to have lost my life.

He was at the door of death.

At, on, or upon your heels.

The enemy is at our heels. To strike, (speaking of lightning).

The lightning has struck. The lightning struck the ship. While my brother was on the open sea, a violent storm rose unexpectedly; the lightning struck the ship, which it set on fire, and the whole crew jumped into the sea to save themselves by swimming.

He did not know what to do.

I have not heard of him yet. An angel.

A masterpiece.

Tener los pies desnudos. Estar descalzo. Estar (andar) descalzo de pie y pierna. Tener los pies desnudos. Estar (andar) descalzo. Estar (andar) con los pies desnudos (descalzos). Estar (andar) desnudo de pies. Tener la cabeza desnuda, (descubierta). Estar (andar) con la cabeza al aire. Montar (andar) á caballo en pelo. Estar para. Estar á pique de, (á punto de). Faltar poco para. Por poco. Estuve para perder mi dinero. Pensé haber perdido la vida. Estuvo para morir, (or á punto de muerte). Pensó morir. A los (sus) talones.

Al alcance, (or á los alcances). El enemigo nos sigue los alcances. Caer (estallar, dar, romper) sobre, or en.

Ha caído un rayo.

Un ravo cavó sobre (en) el barco. Mientras mi hermano estaba en alta mar, se levantó de repente una tempestad, cayó un rayo sobre el barco, le puso fuego, y toda la tripulación se echó al mar, para salvarse á nado, (nadando).

Él no sabía qué hacer, (or qué partido tomar).

Todavía no he sabido de él. Un ángel.

Una obra maestra.

Una obra de primera clase.

Masterpieces.
The medicine.

The wheat.

The barley. The rye.

The chick-pea.

The bean. The tuber.

The potato.

The turnip.

The pear.
The apple.

The cherry.

The peach.

The plum, the prune.

The grape.

The cocoanut, the cocoanut tree.

The date.

The pine-apple.

The fig.

The banana, the plantain.

The vegetables, the leguminous

plants.

The onion.
The radish.

The lettuce.

The cabbage.

The carrot.

The cane. The beet.

The beet-root.

The bark. The laurel.

Voluminous, thick.

Purgative.

Physiognomy. Form, shape. The expression.

The look.

Obras maestras.

El medicamento.

El trigo. La cebada.

El centeno. El garbanzo.

El fréjol, el fríjol.

El tubérculo. La papa (American usage).

El nabo. La pera.

La manzana.

La cereza. El durazno.

La ciruela.

La uva.

El coco.

El dátil. La piña.

El higo. El plátano.

Las legumbres.

La cebolla.

El rábano.

La lechuga.

La col.

La zanahoria.

La caña.

La betarraga.

La remolacha.

La corteza.

El laurel. Voluminoso.

Purgativo, purgante.

Fisonomía.

Talle, figura, forma.

La expresión. El aspecto. El semblante.

El aire. El ademán.

La cara. La mirada. La vista.

Contento. Contentamiento. Contentment.

Gusto. Placer. Respeto. Respecto.

Respect. Miramiento. Acatamiento.

Admiración. Admiration.

Gracia. Encanto. Grace, charm.

Donaire.

Deliciosamente. Delightfully. Hechiceramente. Fascinating. Encantadoramente.

Delgado, Flaco, Descarnado. Thin, (slender). Extraordinarily well. Extraordinariamente bien.

His or her look inspires respect Su presencia inspira respeto y adand admiration.

miración.

LECTURA

LA VEGETACIÓN—Continuación

Algunas de las plantas se emplean ya como alimento ya como medicamentos preciosos.

Las que sirven de un alimento más útil al hombre son las que tienen granos substanciosos como el trigo, la cebada, el centeno, el maíz, los garbanzos y los fréjoles, ó los tubérculos voluminosos como la papa, el nabo, etc., ó las frutas carnosas como las peras, manzanas, cerezas, duraznos, ciruelas, uvas, la fruta del árbol del pan, los cocos, los dátiles, las piñas, los higos, los plátanos y las hojas y raíces que llamamos legumbres, como las cebollas, los rábanos, las lechugas. las coles v zanahorias.

El azúcar se extrae de una especie de caña llamada caña de azúcar y también de la planta conocida con el nombre de betarraga ó remolacha; un hermoso arbusto que se cultiva en muchas partes de la América nos da en sus granos lo que llamamos café, y la corteza de una especie de laurel nos proporciona la canela. Se saca el te de un arbusto de la China y el chocolate se hace del fruto ó grano del cacao. Un medicamento purgativo se saca de la raíz del ruibarbo: la quina nos la proporciona la corteza del árbol de ese nombre, y de ella se extrae á la vez la quinina, que es la parte más activa de la primera v con la cual se compone lo que se

21

llama sulfato de quinina. Una pequeña dosis de este sulfato produce el mismo efecto que una mucho mayor de quina.

EXERCISE

1. Will you be my guest? I thank you; but a friend of mine has invited me to dinner. He has ordered (hacer preparar) my favorite dish. 2. What is it? It is a dish of milk. 3. As for me, I do not like milk; there is nothing like a piece of good roast beef or veal. 4. What has become of your younger brother? He suffered shipwreck (naufragar) in going to America. 5. You must give me an account of that. Very willingly. Being on the open sea, a great storm arose. The lightning struck the ship and set it on fire. The crew jumped into the sea to save themselves by swimming. My brother knew not what to do, having never learned to swim. He reflected in vain; but he found no means to save his life. He was smitten with fear when he saw that the fire was gaining on all sides. No longer hesitating, he jumped into the sea, 6. Well, what became of him? I do not know, not having heard from him yet. 7. But who told you all that? My nephew, who was there, and who was saved. 8. Speaking of your nephew, where is he at present? He is in Italy. 9. Is it long since you heard from him? I received a letter from him to-day. 10. What does he write you? He writes me that he is going to marry a young woman who will bring him a hundred thousand dollars. 11. Is she handsome? Handsome as an angel; she is a masterpiece of nature. Her physiognomy is mild and full of expression; her eyes are the finest in the (del) world, and her mouth is charming.

EIGHTY-FOURTH LESSON-Lección Octogésimacuarta

To read again. Volver á leer. To (verb) again. Volver á.

When will you read this book Cuándo volverá V. á leer este again?

I shall read it again to-morrow. Lo volveré á leer mañana.

To solve. To disentangle. To find out.

To untangle the hair.

To solve difficulties.

I have not been able to find out No he podido hallar (entender) el the sense of that phrase.

A quarrel.

To have a difference, a quarrel, (with some one.

> To take care. To shun. To beware of.

I shall take care not to do it. Be careful not to lend that man money.

He takes care not to answer the question which I asked him.

To ask a question.

To deduce.

To fast.

To be fasting.

To give notice.

To let anybody know.

To warn.

Give notice to that man of his Informe (avise) V. á ese hombre brother's return.

Sobriety.

The size.

The whale.

The warrior.

The laborer, the farmer.

The mouse.

Desenredar. Desenmarañar.

Explicar.

Hallar.

Desenmarañar el cabello.

Desenredar (explicar, aclarar) las dificultades.

sentido de esa frase.

Una desavenencia, (diferencia, riña, quimera).

Un pleito.

Una contienda, (disputa, pen-

Tener un pleito (una contienda) con alguien.

Cuidar de. Cuidarse de.

Tener cuidado de.

Guardarse de. Precaverse de.

Recatarse de. Evitar.

Me guardaré bien de hacerlo. Cuídese V. de no prestar dinero á ese hombre.

El tiene cuidado de no responder á la pregunta que le he hecho.

Hacer una pregunta. Preguntar. Deducir.

Ayunar.

Estar en avunas.

Avisar. Noticiar. Informar. Hacer saber á alguno, (alguna

cosa).

Precautelar. Precaucionar.

de la vuelta de su hermano. (que su hermano ha vuelto).

La sobriedad.

El tamaño.

La ballena.

El guerrero.

El labrador.

El ratón.

The rat. The sheep, the mutton.

The skin. To crawl.

Matutinal, belonging to the morning.

To clear up. To elucidate. The weather is clearing up.

To refresh.

Refresh yourself, and return to Repose V., (refrésquese), y vuelva me immediately.

To whiten. To bleach. To blacken.

To turn pale. To grow pale.

To grow old.

To grow young.

To blush. To redden.

To make merry.

To make one's self merry.

He makes merry at my expense. To feign. To dissemble. To pretend.

He knows the art of dissembling.

To procrastinate. To go slow about. I do not like to transact business with that man, for he always goes very slow about it.

> A proof. This is a proof.

To stray, to get lost, to lose one's self, to lose one's way,

La rata. El carnero. La piel. Arrastrar.

Matutinal. Matutino. Matinal.

Aclarar. Despejar. Poner en claro. El tiempo se aclara. Refrescar. Refrescarse.

Descansar. Reposar.

acá inmediatamente.

Blanquear. Emblanquecer. Ennegrecer.

Ponerse pálido.

Perder (mudar) el color.

Le Envejecer. Envejecerse. Avejentarse. Aviejarse.

Rejuvenecer. Remozar. Abochornarse. Correrse. Sonrosearse. Sonrojarse.

Tener vergüenza, (rubor). Alegrar á. Alegrarse de.

Divertir á. Divertirse á, (con). Alegrarse. Divertirse. Ponerse (estar) alegre. Él se divierte á mi costa.

(Fingir. Aparentar. Disimular. Encubrir.

Él sabe el arte de fingir, (disimular).

Diferir. Dilatar.

Dejar de un día para otro.

No me gusta tener negocios con ese hombre, porque siempre los despacha con pies de plomo.

Una prueba.

Esta es una prueba.

Descaminarse. Descarriarse. Extraviarse. Perderse.

Perder el camino.

Through.

Por. De medio á medio. De parte á parte. De un lado á otro. De través. Al través. Por medio.

Por en medio. Por entre.

The cannon ball went through La bala del cañón pasó de un lado the wall.

á otro de la muralla.

I ran him through the body.

Le atravesé el cuerpo con mi espada. Le envasé mi espada en el cuerpo.

LECTURA

Los Animales

Hay animales de distintas especies: los hay que caminan ó se arrastran sobre la tierra que vuelan en el espacio y que nadan en las aguas. Hay animales de todos tamaños, desde la inmensa ballena hasta los animalitos visibles únicamente con microscopio y que pueden vivir á millares en una sola gota de agua. El microscopio los hace aparecer cientos y hasta miles de veces mayores de lo que son en realidad.

El perro es un animal doméstico y el fiel amigo y guardián del hombre; el caballo participa de los trabajos del guerrero y del labrador, y el gato limpia el hogar de ratones y ratas.

El asno y la llama son animales en extremo laboriosos y su paciencia y sobriedad aumentan todavía más su utilidad.

El gallo despierta al hombre con su canto matinal invitándolo al trabajo y á la vigilancia.

El buey, el camero y la vaca alimentan con su carne al hombre, dándole además la vaca su leche. La piel de todos estos animales sirve para hacer cueros y suelas para zapatos y con la de la cabra se fabrican algunos vestidos; la leche de este animal y la de la burra son muy saludables.

EXERCISE

1. The Emperor Charles the Fifth being one day out hunting lost his way in the forrest. Coming to a house he entered it to refresh himself. There were in it four men, who pretended to be asleep. One of them arose, and

approaching the emperor told him that he had dreamed he would take his watch; and he took it. Then another rose and said he had dreamed that his overcoat (sobretodo) fitted him wonderfully; and he took it. The third took his purse. At last the fourth came up, and said he hoped he would not take it ill if he searched him, and in doing so perceived around the emperor's neck a small gold chain to which a whistle was attached, of which he wished to rob him. But the emperor said: "Mw good friend, before depriving me of this trinket. I must teach you its virtue." Saving this, he blew the whistle. His attendants, who were seeking him, hastened to the house, and were astonished to behold his Majesty in such a state. But the emperor, seeing himself out of danger, said: "These men have dreamed all that they wished. I desire in my turn also to dream." And after having mused a few seconds, he said: "I have dreamed that all four of you deserve to be hanged." No sooner was this spoken than it was carried out immediately in front of the 2. A certain king was one day making his entrance into a town at two o'clock in the afternoon. At that hour the senate dispatched a committee of deputies to compliment him. The one who was to speak began thus: "Alexander the Great, the great Alexander," and stopped short. The king, who was very hungry, said: "Ah! my friend, Alexander the Great had dined, and I am still fasting." Having said this, he proceeded to the hall of government, where a magnificent dinner had been prepared for him. 3. A good old man, who was very ill, sent for his wife, who was still very young, and said to her: "My dear, you see that my last hour is approaching, and that I am compelled to leave you. If, therefore, you wish me to die in peace you must do me a favor. You are still young, and will, without doubt, marry again; knowing this, I request of you not to wed Mr. M.; for I confess that I have always been very jealous of him, and am so still. I should therefore die in despair if you did not promise me this." The wife answered: "My dear husband, I entreat you not to let this hinder you from dying in peace; for I assure you that, if even I wished to wed him I could not do so, being already promised to another."

EIGHTY-FIFTH LESSON—Lección Octogésimaquinta

To double. Duplicate.

The double.

That merchant asks twice as much as he ought.

The gander, the goose.

The bacon. The pigeon.

The hog, the wild-boar. To proportion, to furnish.

To accustom, to accustom one's

self.

Carnivorous.

Frugivorous, herbivorous.

To renew.

To stun.

Wild, giddy.

Open, frank. Real. I told him ves.

I told him no. To squeeze.

To lay up, to put by.

Put your money by.

As soon as I have read my book, I put it by.

I do not care much about going to the play to-night.

To satisfy one's self.

I have been eating for an hour, and I can not satisfy my hunger.

To be satisfied.

To quench one's thirst.

I have been drinking for a half Hace media hora que estoy behour, but I can not quench my thirst.

To be thirsty.

Doblar. Duplicar.

El duplo. El doble.

Ese comerciante pide dos veces

más de lo que debe.

El ganso. El tocino.

El pichón. El puerco.

Proporcionar.

Acostumbrar.

Carnívoro. Frugivoro. Renovar.*

Aturdir. Atolondrar. Atontar.

(Atronado. Alocado. Desatinado. Atolondrado.

Franco. Ingenuo. Sincero. Verdadero. Real.

Le dije que sí. Le dije que no.

Apretar.*

(Juntar. Cerrar.* Apretar. Guardar. Guarde V. su dinero.

Luego que hube leido mi libro lo guardé.

No me da cuidado ir. ó no. á la comedia esta noche.

Hartar. Satisfacer.*

He estado comiendo una hora, y no puedo satisfacer mi hambre.

Estar satisfecho, (harto).

(Refrescarse. Refrigerarse.

Apagar la sed.

biendo y no puedo apagar mi sed.

Tener sed. Estar sediento.

On both sides, on every side. On all sides.

Permit me, madam, to introduce to you Mr. G., an old friend of my family.

I am delighted to become acquainted with you.

I shall do all in my power to deserve your good opinion.

our house.

to conquer envy; merit gives it birth, and merit destroys it.

De ambas partes.

Por ambos lados. Por todos lados. Por todos lados. Por todas partes. Señora, permitame V. que le pre-

sente el señor G., antiguo amigo de mi familia.

Tengo mucho gusto en conocer á

Haré cuanto esté de mi parte para merecer la buena opinión de V.

We are very happy to see you at Nos consideramos muy felices en ver á V. en nuestra casa.

It is the prerogative of great men Es prerogativa de los grandes hombres conquistar la envidia; el mérito la hace nacer, y el mérito la destruye.

LECTURA

LOS ANIMALES—Continuación

Ahora volveremos á hablar sobre los animales. estudio de ellos podemos acostumbrarnos al uso de muchas palabras útiles.

Del puerco se saca el tocino y una carne que se conserva bien cuando está salada. El cordero proporciona sebo para velas y lana para telas, su carne es muy substanciosa; también los pichones, los pollos, los patos y los gansos nos proporcionan hermosas plumas y una carne delicada.

Entre los animales, hay unos carnívoros y otros frugívoros; los primeros se llaman así porque se alimentan de la carne de otros animales y los segundos porque se sustentan de vegetales, como hierbas, frutas y legumbres. El hombre es carnívoro y frugívoro á la vez, puesto que su alimento se compone de frutas y vegetales como también de la carne de los animales que arriba he nombrado y de otros varios.

EXERCISE

1. A certain man had two sons, one of whom liked to sleep very late in the morning, while the other was very industrious, and always arose very early. The latter went out one day very early and found a purse well filled with money. He ran to his brother to inform him of his good fortune, and said to him: "See, Louis, what is obtained by rising early." "Indeed," answered his brother, "if the person to whom it belongs had not risen earlier than I, he would not have lost it." 2. A lazy young fellow on being asked what made him lie in bed so long, replied: "I am occupied with listening to counsel every morning. Industry advises me to get up: sloth counsels me to lie still; and so they give me twenty reasons pro and con, (en pro y en contra). It is my part to hear what is said on both sides; and by the time the case is over dinner is ready." 3. Cornelia, the illustrious mother of the Gracchi, (los Gracos), after the death of her husband. who left her with twelve children, dedicated herself to the care of her family, with a wisdom and prudence that won for (adquirir*) her universal esteem. Only three out of the twelve lived to years of maturity; one daughter, Sempronia, whom she married to the second Scipio Africanus; and two sons, Tiberius and Caius, whom she brought up with so much care, that, though they were generally acknowledged to have been born with the most happy dispositions, it was considered that they were still more indebted to the training which she had bestowed upon them in the time of their childhood and youth.

EIGHTY-SIXTH LESSON-Lección Octogésimasexta

SOME PRACTICAL IDIOMS

To do everything gracefully. To bury or put aside an affair. To be wet to the skin.

To obtain a thing without pain or Conseguir una cosa á pie quedo. labor.

To sustain one's opinion stead- Sostener su opinión á pie firme. fastly.

To bribe.

To be loaded with honorable Tener muchas campanillas. titles.

The principal town of a district. Cabeza de partido.

Tener gracia para todo. Echar tierra á alguna cosa. Estar mojado hasta los huesos.

Untar las manos.

To get into favor, (to please). To hit upon a thing, (to find it out).

To lose one's livelihood.

To be crestfallen or dispirited.

To defend a thing with all one's might or force.

To waste one's time in searching Andar á caza de gangas. for bargains.

To be roving and wandering Andar de Ceca en Meca. about.

To be at cross purposes or to deal (Andar en dimes y diretes.

in ifs and ands. To walk blindly.

To walk on all-fours.

To conform to the times.

To be tossed from pillar to post:

To go with a design to deceive somebody.

To five very economically.

Not to say that his mouth is his No decir esta boca es mía.

To be the talk of the town.

Not to dare to say no.

Mum's the word.

To act out of reason.

In one's way, going along.

To come off victorious in an en- Quedar el campo por uno. gagement or dispute.

To be in high office or to be in an Estar en el candelero. exalted station.

That is another kind of speech.

To be stranger to fear.

A sinecure.

Not to be able to bring one to No poder hacer carrers con alreason.

At all events.

vou see.

Sight unseen or without examina- A ojos cerrados. tion.

Caer en gracia. Caer en ello.

Quedar en la calle.

Andar (or ir) de capa caída.

Defender una cosa á capa y es

pada.

Andar en dares y tomares.

Andar á ciegas. Andar á gatas.

Andar con el tiempo, (or al uso).

Andar de Herodes á Pilatos. Andar con segundas, (or con ma

las intenciones). Andar pie con bola.

Andar de boca en boca.

No tener boca para decir no, er negar.

Punto en boca. Ir fuera de camino.

De camino.

Ese es otro cantar.

No conocer la cara al miedo.

Carne sin hueso.

guno.

En todo caso.

There is nothing more than what No hay más cera que la que arde.

To cure one excess with another.

To hit the mark.

To talk incessantly.

To give cause for laughing.

To make one cry.

To clothe one. To feed one.

To give trouble or to grieve.

To trust.

To encourage an undertaking.

To publish, to print or to bring to Dar á la estampa or dar á iuz. light.

To shut the door upon one.

To give for nothing.

To put off with words and excuses.

To stretch. To consent.

To share with or to inform.

To give security or to find bail. To wage war, to torment or to vex.

To wish good day.

To congratulate on one's birthdav.

To surrender. To shake hands.

To manage one's affairs in an able Darse maña. manner.

To set sail.

It gives me no concern.

To leave a word or orders.

To leave in writing.

To excel or to surpass. To delay or to procrastinate.

To leave something unsaid.

Make yourself easy.

I understand what you tell me. To be ready to set out.

To be on the alert.

To be in good humor or to be in Estar de buen humor, (or de mal

bad spirits.

To stand sentry.

Sacar un clavo con otro clavo.

Dar en el clavo.

Hablar por los codos.

Dar que reir. Dar que llorar.

Dar de vestir. Dar de comer.

Dar que sentir.

Dar al flado, (or á crédito).

Dar calor (ánimo or alma) á una

empresa.

Dar con la puerta en la cara-

Dar de balde.

Dar con la entretenida. Dar de sí. Dar el sí.

Dar parte.

Dar fianza. Dar fiador.

Dar guerra,

Dar los buenos días.

Darle á uno los días.

Darse por vencido. Darse las manos.

Darse á la vela.

No se me da nada.

Dejar dicho, (mandado). Dejar escrito.

Dejar atrás. Dejar para mañana.

Dejarse alguna cosa en el tintero.

(Descuide V.

) No le dé á V. cuidado.

Estoy en lo que V. me dice. Estar para (or por) salir.

Estar alerta.

humor).

Estar de centinela.

To be in haste, in a hurry.

To have a sound understanding.

To be idle.

To be in difficulties. To be careful of everything.

To be at hand.

To be kept in constraint.

To be in want of money.

To speak through the eyes.

To speak by heart.

To act as a notary. To endeavor to arrive.

To make any one lose his temper.

To pay attention to. To play the part of. To intend or to mean.

To kill two birds at a throw.

To keep one's bed or to be ill.

To pretend not to see. To affect to be deaf.

To take charge of.

To pretend to be ignorant or in- Hacerse chiquito, (inocente). nocent.

To praise one exceedingly.

To have no concern in a thing.

To go on softly. Walk carefully. To become moderate or to restrain

one's self.

Who is there? Who goes there? ¿Quién va?

To reprimand severely.

Checkmate.

To discover any one's designs. To rain hard or to rain bucketfuls.

To be at outs.

To be one's chief support.

To be born to wretchedness.

To be born to good luck.

Estar de prisa. Estar en su juicio.

Estar mano sobre mano.

Estar apurado. Estar en todo. Estar á la mano.

Estar á raya.

Faltarle á uno el dinero.

To be merry or to be in good hu- Estar de flesta. Estar para flesta.

Hablar con los ojos. Hablar de memoria. Hacer de escribano.

Hacer por llegar.

Hacer á uno perder los estribos.

Hacer caso de. Hacer papel. Hacer intención.

Hacer de un camino (una vía) dos

mandados. Hacer cama.

Hacer la vista gorda.

Hacer oídos de mercader.

Hacerse cargo de.

Hacerse lenguas de alguno. No ir nada en una cosa.

Ir con tiento. Irse á la mano.

¿Quién va allá? ¿Quién vive?

Dar un jabón. Jaque y mate.

Conocer el juego. Llover á cántaros.

Andar á (de) malas. Ser sus pies y sus manos.

Nacer de cabeza.

Nacer de pies.

To affect business.

To have an absolute power over Tener el palo y el mando. anything.

To act without cause or motive, Obrar sin qué ni para qué. or without rhyme or reason.

To put to the sword. To become surety.

To take anything in the worst Tomar por donde quema.

To make futile or silly allega- Dar razones de pie de bancc. tions.

To try to ruin or destroy a per- Tirar como á real de enemigo. son or thing.

Not to know what one is about.

For ever and ever.

To have equal numbers.

To feel one's way.

To understand thoroughly. To be hand and glove.

Better late than never.

To bear up under the frowns of Estar al yunque. fortune.

Death rather than dishonor.

A thing well begun is half fin-

ished. Arms and literature render fam-

ilies illustrious. There is a time for everything.

He who has faults of his own ought not reflect upon another for having the same.

Gifts pave the way.

Tell me thy company and I shall tell thee thy character.

Trust in God, for your own merit Fortuna te dé Dios, hijo, que el avails but little.

at once seldom succeeds in any.

Fingir negocios.

Pasar á cuchillo. Quedar por alguno.

No saber lo que se pesca. Por los siglos de los siglos.

Estar tantos á tantos. Andar tentando.

Estar á lo último. Ser uña y carne.

Más vale tarde que nunca.

Comer arena antes que hacer vileza.

Barba bien remojada, medio rapada.

Almete y bonete hacen cosas de copete.

Cada cosa en su tiempo y nabos en adviento.

Cállate y callemos, que sendas nos debemos.

Dádivas quebrantan peñas.

Dime con quien andas y direte quien eres.

saber poco te basta.

He who undertakes many things Galgo que muchas liebres levanta, ninguna mata.

Never advise to go to war, or to Ir á la guerra, ni casar, no se ha the marriage altar.

To affect great diligence, and Las llaves en la cinta, y el gato neglect one's duty.

God helps him who helps himself. Fools and obstinate people make

lawvers rich.

Neither look into another's letter, nor put your hand into another man's safe.

A good paymaster needs no pawn. Al buen pagador no le duelen

communication good manners.

Make your affairs public, and every one will judge of them according to his own fancy.

You are worth as much as you Tanto vales, cuanto tienes. possess.

A wolf in a lamb's skin.

Wind and good luck are seldom Viento y ventura poco dura. lasting.

de aconsejar.

en la cocina.

Á quien madruga Dios le ayuda. Necios y porfiados hacen ricos á los letrados, (abogados).

Ni ojo en la carta, ni mano en el arca.

prendas.

corrupts Quien con lobos anda á aullar se enseña.

> Saca lo tuyo al mercado, y unos dirán que es negro, y otros que es blanco.

Uñas de gato, y hábito de beato.

CARTAS MERCANTILES

PROPOSICIÓN DE CORRESPONDENCIA

Señor Don Ignacio Guevara,

Calle del Seminario, Número 412,

Madrid, España. Nueva York, Enero 1 de 1901.

MUY SENOR MÍO:

Deseando establecer una correspondencia segura con una persona de probidad en esa ciudad para los varios encargos y comisiones que pueden ocurrirme en los asuntos de mi comercio, é informado de las circunstancias y cualidades que concurren en V., me tomo la libertad de suplicarle se sirva aceptar el encargo de corresponsal mío y de participarme su resolución para mi gobierno.

La buena reputación de que gozan V. y su casa en ésta me induce igualmente á ofrecerle mis servicios para cuanto fuere de su agrado; y ora acepte V. mi proposición ó no, apreciaré mucho se sirva hon-

rarme con sus mandatos.

De V. afmo. y atento S. S.,

José Cárdenas.

CONTESTACIÓN

Sr. Dn. José Cárdenas,

Broadway, Número 20,

Nueva York, E. U. A. MADRID, Febrero 9 de 1901.

MUY SENOR MÍO:

El honor de ser corresponsal de una persona del crédito de V. no ouede dejar de aceptarse con la mayor satisfacción. Yo desde luego lo acepto, dándole las más expresivas gracias por esta prueba de confianza con que me distingue V., y ofreciendo servirle con la puntualidad y honradez que me son propias.

Espero probarle á V. la sinceridad de mis sentimientos luego que se sirva emplearme según propone; y me aprovecharé igualmente de sus ofertas, á que estoy muy reconocido.

Quedo de V. afmo. y atento S. S., Q. B. S. M.,1

IGNACIO GUEVARA.

¹Q. B. S. M.—Que besa sus manos, who kisses your hands—is a polite form greatly employed in the past, but now falling into disuse.

AVISO DE EMBARQUE

Sr. Dn. IGNACIO GUEVARA,

Madrid, España. Nueva York, Abril 7 de 1901.

MUY SENOR MÍO:

En esta fecha y de conformidad con las órdenes de V. he embarcado por su cuenta y riesgo á bordo de la fragata española "La Esperanza," su capitán Don Próspero Ligero, con destino á Cádiz, y á la orden y consignación del Señor Luis Ochoa, los efectos que constan en la factura y conocimiento que incluyo en ésta.

Espero que sean del gusto de V., así por su calidad, como por su precio, y que lleguen bien acondicionados, pues se han enfardado con mucho esmero.

De V. afmo. y atento S. S.,

José Cárdenas.

FACTURA

Factura de los efectos que por cuenta y riesgo del Señor Don Ignacio Guevara, del comercio de Madrid, y con la marca y el número del margen, tengo embarcados á bordo de la fragata española "La Esperanza," capitán Don Próspero Ligero, con destino á Cádiz, para entregar á la orden de Don Luis Ochoa: á saber:

MARCA.		Prso.		
		Bruto.	Neto.	Precio.
L. O.	1 & 10—Diez cajas de 11 27 Diez y siete fardos de 28 39 Doce barriles de vino de Jerez 40 45 Seis huacales de loza Derechos			
	Gastos			

Nueva York, Abril 7 de 1901.

¹ S. E. ú O.—Salvo error ú omisión, "errors and omissions excepted."

CONOCIMIENTO

Digo yo (Don Próspero Ligero) capitán que soy de la fragata nombrada "La Esperanza," de porte de — toneladas, que al presente está surta, anclada, enjuta y bien acondicionada en este puerto de Nueva York para con la buena ventura, seguir este presente viaje al puerto de Cádiz, que conozco haber recibido de Don José Cárdenas, (aqui la enumeración de los artículos embarcados) todos enjutos v bien acondicionados v marcados con la marca del margen: con los cuales me obligo, llevándome Dios en buen salvamento con el dicho mi barco, al dicho puerto, de acudir por vos y en vuestro nombre á Don Luis Ochoa pagándome de flete á razón de —— por --- con --- por ciento de capa y sus averías acostumbradas, á estilo de comercio. Y para cumplir y guardar todo lo dicho y expuesto, obligo mi persona y bienes, juntamente con el dicho mi barco, sus fletes, aparejos, y lo mejor parado de él. En fe de lo cual os dov tres conocimientos de un mismo tenor, firmados de mi nombre por mí, ó por mi contramaestre, ó segundo, el uno cumplido, los otros no valgan.

NUEVA YORK, Abril 7 de 1901.

PRÓSPERO LIGERO.

CONTESTACIÓN Á LA ANTERIOR

Sr. Dn. José Cárdenas.

Nueva York.

MADRID, Julio 3 de 1901.

MUY SENOR MÍO:

Don Luis Ochoa, mi corresponsal en Cádiz, me avisa con fecha de —— haber llegado á aquel puerto procedente del de Nueva York, la fragata "La Esperanza," su capitán Dn. Próspero Ligero, é igualmente haber recibido de éste, bien acondicionados, todos los efectos que constan en la factura y conocimiento, que V. me remitió con su muy apreciable de Abril 7 próximo pasado.

Incluyo en ésta una letra de cambio, valor de —— á ocho días vista, á cargo de los Señores —— de ese comercio, que se servirá V. cobrar y abonar á mi cuenta.

Doy á V. las más expresivas gracias por la eficacia y cuidado con que se sirve desempeñar mis encargos y me repito.

De V. afmo. y atento S. S.,

Ignacio Guevara.

LETRA DE CAMBIO

Madrid, Julio 3 de 1901.

Por \$---.

Á ocho días vista se servirán Vds. mandar pagar por esta mi primera de cambio (no habiéndolo hecho ya por la segunda, ni ter-

cera de esta misma fecha y valor) á la orden de Don José Cárdenas la cantidad de ——, valor recibido de dicho señor, que anotarán Vds. en cuenta según aviso (or sin otro aviso).

Afmo. y atento S. S.,

IGNACIO GUEVARA.

EL ENDOSO

Páguese á la orden de Don ----, Madrid, Agosto 2 de 1901.

UN PAGARÉ

\$150.

FILADELFIA, Enero 10 de 1901.

Pagaré á veinte días, contados desde la fecha, á Don Guzmán de Alfarache ó á su orden, la cantidad de ciento y cincuenta pesos, valor recibido de dicho señor en dinero efectivo (ó en géneros) á toda mi satisfacción.

Pedro Cabello.

UN VALE

Vale por quinientos pesos fuertes, que yo, el abajo firmado, Pedro Pérez, vecino y del comercio de ésta, me obligo á pagar el día 21 del próximo mes de Febrero á la orden de Dn. Pedro Hernández, y en el domicilio de Don Rafael Mangual, del mismo comercio; cuya cantidad procede de varios géneros que en este día me ha vendido y yo confieso haber recibido á mi entera satisfacción.—Habana, Enero 22 de 1901.

\$500.00.

Pedro Pérez.

CARTA ORDEN

Sr. Dn. N. N.

Manila, Marzo 4 de 1901.

Muy Senor mio:

En virtud de la presente, se servirá V. entregar (or pagar) al dador Don Juan Cancela, la cantidad de doscientos y cincuenta pesos fuertes, (\$250), valor recibido del mismo, que anotará V. en cuenta, sin otro aviso, (or según aviso), de su muy atento S. S.

D. M.

CARTA DE AVISO

Sr. Dn. N. N. }

Manila, Marzo 4 de 1901.

MUY SENOR MÍO:

Con esta fecha he librado á cargo de V. y por mi cuenta, una letra por valor de doscientos y cincuenta pesos fuertes, (\$250), paga-

deros á Don Juan Cancela. Espero le haga V. el honor acostumbrado, y me la cargue en cuenta, pues yo se la dejo abonada.

Quedo de V. afmo. y atento S. S.,

D. M.

CARTA DE RECOMENDACIÓN

Sr. Dn. —— }

Ponce, P. R., Abril 15 de 1901.

Muy Señor mío y amigo:

Dn. R. M., dador de la presente, pasa á esa á asuntos propios, (con el objeto de recuperar su salud). Es una persona de todo mi aprecio, y como tal se lo recomiendo á V. á quien agradeceré como propios cuantos favores se sirviere hacerle; quedando yo obligado á la recíproca siempre que V. tenga la bondad de proporcionarme la ocasión.

Puede suceder que dicho señor, mi recomendado, haya menester algún dinero, en cuyo caso se servirá V. franquearle hasta la cantidad de mil quinientos pesos (\$1500), constituyéndome yo responsable á abonar á V. la que le entregare, y de la cual tomará V. recibo por duplicado, á cuya vista le abonaré la que fuere.—Para evitar contingencias va su firma á continuación de la mía.

Estando seguro de que V. tendrá particular satisfacción en hacer el conocimiento de una persona de tan apreciables cualidades y que el mismo le estimulará á desempeñar perfectamente mi encargo, reitero á V. mi afecto y quedo como siempre á sus órdenes,

como su atento S. S.,

M. V. C.-R. M.

CIRCULAR

Sr. Dn. Francisco Canales.

San Juan, P. R., Enero 19 de 1901.

MUY SENOR NUESTRO:

Permítanos V. que nos tomemos la libertad de anunciarle que acabamos de establecer en este puerto una casa de comercio bajo la razón social de Guerrero y Uribe.

Nuestro caudal y la experiencia de los negocios, que hemos adquirido durante el tiempo que hemos trabajado en el escritorio de los Señores Ruiz y Compañía, (que nos han permitido valernos de su nombre), nos ponen en estado de desempeñar los negocios que se nos encarguen, á satisfacción de las personas que se dignen honrarnos con su confianza.

De V. afmos. y atentos S. S.,

GUERRERO Y URIBE.

Firma de B. Enrique Guerrero-B. Enrique Guerrero.

" Fausto T. Uribe-Fausto T. Uribe.

ORDEN PARA HACER UN SEGURO

Señores NAVARRO Y PEREA.

MUY SENORES NUESTROS:

Á bordo de la fragata española, Isabela, capitán Francisco Chaves, que hace viaje á —— hemos registrado por nuestra cuenta los efectos que constan en la factura y conocimiento adjunto. La fragata es nueva y velera, el capitán muy experimentado y se hará á la vela pasado mañana.—Estas noticias serán suficientes para que Vds. puedan proceder á asegurarla, lo cual les suplicamos hagan con un veinticinco por ciento de aumento por ganancias imaginarias.

Nos repetimos de Vds. afmos. y atentos S. S.,

GUERRERO Y URIBE.

CUENTA CORRIENTE

17KHKN *	nèndez en su cuenta co-
rriente con B. I	Navarro é Hijos.
1901.	1901.
Enero 13. Importe de la fac-	Enero 5. Producto líqui-
tura remitida	do del azúcar
por el <i>Pepe</i> \$	recibido por
Marzo 9. Pagado por el se-	La Esperan-
guro del <i>Arro</i> -	za \$
gante	Abril 17. Valor de su le-
Junio 23. Pagado por su	tra de cambio
cuenta á D. E.	á cargo de N
Peugnet	Febrero 11. Alcance á su fa-
	vor que pasa á
****	cuenta nueva
	\$
S E i O (Sa	lvo error ú omisión)
	Y., Enero 1 de 1901,
211	B. NAVARRO É HIJOS.
CUENTA DE	UNA DEUDA
Don Lazarillo de Tormes debe á	
	Pedro de Urdemalas.
Por dos casacas de paño, superfino	, una azul y otra negra: \$
Por la hechura y avíos de dos cha	lecos
	ntalones
Por la compostura de un sobretod	0
BARCELONA, Junio 16 de 190	1. Total \$,
	Digitized by GOOGLE

RECIBO

He recibido de Don Leopoldo Peugnet la cantidad de ciento cuarenta y nueve pesos, tres reales y medio por saldo de todas cuentas hasta la fecha.

Nueva York, Febrero 8 de 1901.

\$149.43\frac{3}{4}.

FRANCISCO ESTÉVEZ.

OTRO

Recibí de Don Fulano Droguete sesenta pesos á cuenta de mayor cantidad.

Jauja, Septiembre 30 de 1900.

\$60.00.

PASCUAL BOBO.

CARTAS FAMILIARES

Carta de Don Gregorio Mayáns al Dr. Don Assensio Sales, sobre el modo de responder

MUY SENOR MÍO Y AMIGO:

En el trato familiar solemos hablar con libertad y con aquella confianza que merecen los amigos; pero por escrito suele ser peligroso explicarse con la misma claridad; porque permanece la memoria de lo que se escribe; y aunque el amigo sea fiel, tal vez no lo es el que hereda sus cartas, y con el tiempo paran éstas en donde menos se piensa. Por eso es muy prudente la duda de V. sobre el modo con que uno debe portarse por escrito.

Hemos de distinguir el que pregunta del que responde. Aquél tiene mayor libertad; porque puede callar sin nota; ó hacer la pregunta con arte, del modo menos ofensivo, y más cauteloso. Si lo que se ha de preguntar tiene conexión con la ofensa, y leído no puede dejar de causarla; hemos de distinguir las preguntas á que no nos obliga la necesidad de las voluntarias. Las primeras son inexcusables, y así deben hacerse del modo más cauto; esto es menos circunstanciado, respecto de la inteligencia de otros, con quien no se trata. Las segundas deben evitarse cuanto sea posible. Hecha la pregunta, se ha de considerar, si conviene responder, ó no. Si es necesario, ó, si conviene responder, se puede hacer con palabras alusivas á la pregunta, callando la persona, ó el negocio de que se trata, y respondiendo en suposición del hecho; si bien éste á veces es tal, que él mismo señala la persona, y el hecho, por mucho que se quiera ocultar: como se ve en las cartas de Cicerón á Atico. Si es peligroso responder absolutamente, debe callarse; y en casos de trai-

ción, entregarse la pregunta á quien convenga por no hacerse cómplice, ni aún disimulador en el delito de lesa majestad.

Cuando Don José Antonio de Quirós salió de la prisión de la Inquisición, y me escribió, pedía la caridad que yo le respondiese, y lo hice de modo que habiéndolo aprisionado de nuevo, se alabaron mucho mis respuestas, pues dije á aquel insigne varón lo que le convenía, pensando lo que le podía suceder. Callar era contra la amistad, que siempre le había yo profesado, y le debía; hablar pedía mucha prudencia.

Estoy leyendo, y apuntando los tres últimos libros de Dion Casio, que publicó en Roma en el año 1724, Nicolás Carminio Falcón, habiéndolos sacado de la Librería Vaticana.

Usted me mande; y nuestro Señor guarde á usted muchos años como deseo. Olivia á 6 de Junio de 1750.

B. L. M. de usted,

Su más seguro servidor y amigo, Don Gregorio Mayáns y Sicar.

Al Dr. Don Assensio Sales.

Carta de Don Antonio Solis á Don Antonio Carnero, sobre asuntos familiares

SENOR Y AMIGO MÍO:

Vamos al negocio, que es muy tarde para no decir lo que se viene á la pluma. La carta que vino en mi pliego se dió con la advertencia que V. previno, en cuanto á su seguridad.

Las vitelas han hecho ruido. Sólo me han dicho que el San Vicente viene gordo, y será menester enflaquecerlo de manera que parezca algo más penitente; y que tenga los brazos levantados en acción de predicar el juicio final. V. vaya teniendo cuidado con que ya se piden gollerías, como si fueran vitelas; y se han de pagar como las miniaturas; ponga V. uno y otro en el libro de las partidas que se deben, por lo que pudiere suceder.

Espero, en respuesta del correo que viene, la censura de V. y del señor marqués sobre lo que ha parecido mi libro en esas regiones del norte, que por acá continúan sus aplausos; aunque se habrán vendido unos ciento cincuenta tomos, pues en todo influye la falta de dinero y en Madrid hay pocos hombres que tengan dos reales de á ocho juntos.

He pagado enteramente á D. N., porque me tenía con cuidado el maestro de obras. Á V. se debe la de la Nueva España y tengo por evidente que no se habría impreso si no fuera por el socorro de V.;

porque la ayuda de costa todavía se está en el aire. Y así puede V. llamar suya la historia y las demás razones. Á esta acción que ha hecho tanto ruido, de haber acompañado al divinísimo nuestro rey, escribí estos dos sonetos, porque su majestad se acordó de mi antigua vena. V. verá en ellos el trabajo que me han costado, por el que le costará el leerlos. Á D. Martín tenemos ya con título de su majestad, en que le nombra corrector general de los libros de estos reinos; y está en ánimo de ser tan conocido como Murcia de la Llana. Tiene cincuenta doblones de salario, y lo que produjeren las erratas. Pone desde luego á las órdenes de V. esta dignidad, habiendo conseguido el ser persona de muchos envidiosos.

Sírvase V. ponerme á los pies de mi señora Doña N., y quédese lo demás para otra ocasión. Guarde Dios á V. muchos años. Madrid, etc.

Don Antonio de Solfs.

Carta del Padre José Francisco de Isla á su hermana Doña Francisca de Isla y Lozada

VILLAGARCÍA, á 24 de Julio de 1758.

MUJER DE TU MARIDO:

Has dado en la manía, de algunas semanas á esta parte, de que te pierdo el respeto, sin que vo acierte á concebir cómo se puede perder lo que jamás se ha tenido. Pero tú eres una pequeña diablesa, y sabes más que Merlín, por lo que te estimaré me comuniques este secreto, que puede importar para más de dos ocasiones. Hallar una cosa antes de perderse es habilidad que á cada paso la usan los ladrones: pero perderse lo que jamás se posevó, no lo había tenido por posible, hasta que tú me aseguras que es cosa evidente. Al fin. si te he perdido el respeto, fijaré cedulones en las esquinas de los correos, (porque has de saber que los correos tienen esquinas), para que cualquiera persona que haya hallado un respeto que se perdió, acuda á ti, á quien pertenece, que se le pagará el hallazgo, y por lo que toca á mí, doy palabra de guardar tan bien el primero que te tenga, que no sólo no se pueda perder, pero que ninguno me le pueda encontrar. No sabía que estuviese por prior de ese convento de S. Agustín el Mro. Ocampo. Es de los hombres sabios, religiosos, honrados y atentos que he conocido. Dice bien; tratele mucho en Pamplona, y siempre le he profesado singular estimación. La he hecho muy grande de la memoria con que me honra, y de la amistad que me conserva. Te estimaré mucho, así á ti, como á Nicolás, que le correspondáis en vuestro nombre y en el mío con el más fino aprecio, tratándole con toda confianza, y sirviéndole en cuanto se le

ofrezca. Si antes de ahora hubiera sabido su destino, antes de ahora os habría hecho esta recomendación; porque tengo singular complacencia en que los hombres particulares sean particularmente distinguidos. Si todos fueran como el Rmo. Ocampo, no habría quejas, porque no habría gerundios. Dile cuanto quisieres de mi parte, en la inteligencia de que en nada te excederás. Ahora vete á pasear, que yo voy á escribir otras cartas.

Señora, B. T. P. (con un cardo) el más atento capellán de Ti.

Ella.

Yo

Carta de Luscinda á Cardenio

SEÑOR:

La palabra que Don Fernando os dió de hablar á vuestro padre para que hablase al mío, la ha cumplido mucho más en su gusto que en vuestro provecho. Sabed, señor, que él me ha pedido por esposa, y mi padre, llevado de la ventaja que él piensa que Don Fernando os hace, ha venido en lo que quiere con tantas veras, que de aquí á dos días se ha de hacer el desposorio, tan secreto y tan á solas que sólo han de ser testigos los cielos y alguna gente de casa. Cual yo quedo, imaginadlo: si os cumple venir, vedlo, y si os quiero bien ó no el suceso deste negocio os lo dará á entender. Á Dios plege que ésta llegue á vuestras manos antes que la mía se vea en condición de juntarse con la de quien tan mal sabe guardar la fe que prometo.

(Don Quijote, cap. XXVII.)

Carta de Don Carlos á Doña Francisca

BIEN MÍO:

Si no consigo hablar con usted, haré lo posible para que llegue á sus manos esta carta. Apenas me separé de usted, encontré en la posada al que yo llamaba mi enemigo; y al verle, no sé como no expiré de dolor. Me mandó que saliera inmediatamente de la ciudad, y fué preciso obedecerle. Yo me llamo Don Carlos, no Don Félix.

——Don Diego es mi tío. Viva usted dichosa y olvide para siempre á su infeliz amigo.

CARLOS DE URBINA.

(Moratin-El Si de las Niñas, Act III, sc. xii.)

ESQUELAS

M. V—— (el Sr., la Sra., or la Srta. A.) agradecerá mucho que el Señor N. (la Señora or Señorita B.) le (la) favorezca, (honre), con su compañía el lunes 8 del corriente después de las 7 de la tarde.

CALLE DE TROYA, Febrero 2 de 1901,

Sr. D. N—— Miércoles, 10 de Febrero de 1901.

QUERIDO AMIGO:

Esta noche vendrán á ésta muy de V. algunas personas que deseo la pasen con satisfacción; para esto cuento con V. cuya presencia

Esta noche vendrán á ésta muy de V. algunas personas que deseo la pasen con satisfacción; para esto cuento con V. cuya presencia espero para hacer brillante la compañía. Adiós, hasta la vista.

Amigo y servidor de V.—M. V.

M. V. saluda afectuosa y respetuosamente al Sr. —, y le quedará muy agradecido si se sirviera pasar en su compañía la noche del jueves próximo después de las 7.

Lunes, Febrero -- de 1901.

M. V—— B. L. M. al Señor —— (B. L. P. á la Sra. or Sta. N.) y acepta con gusto su invitación, por la que le da muchas gracias.

Martes ----.

M. V—— B. L. M. al Sr. —— y siente no poder gozar de su amable compañía la noche señalada, por hallarse comprometido de antemano.

M. V. saluda amigable y respetuosamente al Sr. —— y acepts con gusto su convite para la noche de ——.

Jueves á ----.

ELEMENTS OF SPANISH GRAMMAR

ELEMENTS OF SPANISH GRAMMAR

PRELIMINARY REMARKS

1. THERE are in Spanish nine parts of speech; namely, the noun, adjective, pronoun, verb, participle, adverb, preposition, conjunction, and interjection.

2. The first five of these parts of speech are capable of various degrees of inflection; that is, certain changes take place in their structure and termination to express number, gender, case, person, mode, or tense. The rest are invariable.

8. Although, strictly speaking, cases are wanting in Spanish, save in the personal pronouns, their technical names are sometimes used for exactness and conciseness of statement. The following table will explain:

CASE NAME.		Eng. equivalent.	Span. signs.	Eng. signs.
N.	Nominative.	Nom. or subject.		
G.	Genitive.	Possessive.	de,	's, s'. of.
D.	Dative.	Indirect objective.	á,	's, s'. of. to, at.
I. A.	Impers. Accusative.		'	
	. Person. Accusative.		á.	i
P.	Prepositional.	(With any preposition.)		

The use of these cases will be illustrated in treating of the different parts of speech.

THE ARTICLES

4. There are two articles—the definite, el, the, and the indefinite, un, a, an. They agree with the noun which they qualify in gender, number, and case, and are thus inflected:

SINGULAR.			Plural.		
N. El, G. Del, D. Al, A. El,	la, de la, á la, la,	the. 's, of the. to, at the. the.	Los, De los, Á los, Los,	las, de las, á las, las,	the. s', of the. to, at the. the.
N. Un,	una,	a, an, one.	Unos,	unas,	a few, some, certain.
G. De un	, de una	, of a, an, one.	De unos,	de unas,	of some, cer- tain.
D. Á un,	á una,	to, at a, an, one.	Á unos,	á unas,	to, at some,
A. Un,	una,	a, an.	Unos,	unas,	a few, some, certain.

- 5. Del, of the, and al, to the, are contracted from de el and a el, respectively.
- 6. In modern Spanish the uncontracted forms are used only when el belongs to a quoted epithet, title, or heading:

Un capítulo de "El Escándalo." A chapter from "The Escándalo."

7. El is now universally employed before feminine nouns in the singular beginning with an accented a, ha:

El alma, the soul.

El ave. the bird.

El águila, the eagle.

El hambre, the hunger.

It is not so used in the plural:

Las almas, the souls. Las aves, the birds. Las águilas, the eagles. Las hambres, the famines.

8. The indefinite article is often used in the same way:
Un ave, for una ave.
Un águila, for una águila.

This, however, is a questionable usage.

9. While, properly speaking, the indefinite article has no plural, the forms unos and unas are used to express the partitive sense of a substantive:

Él tiene unos caballos muy altos. He has some very tall horses.

10. So also unos and unas are employed in the indefinite sense

of some, a few, when the noun has no attribute, but this makes a weaker construction than unos cuantos or algunos:

Un caballero con unos libros. Vi á algunos ingleses. A gentleman with (some) books. I saw some Englishmen.

THE DETERMINATIVE LO

11. The quasi-neuter article, lo, the, is used with adjectives, adverbs, and pronouns to express substantive ideas:

Lo bueno, the good, that which Lo mejor, the best, that which is is good.

best.

Lo mío, mine, that which is mine. Lo suyo, his, that which is his. Haré lo posible para efectuarlo. I shall do my best to accomplish it.

Dicho lo cual se retiró.

Which being said, he withdrew.

12. Lo is also used as a pronoun, but this will be discussed later. (See Pronouns.)

THE NOUN

GENDER

- 13. There are two genders: masculine and feminine; and all substantives, even those which designate inanimate objects, substances, and abstract ideas, are of one of these genders.
- 14. In general, those Spanish common nouns which end in o are masculine, and those which end in a are feminine.
- 15. The gender of a word is to be determined either by its meaning or by its ending.
- 16. Those nouns which by their meaning are masculine may be thus classified:
- a. All nouns, of whatever ending, denoting males, or designating the titles, professions, or pursuits which are commonly associated with males:

El rey, the king.

El sastre, the tailor.

El cura, the curate (priest).

El buey, the ox.

- b. The gender of the names of countries, cities, provinces, and towns ending in o, a, follows the general rule given above (Section 14); that is, those terminating in o being masculine, those in a feminine; if, however, they end in a consonant, they are mostly masculine:
- El Carpio, Lugo, Madrid, Burgos, Brasil; la Andalucía, Valencia.

c. Masculines in o may be poetically used in the feminine, when la ciudad, the city, is understood:

La ilustre Toledo.

Illustrious Toledo:

except in such cases as those where the article is inseparable from the noun:

Bernardo del Carpio.

Bernard of the Carpio.

- d. The names of most rivers, no matter what may be the ending.
- e. Those parts of speech which are invariable, when used substantively:

El si, the consent (yes).

El pro y el contra, the pro and

El pagaré, the promissory note.

the con.

f. The names of most fruit trees and their wood, the fruit usually being feminine:

El manzano, the apple-tree.

La manzana, the apple. Una naranja, an orange.

El naranjo, the orange-tree.

The following are exceptions:

La palmera, the palm-tree. La higuera, the fig-tree. Un dátil, a date. Un higo, a fig.

El limonero, the lemon-tree.
El membrillero, the quince-tree.
El albaricoquero, the apricot-tree.

Una breva, a fresh fig. Un limón, a lemon.

El membrillo, the quince. El albaricoque, the apricot.

El fruto is the *fruit* on the tree, or in a figurative sense; la fruta is the *fruit* after it is gathered, as when it is exposed for sale, or is brought on the table; but la rama, the bough, branch, is used of the branch or bough before it is removed from the tree; while el ramo denotes the branch after removal, or in a figurative sense.

- 17. The following classes of nouns are feminine by their meaning:
- a. Those, of whatever ending, which denote females, or designate dignities, titles, offices, professions, and pursuits associated with women:

La reina, the queen. La emperatriz, the empress. La costurera, the seamstress.

La doncella, the maid, lady's maid.

With the exception of duefic, master or mistress, and fingel, angel, applicable to either sex; though in some senses the feminine

dueña, mistress, is employed, as when a woman says, Soy dueña de mi misma, I am mistress of myself.

b. All the letters of the alphabet.

18. Masculines by ending are:

a. All common nouns that end in o, no matter what their signification may be:

El peso, the weight.

El reino, the kingdom.

Except la mano, the hand, and la reo, the (female) culprit.

b. Certain nouns, ending in a, designating males:

El carlista, the Carlist.

El periodista, the publisher of a periodical.

c. Also foreign words ending in an accented á:

El sofá, the sofa.

El maná, the manna.

d. Certain nouns in a and ema from Greek and Latin neuters, or such as follow their analogy:

El clima, the climate.

El problema, the problem.

El idioma, the language.

El sistema, the system.

El tema means the text, theme; la tema, the contention, the dispute.

19. Nouns are feminine by their termination:

a. Which end in a, excluding those already explained to be masculine.

b. Which end in dad, tad, ion, ie, tud, and umbre:

La verdad, the truth.

La especie, the kind, species.

La libertad, liberty.

La virtud, virtue.

La atención, attention.

La lumbre, the fire.

20. There are, in addition, many nouns which do not uniformly show the gender. These must be learned by association with the article which corresponds with them, and which serves to indicate their gender:

El árbol, the tree.

La cárcel, the jail.

21. Masculine nouns ending in a may assume the feminine article when applied to females:

Un belga, a Belgian, becomes una belga; un artista, an artista, becomes una artista.

22. A few feminines in a now generally take the masculine article when they denote males:

La guia, the guide, becomes el guia.

23. Several nouns designating persons, and not ending in a, have a common form for both genders:

El or la hereje, the heretic.

El or la joven, the youth, young man, or woman.

24. Many nouns which were feminine in Old Spanish, and are still considered as such in a poetic or elevated style, or in certain traditional phrases, are now masculine in ordinary prose:

El mar, the sea.

Alta mar, high sea.

- 25. Margen, margin, is masculine or feminine without change of meaning.
- 26. Arte, art, is always feminine in the plural, and predominantly so in the singular, though it is often masculine in the singular:

Las bellas artes, the fine arts.

El arte dramático, the dramatic

27. The following nouns, denoting inanimate objects, have a different meaning with a difference of gender:

El cometa, the comet.

La cometa, the kite.

El crisma, the holy oil,

La crisma, the head, (colloquial).

El cólera, the cholera.

La cólera, (the) rage.

Una canal, a canal, an artificial La canal, the natural water-way, water-way.

channel.

Un corte, a cut, edge.

Una corte, residence of a sover-

El capital, the capital (funds). El moral, the mulberry-tree (Mo- La moral, (the) ethics, morals.

La capital, the capital city.

rus nigra).

El frente, the front rank, (mili- La frente, the forehead.

tary), the face of a bastion. El parte, the telegraphic dis- La parte, the part, portion.

patch. El pendiente, a pendant, earring. Una pendiente, a slope, declivity. Un pez, (generic), a fish.

La pez, the tar, the pitch.

28. Compound nouns usually take the gender of the second member when that is singular, but if it is plural the whole word is masculine, be the second term what it may:

El ferrocarril, the railroad.

El cortaplumas, the pen-knife.

La guardarropa, the wardrobe.

El portamonedas, the porte-monnaie.

Tranvia, tramway, is masculine.

FORMATION OF THE FEMININE OF NOUNS DESIGNATING PERSONS

29. Those nouns which are capable of variation to express gender are changed from the masculine to the feminine:

a. By substituting a for final o:

El amo, the master. Una ama, a mistress (of the

house).

El muchacho, the boy. La muchacha, the girl.

The following words are to be excepted:

El diablo, the devil.

La diablesa, the she-devil.

El diácono, the deacon.

La diaconisa, the deaconess.

b. By adding a to the masculine finals d, l, n, r, s, and z:

El huésped, the guest, the boarder. La huéspeda, the female guest,

boarder.

El español, the Spaniard.

El alemán, the German.

El señor, the lord, gentleman.

El inglés, the Englishman.

El andaluz, the Andalucian.

La española, the Spanish woman. La alemana, the German woman.

La señora, the lady, mistress.

La inglesa, the Englishwoman.

La andaluza, the Andalucian

woman.

c. A few nouns in dor and tor substitute triz:

El actor, the actor. La actriz, the actress.

d. A few nouns suffix sa or esa to the masculine:

El conde, the count. La condesa, the countess.

El barón, the baron. La baronesa, the baroness.

e. The following change the final vowel to isa:

El poeta, the poet. La poetisa, the poetess.

El profeta, the prophet. La profetisa, the prophetess.

El sacerdote, the priest. La sacerdotisa, the priestess.

f. A few nouns in modern Spanish change final e to a:

El sastre, the tailor. La sastra, the tailoress.

Except, however, el héroe, the hero, la heroina, the heroine.

g. There is a growing tendency to change final e to a in the case of many nouns which terminate in ante, ente, iente (yente), though many writers and speakers continue to use the final e for both genders:

El protestante, the Protestant La protestante-a, the Protestant (man).

El presidente, the president. La presidente-a, the president (female).

30. A few common nouns form their feminine irregularly:

Don, Mr. (with Christian names). Dona, Mrs. (with Christian names).

El principe, the prince.

El rey, the king.

El gallo, the cock.

La princesa, the princess. La reina, the queen.

La gallina, the hen.

31. A few proper nouns have irregular feminines:

Carlos, Charles.

Enrique, Henry.

Félix, Felix.

José, Joseph.

Miguel, Michael. Pedro, Peter.

Pablo, Paul.

Carlota, Charlotte.

Enriqueta, Henrietta.

Felisa, Felicia.

Josefa, Josepha.

Micaela, Michaela.

Petra, Petra. Paula, Paula.

32. The following common nouns have distinct forms for the masculine and feminine gender:

El hombre, the man.

El padre, the father.

El marido (el esposo), the hus- La esposa, the wife.

El yerno, the son-in-law.

El toro, the bull.

El caballo, the horse.

El macho, the male (of animals).

La mujer, the woman.

La madre, the mother.

La nuera, the daughter-in-law.

La vaca, the cow.

La vegua, the mare.

La hembra, the female.

NUMBER

83. There are two numbers, singular and plural:

El perro, the dog. La casa, the house. Los perros, the dogs. Las casas, the houses.

THE FORMATION OF THE PLURAL

84. The following nouns form their plural by adding s:a. All nouns ending in unaccented vowels, except y:

El hijo, the son.

Los hijos, the sons.

El amigo, the friend.

Los amigos, the friends.

b. Nouns terminating in an accented e:

El pie, the foot. Los pies, the feet.

El café, the coffee, the coffee-house. Los cafés, the coffees, the coffeehouses.

Excepting the letter e of the alphabet, which becomes las ees in the plural.

85. The following nouns take es in the plural:

a. Those ending in consonants, final z always becoming c before taking es. (See letter z in Introduction to the Method.)

El animal, the animal. Los animales, the animals. La producción, the production. Las producciones, the produc-

tions.

El juez, the judge. Los jueces, the judges.

b. Nouns terminating in y:

La ley, the law. Las leyes, the lares.

c. Nouns terminating in accented vowels, except e accented:

El alfolí, the granary. Los alfolies, the granaries.

Except:

El papá, the papa, (the father).

La mamá, the mama.

El sofá, the sofa.

small Spanish coin.

El landó, the landau.

Los papás, the papas.

Las mamás, the mamas.

Los sofás, the sofas. El maravedí, the maravedí, a Los maravedís, maravedises, and

formerly maravedies. Los landós, the landós.

It should be observed that the letters of the alphabet and many monosyllables come under this rule:

La á, la ó, la ú, the a, the o, the u. Las aes, las oes, las ues, the a's, the o's, the u's.

36. Some nouns are invariable:

a. Those ending in es and is unaccented, in words of more than one syllable:

La crisis, the crisis. El martes, Tuesday.

Las crisis, the crises. Los martes, Tuesdays.

b. Patronymics, in s and z:

Fernández, (a family name). Los Fernández, the Fernández.

¹ A maravedi was about a sixth of an American cent.

37. Compound words, if not already plural in form, usually suffix the proper plural sign to their last member only:

El ferrocarril, the railroad.

Los ferrocarriles, the railroads.

El tranvia, the tramway.

Los tranvías, the tramways.

El cortaplumas, the pen-knife, having already a plural termination, does not change.

38. Certain masculine plurals, apparently contrary to their obvious meaning, include persons of both sexes:

Los príncipes, the princes, or the prince and the princess.

Los padres, the parents, or the father and mother.

Los señores, the gentlemen, or the gentleman and his lady.

39. Since the only inflectional ending which Spanish nouns possess is the plural sign, it is useless to give any tables of inflection. Prepositional inflection can only be learned by the study of many examples. These are to be found in the Method.

THE ADJECTIVE

40. Adjectives are masculine or feminine, singular or plural:

Un hombre rico, a rich man.

Una mujer bonita, a pretty woman.

Lo caballos viejos, the old horses. Las peras chicas, the small pears.

41. In addition to the masculine and feminine, there is an absolute form of the adjective with 10, sometimes, though incorrectly, called a neuter:

Lo bueno, the good, that which is good.

42. Adjectives agree in gender and number with the nouns which they qualify:

Una casa alta, a high house. Los muchachos vivos, the lively boys.

43. When the adjective is used with 10, and is followed by que, that, with the verb to be, or its equivalents, it varies to suit the gender and number of the noun of which it is the attributive. In such cases the Spanish adjective must be rendered by a substantive:

Lo baratos que son estos som
The cheapness of these hats, (the breros.

Lo antigua que es la iglesia. The antiquity of the church.

THE PLURAL OF ADJECTIVES

44. Adjectives form their plural by adding s to unaccented vowel-finals, and es to consonant and accented vowel-finals, changing z to c before es:

Singular.		PLURAL.			
Masc. Bueno, Inglés,	Fem. buena, inglesa,	Masc. buenos, ingleses,	Fem. buenas, inglesas,	good. English.	
Infeliz,		infelices,		miserable.	

GENDER OF ADJECTIVES

45. There are several classes of adjectives which vary their ending for gender:

a. Common adjectives ending in o, an, ol, on, or, oz, change to, or add a:

El hombre alto, the tall man.

tonous boy.

La mujer alta, the tall woman. El muchacho comilón, the glut- La muchacha comilona, the gluttonous girl.

b. All proper adjectives, except those ending in a, e, and accented i, form the feminine by adding a:

El libro español, the Spanish La gramática española, the Spanbook. ish grammar.

americano, the American La americana, the American (man).

c. Diminutives in ete and augmentatives in ote change the final e to a:

El grandote, the biggish boy or La grandota, the biggish girl or moman.

d. Diminutives in in add a:

Chiquitín, a wee one, (masc.). Chiquitina, a wee one, (fem.).

e. A few adjectives ending in tor change to triz, or merely add a: Fuerza motora or motriz. Motive power.

46. Many adjectives have only one termination for the masculine and feminine; namely, common adjectives ending in a, e, i, al, el, il, ul, en, in, un, ar, az, ez, iz, oz, es, ista, and comparatives in or and ior:

El, la belga, the Belgian, (male or Fiel, faithful, (masc. or fem.). Grande, large, (masc. or fem.).

Baladí, vile. (masc. or fem.).

Util, useful, (masc. or fem.). Azul, blue, (masc. or fem.). Joven, young, (masc. or fem.). fem.).

Personal, personal, (masc. or fem.). Soez, base, low, (masc. or fem.). Ruin, mean, (masc. or fem.). Común, common, (masc. or fem.).

Socialista, socialistic, (masc. or fem.). Familiar, familiar, (masc. or Cortés, courteous, (masc. or fem.).

Sagaz, sagacious, (masc. or fem.). Inferior, inferior, (masc. or fem.).

Mejor, better, (masc. or fem.).

47. All adjectives may be employed as substantives. In such cases they are subject to the rules governing nouns:

El prudente, the wise man.

El español, the Spaniard.

La americana, the American Las fieles, the faithful women. woman.

48. Occasionally nouns are used as adjectives to qualify other nouns:

La tierra virgen, the virgin soil. La madre patria, the mother country.

APOCOPATION OF ADJECTIVES

49. Eight adjectives are capable of apocopation—that is, they lose their final o when they immediately precede a masculine noun in the singular. They are:

Bueno, good.

Tercero. third.

Malo, bad.

Uno, one.

Postrero, latter, last.

Alguno, some, any.

Primero, first.

Ninguno, none.

- a. In colloquial language the a in the feminine termination is sometimes dropped before the singular, when it begins with a and ha: Un alma, a soul. Algún ave, any (some) bird.
- b. Uno, one, when combined with other numerals, is contracted before nouns:

Noventa y un hombres, ninety- Cuarenta y un soldados, forty-one soldiers. one men.

- 50. Grande, great, in the sense of eminence loses de when it stands before a singular noun which begins with a consonant sound: Un gran día, a great day. El gran general, the great general.
- a. Sometimes, for intensity or emphasis, the full form grande is used, even before singular nouns beginning with consonants, though there is a tendency to abandon this usage:

Tan grande daño, so great harm. El grande duque, the grand duke.

b. When grande has reference to size or extent or primacy, it usually follows the noun which it qualifies:

Un lago grande, a large lake. El premio grande, the first (great) prize.

51. Cualquiera, whatever, often loses the final a immediately before a noun.

Cualquier libro, whatever book, any book whatever.

52. Ciento, a hundred, one hundred, drops to when immediately preceding its noun, but not if some other number intervenes:

Cien bastones, a hundred walkciento y ocho caballos, a hundred
ing-sticks.
and eight horses.

53. Santo, saint, loses to when it stands before the names of the saints or sacred personages:

San Pedro, Saint Peter.

San José, Saint Joseph.

Excepting:

Santo Tomás, Saint Thomas. Santo Toribio, Saint Toribius. Santo Domingo, Saint Dominic.

Santo Job. Saint Job:

but santo, holy, is never contracted.

THE POSITION OF THE ADJECTIVE

54. The attribute adjective, in ordinary language, usually follows the noun which it qualifies; but this may be varied for the sake of rhetorical effect:

La lengua española, the Spanish Un negocio importante, an imlanguage. portant business.

- 55. As there will be considerable uncertainty in the mind of the student, it should be observed that the following classes of adjectives usually follow the nouns which they qualify, except when placed otherwise for rhetorical effect:
- a. Participles and participial adjectives in ado, ido, ante, ente, iente, yente.
- Proper adjectives or those derived from political or scientific names.
 - c. Adjectives ending in al, dor, tor.
 - d. Augmentative and diminutive adjectives.
- e. When two or more adjectives qualify the same subject, especially when such adjectives are in the singular.
- f. And in general, all long adjectives, unless there be good reason to place them before their nouns. Illustrations:

Las cosechas abundantes, the Una mujer paciente, a patient abundant harvests. woman.

El idioma griego, the Greek lan- El partido unionista, the Unionguage. ist party.

La estación central, the central El muchacho preguntón, the instation. quisitive boy.

Las tropas segunda, sexta y octava, the second, sixth, and eighth troops.

- 56. A few very common adjectives usually precede their nouns: Mucha inteligencia, much intelli- Demasiado dinero, much money. gence.
- 57. Some adjectives have different meanings according to their position with relation to their nouns:

Un gran caballo, a great horse. Un caballo grande, a large horse. Una buena noche, a good night. Noche buena, Christmas eve.

THE COMPARISON OF ADJECTIVES

58. There are three degrees of comparison: Positive, Comparative, and Superlative.

THE COMPARATIVE

59. Comparison is effected by the use of más, more, or menos, less, with the positive, to form the comparative:

Blanco, más blanco.

White, whiter.

60. Almost all parts of speech may be placed in relations of comparison by using certain adverbs and adjectives as correlatives. These are:

Tan como, as (so)—as.

Tanto—cuanto, as (so) much—as (so).

Tanto—como, as (so) much—as (so).

Más—que (de), more—than.

fewer—than. Cuanto menos—tanto menos,

Menos—que (de), less—than, Cuanto más—tanto más, the fewer—than.

more—the more.

the less—the less.

Illustrations:

Tan puro como un ángel. Tanto pan como carne. Es más rico que Alejandro. As pure as an angel.

As much bread as meat.

He is richer than Alexander.

Más de cien caballos.

Menos nieve que hielo. Menos de veinte libras.

Cuanto más trabaja tanto más The more he works, the more he

pierde.

menos ahorra.

More than a hundred horses.

Less snow than ice.

Less than twenty pounds.

loses.

Cuanto menos dinero gana tanto The less money he gains, the less he saves.

61. In poetry cual is sometimes substituted for como in the phrase tan-como, in which case tan is usually suppressed, and the noun which follows loses its article:

Manso cual cordero.

Meek as a lamb.

62. Relations of comparison may be made negative by the use of no. not; sin, without; tampoco, nor-either, before the verb:

No es menos rico que noble. Sin decir él una sola palabra. Tampoco vive mejor que V.

He is not less rich than noble. Without his saying a single word. Nor does he live better than you.

63. The formula de lo que, than what, replaces the comparative adverb que, when the second member of the comparison contains a verb:

Es más sano de lo que parece.

It is more wholesome than it appears.

64. De takes the place of que in the formula más que, before numerals, if the sentence is affirmative; but if the sentence is negative, que is preserved:

Tiene más de ocho sombreros. No me dió más que tres plumas. He has more than eight hats. He gave me no more than three pens.

65. Más and menos may be qualified by the following adverbs:

Un poco, a little. Mucho, much.

Aun, even, yet.

Muchísimo, very much.

Illustrations:

Un poco más grande. Poco más largo. Ann más admirable. Muchísimo menos dinero. Poco, scarcely. Harto, or bastante, considerably,

Todavía, yet, still.

A little larger. Scarcely any longer. Still more admirable. Very much less money. 66. Four adjectives frequently employ organic comparatives:

Mejor, better.

Peor, worse.

Mayor, greater, larger, older. Menor, less, smaller, younger.

THE SUPERLATIVE

67. There are two superlatives: the relative and absolute.

68. The superlative relative is formed by the use of the definite article, and the adverb más with the positive of adjectives:

Blanco; el, la, or lo, más blanco. White; the whitest.

Or by the use of the definite article with an organic comparative:

Bueno, mejor, el, la, or lo mejor. Good, better, the best.

Malo, peor, el, la, or lo peor. Bad, worse, the worst.

Grande, mayor, el, la, or lo mayor. Large, larger, the largest.

Grande, mayor, el, la, or lo mayor.
Pequeño, menor, el, la, or lo

Little, less, the least.

Chico, menor.

69. In addition to the superlative relative there is a superlative absolute which is variously formed.

70. By associating with the positive of adjectives the adverbs muy, bien, very; harto, bastante, considerably, quite; sumamente, exceedingly; excessivamente, excessively:

Muy fiel, very faithful.

Sumamente bondadoso, extremely kind.

- 71. By adding the termination isimo to the adjective to form the superlative degree in conformity with the following rules:
- a. Rejecting the final vowel or diphthong before adding the termination:

Grande, grandísimo, large, very Frío, friísimo, cold, very cold. large.

b. Substituting for the final consonants c, g, and z, respectively qu, gu, and c:

Blanco, blanquísimo, white, very Largo, larguísimo, long, very white. long.

Feliz, felicísimo, happy, very happy.

c. Change the final ble to bil:

Noble, nobilísimo, noble, very Adorable, adorabilísimo, ador noble. able, very adorable,

d. By restoring the variable diphthongs ie, ue to their primitive simple vowels, e, o:

Diestro, destrísimo, dexterous, Bueno, bonísimo, good, very good. very dexterous.

Cierto, certísimo, certain, very Nuevo, novisimo, new, very new; certain.

excepting viejo, viejisimo, old, very old.

e. By attaching isimo to the unchanged positive, if the adjective ends in any consonant except z:

Hábil, habilísimo, capable, very Literal, literalísimo, literal, very capable.

72. A few superlatives absolute are irregularly constructed:

Amigo,¹ amicísimo.

Antiguo, antiquísimo.

Benéfico, beneficentísimo.

Benévelo, benevolentísimo.

Cruel, crudelísimo.

Fiel, fidelísimo.

Frígido, Frío.¹

Frigidísimo.

Friendly, very friendly.

Ancient, very ancient.

Beneficent, very beneficent.

Benevolent, very benevolent.

Cruel, very cruel.

Faithful, very faithful.

Cold, very cold.

Magnifico, magnificentísimo. Magnificent, very magnificent.

Pío, Piedes le Pious, very pious.

Piadoso, 1 (Parallel Piadoso, 1 Sabio, sapientísimo. Wise, very wise.

Sacro, sacratísimo. Sacred, very sacred.

Sagrado,

73. Certain adjectives have a superlative absolute in errimo:

Áspero,¹ aspérrimo, rough, very Salubre, salubérrimo, healthful,
rough.

very healthful.

Integro, integérrimo, upright, Célebre, celebérrimo, celebrated, very upright. very celebrated,

Mísero, misérrimo, miserable, Libre, libérrimo, free, very free.

very miserable.

Pobre, paupérrimo, poor, very poor.

74. Four adjectives have, in addition to their regular forms, very irregular superlatives absolute:

¹ Amigo, áspero, frio, pio, piadoso, pobre have also regular forms for the superlative *absolute*: amiguisimo, asperisimo, friisimo, piadosisimo, pobrisimo,

Bueno, óptimo, good, very good.
Grande, máximo, great, very great.

Malo, pésimo, bad, very bad.
Pequeño, mínimo, small, very Chico, small.

75. While the superlative absolute is usually translated by very, with an adjective, it is sometimes used merely to intensify the adjective

Un caso singularísimo.

28 veinte y ocho, or veintiocho,

Just one case.

NUMERALS

CARDINALS

76. The cardinal numbers are as follows:

	.o. The cardinal numbers are	WE TOTTOMS:	
1	uno-a, (contract un).	29	veinte y nueve, etc.
2	dos.	30	treinta, (treinta y uno,
3	tres.		etc.).
4	cuatro.	40	cuarenta.
5	cinco.	50	cincuenta.
6	seis.	60	sesenta.
7	siete.	70	setenta.
8	ocho.	80	ochenta.
9	nueve.	90	noventa.
10	diez.	100	ciento, (contract cien).
11	once.	101	ciento y uno-a.
12	doce.	102	ciento y dos.
18	trece.	103	ciento y tres, etc.
14	catorce.	200	doscientos-as.
15	quince.	, 300	trescientos-as.
16	diez y seis, or dieciseis.	400	cuatrocientos-as.
17	diez y siete, or diecisiete.	500	quinientos-as.
18	diez y ocho, or dieciocho.	600	seiscientos-as.
19	diez y nueve, or diecinueve.	700	setecientos-as.
20	veinte.	800	ochocientos-as.
21	veinte y uno-a, or veintiuno-	900	novecientos-as.
	a, (contract veintiún).	1,000	mil, (mil y uno, etc.).
22	veinte y dos, or veintidós.	10,000	diez mil.
23	veinte y tres, or veintitrés.	100,000	cien mil.
24	veinte y cuatro, or veinticua-	200,000	doscientos-as mil.
	tro.	500,000	quinientos-as mil.
25	veinte y cinco, or veinticinco.	1,000,000	un millón, or un
26	veinte y seis, or veintiseis.	*	cuento.
27	veinte y siete, or veintisiete.	2,000,000	dos millones.

- 77. The cardinals are invariable in form except uno-a, cientos-as, and millón-es, and their compounds.
- 78. Ciento and mil may not be used with un; millon may be used with un when it is a substantive; in that case millon is followed by de:

Cien hombres, a hundred men. Mil soldados, a thousand sol-Un millón de expresiones, a mil-

lion (of) expressions.

79. Ciento and mil may become substantives by changing to centenar and millar:

Centenares de estrellas, hundreds Millares de libros, thousands of books.

80. In counting upward from one thousand, mil must always introduce the number:

Mil ochocientos.

Eighteen hundred.

ORDINALS

81. The ordinals, both simple and compound, vary like adjectives in 0, to agree in gender and number with their nouns. They are as follows:

1st	primero-a, (contract pri-	19th	décimonoveno.
	mer).	20th	vigésimo-a.
2 d	segundo-a.	21st	vigésimoprimo.
8 d	tercero-a, (contract tercer).	22d	vigésimosegundo.
4th	cuarto-a.	23d	vigésimotercero.
5th	quinto-a.	24 th	vigésimocuarto.
6th	sexto-a.	25 th	vigésimoquinto.
7th	séptimo-a.	26th	vigésimosexto.
8th	octavo-a.	27th	vigésimoséptimo.
9th	noveno-a, or nono-a.	28th	vigésimoctavo.
10th	décimo-a.	29th	vigésimonoveno.
11th	undécimo-a.	30th	trigésimo-a.
12th	duodécimo-a.	31st	trigésimoprimo, etc.
13th	décimotercio.	40th	cuadragésimo-a.
14th	décimocuarto.	50th	quincuagésimo-a.
15th	décimoquinto.	60th	sexagésimo-a.
16th	décimosexto.	70th	septuagésimo-a.
17th	décimoséptimo.	80th	octogésimo-a.
18th	décimoctavo.	90th	nonagésimo-a.

100th	centésimo-a.	1,000th	milésimo-a.	
101st	centésimoprimo.	2,000th	dos milésim	10 -8.
200th	ducentésimo-a.	10,000th	diez milésin	10-8.
800th	trecentésimo-a.	100,000th	cien milésin	10·8.
400th	cuadragentésimo-a.	200,000th	doscientos	milési-
500 th	quingentésimo-a.		mo-a.	
600th	sexcentésimo-a.	500,000th	quinientos	milési-
700th	septengentésimo-a.		mo-a.	
800th	octogentésimo-a.	1,000,000th	millonésimo	-8.
900th	nonagentésimo-a.			

FRACTIONALS

82. Fractionals may be expressed by the use of the ordinals with the noun parte, part, or by the employment of certain fractional nouns, of which this is the list:

un diez v siete evo

7	is initiat (un metro).	17	un diez y siete avo.
11	uno y medio, una y media.	18	un diez y ocho avo.
3	un tercio.	19	un diez y nueve avo.
ŧ	dos tercios.	20	un veintavo (veinte avo).
ŧ	un cuarto.	λ γ.	un veintiún avo, etc.
ŧ	tres cuartos.	30	tres veintavos.
¥	un quinto.	30	un treintavo.
ŧ	cuatro quintos.	40	un cuarentavo.
ł	un sexto.	80	un cincuentavo.
#	cinco sextos.	<u> 60</u>	un sesentavo.
+	un séptimo.	70	un setentavo.
ł	un octavo and ochavo.	80	un ochentavo.
]	un noveno.	<u> </u>	un noventavo.
10	un décimo.	90	tres noventavos.
4	un onzavo, (or once avo).	100	un centavo and centésimo.
11	un dozavo (doce avo).	1000	un milésimo.
1,3	un trezavo (trece avo).	395	trescientos veinticinco, nove-
14	un catorzavo (catorce avo).		cientos setenta y dos avos.
18	un quinzavo (quince avo).		·
18	un diez y seis avo (dieciseis	avo).	
	•	•	

Illustrations:

L la mitad (un medio)

Un tercio, or la tercera parte. One third, or the third part.
Un vigésimo, or la vigésima parte. One twentieth, or the twentieth part.

MULTIPLICATIVES

83. The multiplicatives, answering to, How many fold? are:

Doble, double. Simple, simple. Triple, triple. El duplo, twofold. El triplo, threefold. El cuadruplo, fourfold. El quintuplo, fivefold. El sextuplo, sixfold. El septuplo, sevenfold. El centuplo, a hundred-fold.

THE PRONOUN

PERSONAL PRONOUNS

84. Next to the verb, the personal pronoun is more fully in-

flected than any other part of spe	ech, as will be seen l	by the follow-
ing table: SINGULAR.	Plural	
	PERSON	
N. yo, <i>I</i> .	nosotros-as,	we.
G. de mi, of me, of myself.	de nosotros-as,	of us, of our- selves.
D. me—á mí, to me, to myself.	nos—á nosotros-as,	to us, to our- selves.
A. me—á mí, me, myself.	nos—á nosotros-as,	us, ourselves.
P. mí, me, myself.	nosotros-as,	us, ourselves.
SECOND	PERSON	
N. tú, thou. G. de ti, of thee, of thyself.	N. vosotros-as,	you.
D. te-á ti, to thee, to thyself.	G. de vosotros-as,	of you,
A. te—á ti, thee, thyself.	•	of yourselves.
P. ti, thee, thyself.	D. os—á vosotros-as,	to you,
N. vos. you.		to yourselves.
G. de vos, of you, of yourself.	A. os—á vosotros-as,	you,
D. os-á vos, to you, to yourself.		yourselves.
A. os-á vos, you, yourself.	P. vosotros-as,	you,
P. vos, you, yourself.		yourselves.
THIRD PERSO	N-MASCULINE	
N. él, V., he, it, you.	ellos, Vds.,	they, you.
G. de él, V., of him, of it,	de ellos, Vds.,	of them,
you.		you.
D. le-á él, V., to him, to it, you.	les—á ellos, Vds.,	to them,
A. le, lo-á él, V., him. it, you.	los, les-á ellos, Vd	s., them, you.
P. 61. V., him, it, you.	ellos, Vds.,	them, you.
24 100 100 100 100 100 100 100 100 100 10	Diaitize	ed by Google
•		

SINGULAR.

PLURAL

THIRD PERSON-FRMININE

N. ella, V.,	she, it, you.	ellas, Vds.,	they, you.
G. de ella, V.,	of her, it, you.	de ellas, Vds.,	of them, you.
D. le-á ella, V.,	to her, it, you.	les—á ellas, Vds.,	to them, you.
A. la—á ella, V.,	her, it, you.	las-á ellas, Vds.,	them, you.
P. ella, V.,	her, it, you.	ellas, Vds.,	them, you.

THIRD PERSON-NEUTER FORM

N. Ello, lo, G. De ello,	it, that, so. of it.	
D. Á ello,	to it.	(Lacking.)
A. Lo,	it, that, so.	
P. Ello,	it.	

THIRD PERSON-REFLEXIVE

G. De sí,	of himse	lf, of here	self,	De sí,	of themselves, of each	h
	of itse				other.	
D. Se—á	sí, to himse	lf, to here	self,	Se—á sí,	to themselves, to eac	h
	to itsel				other.	
A. Se—á		herself,	it-	Se—á sí,	themselves, each other.	•
P. Sí,	self. himself, self.	herself,	it-	Sí,	themselves, each other.	٠

85. Since the terminations of Spanish verbs usually indicate the person, the subject or nominative pronouns are suppressed, except when needed to prevent ambiguity, or to express emphasis:

Hablo el español.

I speak Spanish.

Vendemos las casas.

We sell the houses.

- 86. When expressed, the nominative pronouns yo, I; nosotrosas, we; ellos-as, they, are used as in English, and should cause no difficulty.
- 87. The old form nos, we, is used by sovereigns, prelates, or magistrates in a representative sense, and survives in certain devotional phrases:

Nos los soberanos. Venga á nos el tu reino. We the sovereign rulers. Thy kingdom come to us.

88. The pronouns that occasion the greatest difficulty are those of the second person or of the third person used as a second, in

forms of address. They are: tú, vos, vosotros-as, and usted-es, and certain titles which are seldom used at present, as, vuecelencia. vuecencia, señoría, usía.

- a. Tú. thou, used in sacred and hortative styles, in poetry, as a term of address between husband and wife, parents and children, near relatives, between persons who are engaged to be married, between intimate friends, by the master or mistress in addressing domestics, and, by people generally, in speaking to animals or inanimate objects.
- b. Vosotros-as, you, must be used as the plural of tu in the cases mentioned above when the persons or objects are plural. It is used generally by public speakers in addressing their audiences.
- c. Vos. you, is little used; but if employed, it is now limited to one person, male or female, although, like the English you, it is joined with the plural of verbs, and is found in certain translations from other languages, in modern literature, to represent an ancient style, in the family circle, to show great respect on the part of children to parents, and in prayer as a term of invocation, interchangeably with tu.
- d. Usted-es, now abbreviated V., Vd., and Ud., for the singular, Vds. and Uds., for the plural, from the obsolete vuestra merced, vuestras mercedes, your grace, your graces, is the conventional you of ordinary intercourse. It takes the verb of the third person in Spanish, though translated into English by the second person.
- e. The official titles of address, used with the third person of the verb, are:

Vuestra (or su) majestad (V. M.), Vuestra (or su) alteza, (V. A.), your majesty.

your highness. Vuecelencia, or vuecencia (V. E.), Usía (V. S.), your honor.

your excellency.

Illustrations:

Tú eres buen muchacho. No nos traigas (tú) en tentación. Vos que sois nuestro padre. V. (usted) es francés.

embajador español.

Thou art a good boy. Bring us not into temptation. Thou who art our father. You (your honor is) are a French-

Acudo á vuecencia puesto que es I come to your excellency since you are the Spanish ambassador.

89. The position of the nominative pronoun is usually before the verb; but it is often placed after the verb for the sake of emphasis, vigor, or elegance, and almost invariably so in interrogative sentences:

No fué él verdaderamente el des- Indeed he was not the discoverer cubridor de América. of America.

Nunca viene él á hablarne.

He never comes to speak to me. Where is he now?

Dônde está él ahora? Where is he now

90. Me, te, se, nos, os, le, lo, los, la, las, les are governed by verbs, which they usually precede, excepting verbs used affirmatively in the imperative mode, or in the subjunctive used imperatively, present participles, and verbs in the infinitive; but these pronouns never follow prepositions:

Lo conozco, I know him. Digale que venga, tell him to come.

91. These pronouns, when used with present participles, imperatives (conjugated affirmatively), and infinitives usually follow, and are appended to, the verb as one word:

Óigame V., hear me.Estoy estudiándolo, I am study-Voy á hablarle, I am going to speak to him.ing it.

92. When an imperative or a hortative subjunctive—that is, a subjunctive employed to give orders, commands, or exhortations—is conjugated negatively, these pronouns must precede the verb:

No lo des.

Do not (thou) give it to him.

93. If an infinitive depends on a finite verb, or another infinitive, the pronoun may precede the verb or be attached to either infinitive:

No quiso prestármelo, or no me He did not wish to lend it to me. lo quiso prestar.

94. When the present participle is used with estar, to be; ir, to go; venir, to come; andar, to go (to walk), the objective pronoun usually precedes these verbs, though it may follow:

Lo estamos haciendo todos los We are doing it every day. días.

95. The final d of the second person plural of the imperative mode, and the final s of the first person plural of the subjunctive,

are dropped when the reflexive pronouns nos and os are attached to them:

Vámonos, (for vayámosnos).

Let us go.

Amaos, (from amados).

Love (ye) one another.

96. The following pronouns only may be used with prepositions: m1, t1, s1, nosotros-as, vosotros-as, usted-es, 61, ella, ello, ellos-as.

97. When mi, ti, si follow the preposition con, with, they become conmigo, contigo, consigo, which are unchangeable.

98. Lo, la, los, las are used in the indefinite sense of one, some, one's, any, such, and with negatives, none, when standing in the predicate with the impersonal verb hay, there is, there are:

Tráigame V. una pluma si la hay Bring me a pen if there is one por aquí.

about here.

99. Lo, taken as the accusative of ello, often represents a phrase or an idea to which gender can not be attributed:

Entiende V. lo que dice?
No lo entiendo.

Do you understand what he says?

I do not understand it.

100. Lo, in the predicate, with the verb to be, referring to a preceding substantive, means one, such; if it refers to an adjective, it is equivalent to so:

¿ Es caballero ? Sí, lo es. Si ella está mala, no lo estoy yo.

Is he a gentleman? Yes, he is. If she is sick, I am not (so).

PLEONASTIC CONSTRUCTION

101. Both the conjunctive pronouns (me, te, se, nos, os, le, lo, los, la, las, les) and the disjunctive pronouns (mi, ti, si), also all nominative forms with prepositions, such as él, ella, vosotros, usted, may be associated with the same verb to emphasize or amplify the sentence.

102. The natural order is to place the conjunctive pronoun next to the verb, either before or after, and then to place the disjunctive pronoun after the conjunctive if the conjunctive follows the verb, and before the conjunctive if it precedes the verb, though this is not invariable:

Eso no le conviene & V. Eso nunca os diré & vosotros. Háblele V. & él. No le hable V. & él. This does not suit you.
This I shall never say to you.
Speak to him.
Do not speak to him.

103. A substantive may take the place of the disjunctive pronoun, thus preserving the pleonastic construction:

Á los alemanes les gusta beber The Germans like to drink beer. cerveza.

Pluma no la tengo.

Pen I have none.

THE REFLEXIVE PRONOUN

104. Pronouns of the first and second persons have their reflexive meaning in oblique cases, when they refer to the same person as the subject:

Me hallo malo.

Te equivocas. Nos decimos. Os maltratáis. I am sick.

Thou art mistaken. We say to ourselves. You ill-treat yourselves.

105. Pronouns of the third person refer, in oblique cases, to different persons or things from the subject; hence each gender emp.oys the pronoun se, to express action which is reflexive on the subject:

V. se lastima. V. le lastima.

V. le lastima. Los hieren.

Se hieren. V. se engaña. V. la engaña. You wound yourself.

You wound him, (another).

They hurt them.
They hurt themselves.
You deceive yourself.

You deceive her.

106. When se represents an impersonal subject it is to be transated by one, they, we, you, people, it is:

Se dice.

It is said, they say, people say. It is seen, it is clear, evident.

107. The reflexive verb quite frequently replaces the passive voice:

Aquí se habla español.

Spanish is spoken here.

Se vende fruta.

Fruit is sold.

108. Many verbs are reflexive in Spanish which are not so in English; consequently so is often used in Spanish where it can not be translated in English:

Se marcha hoy mismo.

He goes this very day.

109. Se replaces the possessive adjective with a determinative object:

Se corta la mano.

Se ponen los sombreros.

He cuts his hand.

They put on their hats.

110. When a verb governs two conjunctive pronouns, the dative or indirect objective pronoun precedes the accusative or direct, except the reflexive se, which always stands first:

Me lo manda. Te los trae. Se me olvida.

He sends it to me. He brings them to thee. I forget (it forgets itself to me).

111. When the conjunctive datives, le, les, meet the accusatives beginning with 1, they become se, as indicated by the following table:

> le le and les le become se le. le la " les le se la. le lo les lo se lo. le les " les les se les. le los " les los se los. le las " les las 66 se las.

Se lo digo. I say it to him. Se lo dov á V. I give it to you.

112. The nominatives of pronouns may be intensified by adding the adjective mismo-a, mismos-as, self, selves:

Yo mismo, tú misma. Él mismo, V. mismo. I myself, thou thyself, (fem.). He himself, you yourself.

113. Mismo or propio, self, may be used with the personal pronoun in oblique cases, but always in connection with the disjunctive or prepositional pronouns:

V. se condena á sí mismo.

meaning of the third person:

You condemn yourself. Nos queremos á nosotros propios. We are fond of ourselves.

114. Mismo may be used with nouns to give them the reflexive

El muchacho mismo.

The boy himself.

115. After certain adverbs mismo is invariable as to form, and is intensive, meaning this very, that very; sometimes its force can be best rendered by the tone of the voice:

Hov mismo.

To-day, this very day.

En el tiempo mismo.

In the very time.

116. Mismo-a, as an adjective, with an article, means the same, and generally precedes the noun:

La misma tarde.

The same afternoon.

POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS

- 117. The possessive pronouns, inflected like adjectives terminating in o, agree in gender and number with the object possessed, and not with the possessor.
- 118. The possessive pronouns may be classed as conjunctive and absolute: those preceding nouns being called conjunctive; those which follow nouns or which stand alone are termed absolute. The conjunctives drop their final syllable, thus losing their gender distinction, except the first and second persons plural. The following table shows the variations:

i	PLURAL.					
CONJUNCTIVE	. ABSO	LUTE.	CONJUNCTIVE. ABSOLUTE.			
Common. mi,	<i>Masc.</i> mío,	Fem. mía,	Common. mis,	Masc.` míos,	Fe mías,	m. my.
tu,	tuyo,	tuya,	tus,	tuyos,	tuyas,	thy,
su,	suyo,	su ya,	sus,	suyos,	suyas, .	his, her, hers, its, your, yours, their,

SINGULAR.

CONJUN	CTIVE.	1	ABSOLUTI	s.
Masc. nuestro, vuestro,	nuestro, nuestra,			our, ours. your, yours.
Plural.				
nuestros,	nuestras,	nuestros,	nuestras,	our, ours.

119. The conjunctive forms of the possessive pronouns precede

the nouns which they qualify, when emphasis is not intended:

Mi caballo, mis caballos.

My horse, my horses.

Mi casa, mis casas.

Nuestro hermano, nuestros hermanos.

My house, my houses.

Our brother, our brothers.

vuestras.

vuestros,

Digitized by Google

vuestros, vuestras, your, yours.

120. As su, sus, his, her, its, their, your, one's, are equivocal, the personal pronoun preceded by the preposition de (genitive) may be added to the noun to prevent ambiguity, or to give emphasis:

Su sombrero de V.

Your hat.

Su sombrero de él.

His hat.

Su pluma de ella.

Her pen.

121. Su, sus, in such cases as the above, may be replaced by the definite article:

La silla de V.

Your chair.

La ciudad de ella.

Her city.

El amigo de él.

His friend.

122. When V. is used as a term of address, your must be rendered by su, sus, his (honor, understood):

Su corbata, su corbata de V., la Your cravat. corbata de V.

123. The possessive pronoun may be strengthened by adding propio-a, own:

Mi propio bastón.

My own walking-stick.

El suyo propio.

His own.

124. For the sake of intensity, the uncontracted forms of the possessive pronouns are used after nouns with the definite article, and without the definite article in the case of vocatives:

La religión tuya.

Thy religion.

"¡ Dios mío!" exclamé yo.

" My God!" I cried.

125. If, however, a past participle used as an adjective or an ordinary adjective accompanies the vocative, either the conjunctive or absolute form may be used:

Querido amigo mío or mi querido My dear friend. amigo.

126. When possessive pronouns are used in a general or indeterminate sense, corresponding to the English a, an, some of mine, the absolute form is employed:

Un hermano mío.

A brother of mine.

Un sombrero suyo.

A hat of his.

Unos paisanos de V.

Some countrymen of yours.

127. The possessive adjective gives way to the indirect personal pronoun and the definite article with the noun, in referring to the parts of the body or to articles of dress:

Me machaqué el pie.

I mashed my foot.

Does your tooth ache?

Le duele á V. la muela ?

128. When the person or thing possessed is not expressed, the possessive pronoun is used with the article, both agreeing with the

object possessed:
Mi esposa y la tuya.

My wife and thine.

129. The possessive pronoun loses the article when it stands in the predicate with the verb to be:

Este cuaderno es mío.

This copy-book is mine.

DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS

130. The demonstrative pronouns agree in gender and number with the nouns which they qualify, with the exception of the neuter forms, which are invariable:

	Sn	GULAR.	i		PLURAL.	
Masc.	Fem.	Neut.		Masc. estos,	Fem.	
este,	esta,	esto,	this	estos,	estas,	these
			(by me).			(by me).
ese,	esa,	eso,	(by me). that	esos,	esas,	those
			(by you).			(by you).
aquel,	aquella	, aquello,	that	aquellos,	aquellas,	those
•	-	•	(yonder).			(yonder).

131. Add to these the unusual forms:

Estotro-a, estotros-as. Esotro-a, esotros-as.	This other, these other. That other, those other. That other, those other.
Aquel otro, aquella otra. Aquellos otros, aquellas otras. Aqueste, aquese (old forms).	This, that.

182. The natural position of the demonstratives, este, ese, aquel, is before the nouns which they qualify; but in lively and intensive language they may follow nouns, which are preceded, in such cases, by the definite article:

Este diccionario. Ese zapato,

This dictionary, That shoe,

Those houses. Aqueilas casas. That subject. El asunto aquél. Las alfombras éstas. These carpets.

133. Este designates what is near to the speaker, corresponding to the adverb aqui, here; ese, that which is near the person spoken to, where he is, or about which he is speaking, corresponding to the adverb ahi, there; aquel, that which is remote from both the speaker and the person addressed, or from what they are discussing, and corresponding to the adverb alli, there, yonder.

This country, this state, (where I Este país, este estado.

That button, that cravat, (which Ese botón, esa corbata. you have on).

Aquel río, aquel lago. That river, that lake, (distant from both).

134. Speaking historically, present time is denoted by este; moderately past time, say, within a lifetime, by ese; and an event long past is designated by aquel:

Esta época. This epoch, these days.

That event (within my memory). Ese suceso. That time (say, of Columbus). Aquel tiempo.

135. Este and aquel denote latter and former, respectively:

Después de acabar aquél empezó After finishing the former, he á leer éste. began to read the latter.

136. The so-called neuter forms esto, eso, aquello, this thing, that thing, refer to sentences, statements, or thoughts, they being too indefinite to be ascribed gender:

Eso no es nada. That is nothing.

Esto es todo lo que tengo que decir. This is all that I have to say.

187. Este, ese, and aquel are used as substantives or pronouns in the sense of this, this one, he; that one, he, in which cases they receive the graphic accent:

Entonces dijo aquél. Then said he.

Este es un buen amigo mío. He is a good friend of mine.

RELATIVE PRONOUNS

188. The relative pronouns are as follows:

Quien, quienes, who; que, (invariable,) who, which, that.

El cual, la cual; los cuales, las cuales, who, which,

El que, la que; los que, las que,

Lo cual, which (thing); lo que, that which, what.

Cuyo, cuya; cuyos, cuyas, whose, of which, which.

Aquel que, or el que, he who,

the one who, the one which

Aquella que, or la que, she who, or that.

Aquellos que, or los que, \(\) those who, or those which, the ones Aquellas que, or las que, \(\) who or which.

Quien, he who, the one who; quienes, those who, the ones who.

Aquello que, that (thing, saying or matter) which.

139. Quien may now be used of persons only. It gives place to que, when the antecedent is a word of either gender or number; but in compound sentences, each member of which makes complete sense in itself, either quien, el cual (or their variations), or que may be used:

El general que vino.

The general who came.

La semana pasada encontré à una Last week I met a young lady señorita; quien (la cual, que) who gave me this book.

me dió este libro.

140. Quien must always be preceded by a preposition when used as the object of a verb; and with prepositions is subject to the same rules, and is capable of the same use, as nouns:

El hombre á quien V. conoce. The man whom you know.

141. Que may be used with reference to persons or things in the nominative or accusative cases only; in other cases, that is, when used with prepositions, it refers to things. It is invariable in form, and its inflection is indicated by prepositions:

La muchacha que estudia.
El reloj que anda.
La ciudad en que vivo.
Las plumas con que escribo.

The girl who studies.
The clock that runs.
The city in which I live.
The pens with which I write.

142. Quien and que, as accusatives, should never be omitted, as the corresponding words often are in English:

La casa que vi. Un caballero á quien conozco. The house (that) I saw. The man (whom) I know.

143. El cual and el que (and their variations), since they are substitutes for quien and que, relate to persons or things, and are preferred, when an inflected relative is desirable, to avoid ambiguity, or for the sake of variety:

Compré una casa nueva en la cual I bought a new house, in (the) vivo ahora. which I now live.

el cual residía en un cuarto bajo.

Seguimos á la madre de Enrique, We followed the mother of Henry, who (himself) lived on the ground floor.

144. The so-called neuter lo cual, which, refers to an idea, a statement, or a preceding sentence:

Le dije que debiera ir al médico. I told him that he ought to go to lo cual no quiso hacer.

the doctor, (the) which he did not wish to do.

Hecho lo cual, se escapó.

Which being done, he escaped.

145. Lo que, that which, what, relates to an idea, but not to a word:

volver.

Según lo que entiendo, no desea According to what I understand, he does not wish to return.

Todo lo que haga, será bueno.

All that he may do, will be good.

146. Cuyo-a, cuyos-as, whose, of which, which, relates to persons and things, and agree with the object possessed:

El comerciante cuyo vino V. com- The merchant whose wine you bought sells cheap. pró vende barato.

147. El que (and its variation) is used in the sense of he who, she who, the one who; they who, those who, the ones who, when it relates to persons; and in the sense of the one which or that, those which or that, the ones which or that:

El que corre.

He who runs.

V. fué el que me lo dió.

You were the one who gave it to

No es ella la que amaban.

She is not the one whom they loved.

148. Quien is often used as both antecedent and relative:

Quien ora, trabaja. Como quien dijera. He who prays, works. As who should say.

INTERROGATIVE PRONOUNS

149. The interrogative pronouns, chiefly distinguishable from the relatives, by the use of the written accent, are employed in direct and indirect questions. They are as follows:

Quién, quiénes, who! Cuyo-a, cuyos-as, whose De quién, de quiénes,

Oue (invariable), what? Cuál, cuáles, which, what?

150. Quien is declined like any noun, and used with reference to persons only:

¿Quién es ?

Who is he?

¿ Quiénes son aquéllos ?

Who are those men ?

151. De quién and cuyo express whose, used interrogatively:

¿Cuya es esta pluma! ¿cuya Whose pen is this! pluma es ésta ? or ¿ de quién es esta pluma ?

152. Qué, what, cuál, which or what, declined like nouns, are used as substantives, qué being more general and cuál more specific, though not so direct:

Qué dice! Qué son!

What does he say? What are thev ?

Of what does it treat?

De qué se trata ? LCuál es su nombre de V. ?

What is your name?

Luál de sus caballos prefiere V. Which of your horses do you

prefer 1

153. Qué is used in exclamatory phrases in the sense of what! what a! When used before an adjective alone it means how:

INDEFINITE PRONOUNS

¿Qué bueno es vivir bien!

What a good thing it is to live

well!

¡ Qué día tan hermoso!

What a beautful day! How glorious it is!

¿ Qué glorioso es!

154. The indefinite pronouns are:

Alguien, some one, somebody, any Ambos-as, both. one, anybody.

Algo, alguna cosa, anything, something.

Entrambos-as, both, between two.

Cierto-a, a certain —. Mismo-a, the same, very. Nadie, no one, nobody.

Otro-a, other, another.

Cualquiera, cualesquiera, any, whatever, any you please.

Cada, each, every.

Fulano-a, so and so, such a one. Nada, nothing, not anything.

Ninguno-a, no one, nobody, none, no.

Quienquiera, quienesquiera, whoever, any one whatever.

Tal, tales, such, such a.

Todo-a, todos-as, all, every, anything.

Varios-as, several, a good many.

Alguno-a, algunos-as, some one, Uno-a, unos-as, one, some, each somebody, any one, anybody, other, one another. some, any, a few.

155. Alguien, invariable in form, is used of persons in the singular only, and may not be followed by the preposition de:

Alguien toca.

Some one is knocking.

156. Alguno-a, algunos-as, a substantive and an adjective, relates to persons or things. It may be followed by de. When alguno would come before a masculine singular noun, it drops the final o:

Alguno de ellos me llamó.

Some one of them called me.

Algún día.

Some day.

Algunos extranjeros. Lo dejé con algunas. Some strangers.

I left it with some women.

157. Algunos-as, and unos cuantos, unas cuantas, render the English emphatic some, α few:

Tengo unos cuantos or algunos I have a few costly vests. chalecos costosos

158. Algo, alguna cosa, are used interchangeably, algo being invariable in form:

Halla V. algo or alguna cosa? Do you find anything?

159. Algo is employed as an adverb in the sense of somewhat, rather:

Está algo malo.

He is somewhat sick.

160. Ambos-as, used with reference to persons or things, is either an adjective or a substantive:

Viajaban ambos en coche.

Both traveled in a carriage.

a. Ambos-as frequently gives way to los dos, las dos, the two:

Las dos andaban cantando.

Both (fem.) went singing.

b. Both, in the distributive sense of each, is translated by uno-a y otro-a, unos-as y otros-as:

Después de leer mucho sobre la After reading much about aritharitmética y la geografía, escribía sobre una y otra.

After reading much about arithmetic and geography, he wrote on both.

c. Ambos-as occasionally gives way to entrambos-as:

161. Cada is invariable in form, is used in the singular only, and stands before the substantive:

Cada año, cada mes.

Each year, each month.

a. Cada is used with the plural substantive only when the substantive follows a numeral:

Cada seis meses.

Every six months.

b. Cada is used distributively with uno-a or cual:

Cada uno tiene su gusto.

Every one has his own taste.

Cada cual escoge lo suyo. Each one selects his own.

162. Cierto-a, ciertos-as, is followed by the noun without the indefinite article:

Cierto general.

A certain general.

Ciertas condiciones. Certain conditions.

163. Cierto-a, ciertos-as, as a regular adjective, meaning certain in the sense of sure, always follows the noun or stands alone in the predicate:

Esta noticia es cierta.

This news is certain.

164. Fulance a is used to express an evasion. When it stands alone it usually takes the form of fulance de tal. so and so, such a one. If it is desirable to refer to more than one such indefinite person, mengane and zutane are associated with fulance:

Ayer supe de fulano de tal.

I heard yesterday of so and so.

- 165. Mismo-a, mismos-as, is sometimes an adjective and sometimes a substantive.
- a. When mismo stands before a noun and follows the definite article, it means the same. If used with the demonstrative or possessive pronoun, it has the sense of very, and the same if used with the indefinite article:

El mismo año; la misma tarde.

The same year; the same after-

noon.

Este mismo suceso. Un mismo país. This very event.

The same country.

166. Nada stands before the verb without a negative, and after the verb with the negative no, not. In this, as in most cases, Spanish requires two negatives:

Nada temo er no temo nad:

I fear nothing.

167. Ninguna cosa (and their variations) constantly take the place of nada:

Nada poseo, no poseo ninguna I possess nothing, I do not poscosa, ninguna cosa poseo, no sess anything. poseo cosa alguna.

168. Nada may be followed by de and a substantive to signify nothing of:

No tiene nada de burlón.

He is nothing of a scoffer.

169. Nadie, invariable in form, is the negative of alguien, and is subject to the same laws. It is used of persons only, and may not be followed by de. When it follows the verb, it requires another negative; not otherwise:

Que nadie entre.

Let no one enter.

No hallé á nadie.

I found no one.

170. Ninguno-a, ningunos-as, is the negative of alguno, is used as an adjective and substantive, relates to persons or things, and, like alguno, it may be followed by de. It loses its final o before masculine singular nouns:

Ningún cañón; ninguna de las No cannon; not one of the women. mujeres.

171. When ninguno stands after the verb it requires another negative; but not so if it stands before the verb:

Ninguno de ellos me gusta.

None (not one) of them pleases

me.

No tengo ningún sombrero.

I have no hat.

172. Otro-a, otros-as, an adjective or a substantive, refers to persons or things, being used without the indefinite article in the sense of another, and with the definite article to specify a particular person or thing:

Otro árbol, otra mesa. Otro soldado, otro francés. Another tree, another table.

Another soldier, another French

man.

El otro discípulo.

The other pupil.

178. Propio-a, propios-as, subject to the same rules as mismo, is used to strengthen the meaning of personal and possessive pronouns:

V. propio.

You yourself.

Esta toalla es suya propia. 25 This towel is her own.

174. Quienquiera, quienesquiera, composed of the relative quien, quienes, and quiera, the subjunctive of the verb querer, designates persons only, and that in an absolute sense:

Quienquiera que fuese.

Whoever he might be.

175. Quien, followed by the subjunctive, frequently has a meaning similar to quienquiera, in the sense of any one who:

Lo ofrezco á quien desee recibirlo. I offer it to any one who may be willing to receive it.

176. Cualquiera, cualesquiera, is both an adjective and a substantive, referring to persons or things:

Cualquier hombre.

Any man.

Cualquiera de los relojes.

Whichever of the clocks.

177. Cualquiera with que and the subjunctive always means whichever, whatever:

Tome V. cualquiera que le guste. Take whatever one you may like.

178. Tal, tales, refers to persons or things:

Tal persona, tal sujeto.

Such a person, such a fellow.

179. Todo-a, todos-as, is used as a substantive, an adjective, or an indefinite pronoun.

a. As a substantive it refers to persons or things, and varies for gender and number:

Todo se dejó.

All was left.

Todos están en casa.

All are at home.

b. When used as an adjective todo is usually followed by some determinative word:

Todo el año, todo el camino.

All day, all the way. Every American.

Todo americano.

Todos los alemanes.

All the Germans.

c. Todo is used as an indefinite pronoun in the sense of cualquiera cosa, anything whatever:

V. me hallará dispuesto para You will find me ready for anytodo.

180. Uno-a, unos-as, is used as an adjective, a substantive, or an indefinite pronoun:

Uno puede ver que es la verdad. Son unos extranjeros.

De una ocasión á otra.

One can see that it is the truth.

They are (some) strangers. From one occasion to another.

181. Varios-as, is a substantive or adjective:

Varias personas.

Several persons.

He visto á varios. I have seen several.

THE VERB

182. Before considering the conjugation of verbs in general, it is well to take up the four auxiliary verbs, haber, to have; ser, to be; estar, to be; and tener,1 to have.

Irregular conjugations are indicated by heavy type.

183. The auxiliaries are thus conjugated:

INFINITIVE

To have. Haber. Tener. To be.

Ser.

Been.

Having.

PRESENT PARTICIPLE Being.

Habiendo.

Habido.

Teniendo. Siendo. Estando.

Ester.

Had.

Tenido. Sido.

Estado.

INDICATIVE

PAST PARTICIPLE

PRESENT

I have.			I am.	
1.	He.	Tengo.	Soy.	Estoy.
2.	Has.	Tienes.	Eres.	Estás.
8.	На.	Tiene.	Es.	Está.
1.	Hemos.	Tenemos.	Somos.	Estamos.
2.	Habéis.	Tenéis.	Sois.	Estáis.
8.	Han.	Tienen.	Son.	Están.

IMPERFECT

I had.		I was.	
1. Había.	Tenía.	Era.	Estaba.
2. Habías.	Tenías.	Eras.	Estabas.
3. Había.	Tenía.	Era.	Estaba.
1. Habíamos.	Teníamos.	Éramos.	Estábamos.
2. Habíais.	Teníais.	Erais.	Estabais.
3. Habían.	Tenian.	Eran.	Estaban.

¹ The verb tener, to have, to possess, is not an auxiliary in the English sense of the word; but it is so considered by Spanish grammarians, and therefore it is here presented in the list of the auxiliaries.

PRETERIT

I had.		I was.	
1. Hube.	Tuve.	Fuí.	Estuve.
2. Hubiste.	Tuviste.	Fuiste.	Estuviste.
3. Hubo.	Tuvo.	Fué.	Estuvo.
1. Hubimos.	Tuvimos.	Fuimos.	Estuvimos.
2. Hubisteis.	Tuvisteis.	Fuisteis.	Estuvisteis.
3. Hubieron.	Tuvieron.	Fueron.	Estuvieron.

FUTURE

$I\ shall$	havė.	I shall be.	
1. Habré.	Tendré.	Seré.	Estaré.
2. Ha br ás.	Ten drá s.	Serás.	Estarás.
3. Habrá.	Ten drá.	Será.	Estará.
1. Habremos.	Tendremos.	Seremos.	Estaremos.
2. Habréis.	Ten dr éis.	Seréis.	Estaréis.
3. Habrán.	Ten drá n.	Serán.	Estarán.

IMPERATIVE

2. Have thou.	Ten tú.	Sé. Be (thou).	Está. Be (thou).
2. Have ye.	Tened.	Sed. Be (ye).	Estad. Be (ye).

SUBJUNCTIVE

PRESENT

	I may ha	ve.	I may be.	
1.	Haya.	Tenga.	Sea.	Esté.
2.	Hayas.	Tengas.	Seas.	Es tés.
8.	Haya.	Tenga.	Sea.	Esté.
1.	Hayamos.	Tengamos.	Seamos.	Estemos.
2.	Hayáis.	Tengáis.	Seáis.	Estéis.
3.	Hayan.	Tengan.	Sean.	Estén.

CONDITIONAL

	I should	l have.	I should be.	
1.	Habría.	Ten dría.	Sería.	Estaría.
2.	Habrías.	Ten drías.	Serías.	Estarías.
8.	Habría.	Ten dría.	Sería.	Estaría.
1.	Habriamos.	Ten dr íamos.	Seríamos.	Estaríamos,
2.	Habríais.	Ten dría is.	Seríais.	Estaríais.
₿.	Habrían.	Tendrian.	Serian.	Estarían.

IMPERFECT	(first	form)	Taniahi	2.

1 miyni nave.		1 miyni ve.	
1. Hubiera.	Tuviera.	Fuera.	Estuviera.
2. Hubieras.	Tuvieras.	Fueras.	Estuvieras.
3. Hubiera.	Tuviera.	Fuera.	Estuviera.
1. Hubiéramos.	Tuviéramos.	Fuéramos.	Estuviéramos.
2. Hubierais.	Tuvierais.	Fuerais.	Estuvierais.
3. Hubieran.	Tuvieran.	Fueran.	Estuvieran.

IMPERFECT (second Jorm)	
have.	I might be.	
Tuviese.	Fuese.	Estuviese.
Tuvieses.	Fueses.	Estuvieses.
Tuviese.	Fuese.	Estuviese.
Tuviésemos.	Fuésemos.	Estuviésemos,
Tuvieseis.	Fueseis.	Estuvieseis.
Tuviesen.	Fuesen.	Estuviesen.
	Tuviese. Tuvieses. Tuviésemos. Tuviésemos. Tuvieseis.	Tuviese. Fuese. Tuviese. Fueses. Tuviese. Fuese. Tuviésemos. Fuésemos. Tuvieseis. Fueseis.

PITTIER

I should have.		I should be.		
1.	Hubiere.	Tuviere.	Fuere.	Estuviere.
2.	Hubieres.	Tuvieres.	Fueres.	Estuvieres.
8.	Hubiere.	Tuviere.	Fuere.	Estuviere.
1.	Hubiéremos.	Tuviéremos.	Fuéremos.	Estuviéremos.
2.	Hubiereis.	Tuviereis.	Fuereis.	Estuviereis.
8.	Hubieren.	Tuvieren.	Fueren.	Estuvieren.
	404 W.L.	1241		(F)1 T71 11 1

184. Haber is little used as a principal verb. The English active verb to have is rendered by tener, to possess, to have, haber being employed as an auxiliary:

He tenido	una pluma.
Tengo un	libro.

T might have

I have had a pen. I have a book.

185. Haber does duty as a principal verb in two cases.

a. To express an obligation, haber is used with the preposition de or the conjunction que:

He de ir.

I have to go.

Hubo que gastar mucho dinero. It was necessary to spend much money.

b. Haber is employed as an impersonal verb in the sense of there to be, in which case only the third person singular is used for both numbers. It is thus conjugated:

INFINITIVE. PRESENT PARTICIPLE. PAST PARTICIPLE. Haber, there—to be. Habiendo, there being. Habido, there been,

INDICATIVE MODE.

PRESENT.

hay, there is, there are.

IMPERFECT.

había, there was, there were.

PRETERIT.

hubo, there was, there were.

FUTURE.

habrá, there will be.

SUBJUNCTIVE MODE.

PRESENT.

haya, there may be.

IMPERFECT (first form).

hubiera, there might be.

IMPERFECT (second form). hubiese, there might be.

FUTURE.

hubiere, there should be.

CONDITIONAL habría, there would be.

The compound tenses are formed by the use of the simple tenses with habido, the past participle.

The imperative is supplied by the subjunctive mode.

Illustrations:

Hay cartas!
No hubo ningunas.

Are there any letters (epistles) ? There were none (no letters).

A survival of haber is seen in the particle he of the exclamatory phrase ; he aqui! behold!

186. The past participle with haber is not variable:

He tenido.

I have had.

We have been.

187. Both ser and estar mean to be, expressing an essential or conditional, permanent or transitory state of existence. There is a distinction in their use, however, which is according to the following rules:

a. Ser expresses what is essential and inherent, permanent and absolute:

Él es francés, griego. La casa es de madera. Soy hombre, mujer.

Soy feliz.

He is a Frenchman, a Greek.

The house is of wood.

I am a man, a woman.

I am happy (of a happy disposition).

b. Estar denotes what is accidental, transitory, or designates a situation or a state:

Estoy en Madrid. La ventana estă abierta. I am in Madrid.
The window is open.

La taza no está llena. Son buenos: están buenos. Es contento; está contento.

The cup is not full. They are good; they are well. He is of a contented disposition: he is content.

188. Ser is used to form the passive voice, and estar to unite with the present participle to make the progressive form of the active voice:

Este libro ha sido traducido del This book has been translated from the Spanish. castellano. She is reading.

Ella está levendo.

THE REGULAR VERB

ACTIVE CONJUGATION

189. The conjugation of all regular verbs in the active voice follows three models, which are classified according to the ending of the infinitive. These are the endings:

Infinitives in ar characterize the First Conjugation: comprar, to buv.

Infinitives in er characterize the Second Conjugation: vender. to sell.

Infinitives in ir characterize the Third Conjugation: vivir, to live.

190. All verbs-regular, irregular, impersonal, and defectivebelong to the conjugation indicated by the termination of their infinitive, no matter how much their inflection may differ in other respects from the models of regular verbs.

191. The terminations of the regular verb are applied to the stem, which can always be ascertained by striking off the infinitive ending:

Comprar: stem, compr; vender: stem, vend; vivir: stem, viv.

192. The terminations of regular verbs of the three conjugations are as follows:

infinitive.	PRESENT PARTICIPLE.	PAST PARTICIPLE.
1. (Conj.).	2. (Conj.).	3. (Conj.).
1ar.	-ando.	-ado.
2er.	-iendo.	-ido.
8ir.	-iendo.	-ido.

INDICATIVE MODE.		SUBJU	SUBJUNCTIVE MODE.		
			PRESENT.	•	
1.	2.	8.	1.	2.	3.
-0,	-0,	-0.	'n	-8,	-8.
-88,	-es,	-68.	-08,	-85,	-8.8.
-8,	-е,	-0.	-e,	-8,	-8.
-amos,	-emos,	-imos.	-emos,	-amos,	-amos.
-áis,	-éis,	-ís.	-éis,	-áis,	-áis.
-an,	-en,	-en.	-en,	-an,	-an.
	PERFECT.			ECT (first f	
1.	2.	8.	1.	2.	3.
-ab a ,	-ía,	-ía.	-ara,	-iera,	-ie ra.
-abas,	-ías,	-ías.	-aras,	-ieras,	-ieras.
-aba,	-ía,	-ía.	-ara,	-ie ra,	-iera.
-ábamos,	-iamos,	-íamos.	-áramos,	-iéramos,	-iéramos
-ab a is,	-íais,	-íais.	-arais,	-ierais,	-ierais.
-aban,	-ían,	-ian.	-aran,	-ieran,	-ieran.
I	RETERIT.		IMPERFI	CT (second	form).
1.	2.	3.	1.	2.	3.
-é,	-í,	-í.	-ase,	-iese,	-iese.
-aste,	-iste,	-iste.	-ases,	-ieses,	-ieses.
-6,	-ió,	-ió.	-ase,	-iese,	-iese.
-amos,	-imos,	-imos.	-ásemos,	-iésemos,	-iésemos
-asteis,	-isteis,	-isteis.	-aseis,	-ieseis,	-ieseis.
-aron,	-ieron,	-ieron.	-asen,	-iesen,	-iesen.
1	FUTURE.			FUTURE.	
1.	2.	8.	1.	2.	8.
-aré,	-eré,	-iré.	-are,	-iere,	-iere.
-arás,	-erás,	-irás.	-ares.	-ieres,	-ieres.
-ará,	-erá,	-irá.	-are,	-iere,	-iere.
-aremos,	-eremos,	-iremos.	-áremos,	-iéremos,	-iéremot
-aréis,	-eréis,	-iréis.	-areis,	-iereis,	-iereis.
-arán,	-erán,	-irán.	-aren,	-ieren,	-ieren.
CONDITIONAL.		IMPERATIVE MODE.			
1,	2.	8,	1.	2.	8.
-aría,	-ería,	-iría.			
-arias,	-erías,	-irías.	-8.	-е,	-e.
-aría.	-ería.	-iría.	•••	•	•
-ariamos.	-eríamos,	-iríamos.			
-aríais.	-eríais.	-iríais.	-ad.	-ed.	-id.
-arian.	-erían,	-irían.			
****	~ 				

FIRST CONJUGATION

198. The paradigm comprar, to buy.

Simple Tenses

INFINITIVE. Comprar, to buy.

PRESENT PARTICIPLE. Comprando, buying.

PAST PARTICIPLE. Comprado, bought.

INDICATIVE MODE.

SUBJUNCTIVE MODE. PRESENT.

PRESENT.

SINGULAR

- Compro, I buy.
- 2. Compras, thou buyest.
- 3. Compra, he buys.

- Compre, I may
 Compres, thou mayest
 Compre, he may

PLUBAL

SINGULAR

- 1. Compramos, we buy.
- 2. Compráis, you buy.
- 3. Compran, they buy.
- 1. Compremos, we may
 - 2. Compréis, you may
 - 3. Compren, they may

1. Comprara, I might

IMPERFECT.

IMPERFECT (first form).

- Compraba, I was
 Comprabas, thou wast
 Compraba, he was

buy-

- 2. Compraras, thou might-
 - 3. Comprara, he might

PLURAL

- 1. Comprábamos, we were
- 2. Comprabais, you were
- 3. Compraban, they were
- 1. Compráramos, we might
- 2. Comprarais, you might 3. Compraran, they might

PRETERIT.

IMPERFECT (second form).

SINGULAR

- Compré, I bought.
- Compraste, thou boughtest.
- 3. Compró, he bought.
- 1. Comprase, I might
- 2. Comprases, thou might-
- 3. Comprase, he might

PLURAL

- Compramos, we bought.
- 2. Comprasteis, you bought.
- 3. Compraron, they bought.
- 1. Comprásemos, we might
- Compraseis, you might
 Comprasen, they might

Future.	Future.	
1. Compraré, I shall 2. Comprarés, thou wilt 3. Compraré, he will	1. Comprare, I should	
PLU	JRAL	
 Compraremos, we shall Compraréis, you will Comprarén, they will 	1. Compraremos, we should 2. Comprareis, you should 3. Compraren, they should	
Condi	TIONAL	
SINGULAR.	PLURAL.	
1. Compraria, I should 2. Comprarias, thou shouldst 3. Compraria, he should	 Comprariamos, we should Comprariais, you should Comprarian, they should 	
IMPERAT	IVE MODE	
SINGULAR.	PLURAL.	
2. Compra, buy (thou).	2. Comprad, buy (ye).	
Compour	nd Tenses	
PERFECT INFINITIVE.	PERFECT PARTICIPLE.	
Raber comprado. to have bought.	Habiendo comprado, having bought.	
INDICATIVE MODE.	SUBJUNCTIVE MODE.	
Perfect.	Perfect.	
SING	ULAR .	
 He comprado, I have Has comprado, thou 	1. Haya comprado, I	
hast bought.	2. Hayas comprado, have bought,	
3. Ha comprado, he has	may 2. Hayas comprado, thou mayest 3. Haya comprado, he may	
PLU	RAL	
1. Hemos comprado, we	1. Hayamos comprado, 1	
2. Habéis comprado, have	ne may	
you bought.	2. Hayáis comprado, have	
you $\begin{cases} bought. \end{cases}$ 3. Han comprado, they	you bought	
	2. Hayáis comprado, have bought, ste.	
•	Digitized by Google	

PAST PERFECT.

PAST PERFECT (first form).

SINGULAR

1.	Había	comprado,	1
	had		

- comprado, 2. Habías thou hadst
- 3. Había comprado, he had
- 1. Hubiera comprado, Imight
- 2. Hubieras comprado, thou mightest

3. Hubiera comprado, he might

bought,

have

bought,

PLUBAL

bought.

- 1. Habíamos comprado, 2. Habíais comprado,
- you 8. Habían comprado they
- 1. Hubiéramos prado, we had 2. Hubierais comprado,
 - you 8. Hubieran comprado,
 - they

PRETERIT PERFECT.

PAST PERFECT (second form).

SINGULAR

- 1. Hube comprado, Ihad
- 2. Hubiste comprado, thou hadst
- 3. Hubo comprado, he had
- 1. Hubiese comprado, I might
- 2. Hubieses comprado, thou mightest
 - 3. Hubiese comprado he might

bought,

PLUBAL

bought.

bought.

- 1. Hubimos comprado,
- 2. Hubisteis comprado, had
- 3. Hubieron comprado
- 1. Hubiésemos comprado, we
- 2. Hubieseis comprado, | have
- 3. Hubiesen comprado, they

bought,

FUTURE PERFECT.

FUTURE PERFECT.

SINGULAR

- 1. Habré comprado, I_1 shall 2. Habrás comprado, have
- thou wilt
- 3. Habrá comprado, he will
- 1. Hubiere comprado, I_{1} should
 - 2. Hubieres comprado, thou shouldst
 - 3. Hubiere comprado, he should

PLURAL

1.	Habremo	s comprado,	1	1.	Hubiéremos compra-	1
2. 3.	we Habréis you Habrán they	comprado,	shall have bought.	2. 8.	Hubiéremos comprado, we Hubiereis comprado, you Hubieren comprado, they	should have bought, etc.

PERFECT CONDITIONAL

SINGULAR.

 Habría comprado, I should Habrías comprado, thou shouldst Habría comprado, he 	l	1. Habríamos compra	-)
should		do, we	should
2. Habrías comprado,	have	2. Habriais comprado	, have
thou shouldst	bought.	you	bought
3. Habría comprado, he		3. Habrian comprado	, etc.
should	l	they	j

SECOND CONJUGATION

194. The paradigm vender, to sell.

Simple Tenses

INI	INITIVE.	PRESENT PARTICIPLE.	PAST PARTICIPLE.
Vend	der, to sell.	Vendiendo, selling.	Vendido, sold.

INDICATIVE MODE.

SUBJUNCTIVE MODE.

PLURAL.

PRESENT.

PRESENT.

|--|

- 2. Vendes, thou sellest.
- 3. Vende, he sells.

. SINGULAR

- 1. Venda, I may
- 2. Vendas, thou mayest | sell.
- 3. Venda, he may

PLURAL

- 1. Vendemos, we sell.
- 2. Vendéis, ye sell.
- 3. Venden, they sell.

- 1. Vendamos, we may
- 2. Vendáis, you may
- 3. Vendan, they may

IMPERFECT.

IMPERFECT (first form). SINGULAR

- 1. Vendía, I was selling. 2. Vendías, thou wast
- 3. Vendía, he was
- 1. Vendiera, I might 2. Vendieras, thou might-
- 3. Vendiera, he might

PLURAL

- 1. Vendíamos, we were 2. Vendíais, you were
- 3. Vendian, they were

selling.

Vendiéramos, we might

2. Vendierais, you might 3. Vendieran, they might

PRETERIT.

IMPERFECT (second form).

SINGULAR

- 1. Vendí, I sold.
- 2. Vendiste, thou soldest.
- 8. Vendió, he sold.

- 1. Vendiese, I might
- Vendieses, thou mightret
 Vendiese, he might

PLURAL

- 1. Vendimos, we sold.
- 2. Vendisteis, you sold.
- 3. Vendieron, they sold.
- 1. Vendiésemos, we might
- 2. Vendieseis, you might | sell.
- 3. Vendiesen, they might

FUTURE.

FUTURE.

SINGULAR

- 1. Venderé, I shall
- 2. Venderás, thou wilt 8. Venderá, he will
- 1. Vendiere, I should
- Vendieres, thou shouldst
 Vendiere, he should

PLUBAL

- 1. Venderemos, we shall
- 2. Venderéis, you will
- 8. Venderán, they will
- 1. Vendiéremos, we should
- 2. Vendiereis, you should 3. Vendieren, they should

CONDITIONAL

SINGULAR.

- 1. Vendería, I should 2. Venderías, thou
- PLUBAL.
- 1. Venderíamos, we should Venderiais, you would
 Venderian, they would

8. Vendería, he would

IMPERATIVE MODE

SINGULAR.

PLURAL. '

2. Vende, sell (thou).

2. Vended, sell (ye).

Compound Tenses

PERFECT INFINITIVE.

PERFECT PARTICIPLE. Habiendo vendido, having sold.

Haber vendido, to have sold.

INDICATIVE MODE.	SUBJUNCTIVE MODE.		
Perfect.	Perfect.		
SING	ULAR		
1. He vendido, I have	1. Haya vendido, <i>I may</i>		
2. Has vendido, thou hast sold.	2. Hayas vendido, thou have		
8. Ha vendido, he has	mayest sold.		
	3. Haya vendido, he may		
PLU	TRAL		
1. Hemos vendido, we have	1. Hayamos vendido, we) may		
2. Habéis vendido, you sold,	2. Hayáis vendido, you have		
3. Han vendido, they etc.	3. Hayan vendido, they sold,		
٠ ,	etc.		
PAST PERFECT.	PAST PERFECT (second form).		
SING	ULAR		
1. Había vendido, <i>I had</i>	1. Hubiera vendido, I		
2. Habías vendido, thou sold,	might have		
hadst etc.	2. Hubieras vendido, thou		
3. Había vendido, he had	mightest		
	s. Hubiera vendido, ne		
	might)		
PLU	RAL		
1. Habíamos vendido, we) had	1. Hubiéramos vendido, might		
2. Habíais vendido, you sold,	have		
3. Habian vendido, they etc.	2. Hubierais vendido, you sold.		
	8. Hubieran vendido, etc.		
	they		
PRETERIT.	PAST PERFECT (second form).		
SING	ULAR		
1. Hube vendido, $I had$	1. Hubiese vendido, I		
2. Hubiste vendido, thou sold,	might		
hadst ∫ etc.	2. Hubieses vendido,		
8. Hubo vendido, he had	thou mightest sold,		
	3. Hubiese vendido, he etc.		
	might J		
	BAL		
1. Hubimos vendido, we had	1. Hubiésemos vendido, mighi		
2. Hubisteis vendido, you sold,	we have		
8. Hubieron vendido, they stc.	2. Hubieseis vendido, you sold.		
·	8. Hubiesen vendido,		
	they		

FUTURE PERFECT.

FUTURE PERFECT.

SINGULAR

1. Habré vendido, I shall)	1. Hubiere vendido, I)
 Habré vendido, I shall Habrás vendido, thou 	have	should	١.
wilt	sold,	2. Hubieres vendido,	have sold,
3. Habrá vendido, he	etc.	thou shouldst	
will		8. Hubiere vendido, he	etc.
•		should	j

PLURAL

 Habremos vendido, we Habréis vendido, you Habrán vendido, they sold, etc. 	1. Hubiéremos vendido, we	should
3. Habran vendido, they sola,	z. Hubiereis vendido,	nave
etc.	you	sold,
	3. Hubieren vendido,	etc.
	they	}

CONDITIONAL

IN		

PLURAL

SUBJUNCTIVE MODE.

 Habría vendido, Ishould Habrías vendido, thou wouldst Habría vendido, he would 	have sold, etc.	 Habríamos vendido, we Habríais vendido, you Habrían vendido, they. 	should have sold, etc.
--	-----------------------	--	---------------------------------

THIRD CONJUGATION

195. The paradigm vivir, to live.

INDICATIVE MODE.

Simple Tenses

Infinitive.	PRESENT PARTICIPLE.	PAST PARTICIPLE,
Vivir, to live.	Viviendo, living.	Vivido, lived.

PRESENT.		Present.			
Vivo,	I live.	Viva,	I may live.		
Vives,	thou livest.	Vivas,	thou mayest live.		
Vive,	he lives.	Viva,	he may live.		
Vivimos,	we live.	Vivamos,	we may live.		
Vivís,	you live.	Viváis,	you may live.		
Viven,	they live.	Vivan,	they may live.		

	MINDIPOL.	IMIMAFEC	
Vivía,	I was living.	Viviera,	I might live.
Vivías,	thou wast living.	Vivieras,	thou mightest live.
Vivía,	he was living.	Viviera,	he might live.
Vivíamos,	we were living.	Viviéramos,	we might live.
Vivíais,	you were living.	Vivierais,	you might live.
Vivian,	they were living.	Vivieran,	they might live.
1	Preterit.	Imperfect	(second form).
Viví,	I lived.	Viviese,	I might live.
Viviste,	thou livedst.	Vivieses,	thou mightest live
Vivió,	he lived.	Viviese,	he might live.
Vivimos,	we lived.	Viviésemos,	we might live.
Vivisteis,	you lived.	Vivieseis,	you might live.
Vivieron,	they lived.	Viviesen,	they might live.

INDICATIVE MODE. FUTURE.

IMPERENCE.

SUBJUNCTIVE MODE. FUTURE.

IMPERED (first form)

SINGULAR				
1. Viviré,	I shall live.	1. Viviere,	I should live.	
2. Vivirás,	thou wilt live.	2. Vivieres,	thou shouldst live	
8. Vivirá.	he will live.	8. Viviere.	he should live.	

PLUBAL

1.	Viviremos,	we shall live.	1.	Viviéremos,	we should live.
2.	Viviréis,	you will live.	2.	Viviereis,	you should live.
3.	Vivi rá n,	they will live.	3.	Vivieren,	they should live.

CONDITIONAL

SINGULAR.		PLI	JRAL.
 Viviría, Vivirías, 	I should live. thou wouldst live.	 Viviríamos, Viviríais, 	we should live. you would live.
8. Viviría,	he would live.	3. Vivirían,	they would live

IMPERATIVE MODE

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

2. Vive, live (thou).

2. Vivid, live (ye).

Compound Tenses

Perfect Infinitive. Perfect Participle.

Haber vivido, to have lived. Habiendo vivido, having lived.

INDICATIVE MODE.

SUBJUNCTIVE MODE.

		_	_			_
۲	и.	R.	r	т.	œ٦	۳.

PERFECT.

SINGULA

He vivido, I have	
Has vivido, thou hast	lived, etc.
Ha vivido, he has	

Haya vivido, I may Hayas vivido, thou mayest Haya vivido, he may

lived, etc.

PLURAL

Hemos vivido, we
Habéis vivido, you
Han vivido, theu

Hayamos vivido, we Hayais vivido, you Hayan vivido, they lived, etc. Hayamos vivido, we may

PAST PERFECT.

PAST PERFECT (first form).

SINGULAR

Había vivido, <i>I had</i>
Habías vivido, thou
hadst
Había vivido, he had

Hubiera vivido, Imight
Hubieras vivido, thou have mightest Hubiera vivido, he might

PLURAL.

Habíamos vivido, we
Habíais vivido, you
Habían vivido, they

had

Hubiéramos vivido, Hubierais vivido, you Hubieran vivido, they

PRETERIT PERFECT.

PAST PERFECT (second form).

SINGULAR

Hube vivido, I had
Hubiste vivido, thou
hadst
Hubo vivido, he had

lived, etc. | might | have | have | have | hived, etc. | Hubiese vivido, he might

PLUBAL

Hubimos vivido, we Hubisteis vivido, you Hubieron vivido, they

Hubiésemos vivido, lived, etc. Hubieseis vivido, you

Hubiesen vivido, they

have

¥78	-
PUTURE	PERFECT.

FUTURE PERFECT.

SINGULAR

Habré vivido, Ishall Habrás vivido, thou wilt Habrá vivido, he will	have lived, etc.	Hubiere vivido, I should Hubieres vivido, thou shouldst Hubiere vivido, he	have lived, etc.
		Hubiere vivido, he	
		should	Ì

PLUBAL

Habremos vivido, we	shall	Hubiéremos vivido,	should
Habréis vivido, you Habrán vivido, they	have		! •
Habian vivido, mey	, ,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,	Hubieren vivido, they	lived, etc.

PERFECT CONDITIONAL

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

1. Habrías vivido, I		1. Habríamos vivido,)
 Habrías vivido, I should 		we	should
2. Habrías vivido, thou shouldst	have	2. Habriais vivido,	have
thou shouldst	lived, etc.	you	lived, etc.
8. Habría vivido, he		<i>you</i> 3. Habrían vivido,	
should		they	j

196. The imperative mode contains only the second person, singular and plural. The other persons must be supplied from the subjunctive present; and when it is desired to conjugate an imperative negatively, the subjunctive present takes its place everywhere, since the imperative mode may not be used with a negative; and in such cases the objective pronouns precede the verbs:

Buy (thou) some cotton.
Buy (let your honor buy) a good horse.
Come in, my son.
Do not (thou) enter, my daughter.
Do not believe it.

197. The compound tenses of all the Spanish verbs are formed by means of the auxiliary haber and the past participle of the verb to be conjugated, as has been seen in the foregoing paradigms:

Le he hablado ya.

I have already spoken to him.

198. In process of inflection all verbs ending in car, gar, and zar change the letters c, g, and z into qu, gu, and c whenever they occur before the vowel e—that is, in the first person singular of the preterit and throughout the present subjunctive.

a. ARRANCAR, to pull out, to wrest.

Preterit, arranqué, I wrested.

Subj. Pres., arranque, arranques, arranque, arranquemos, arranqueis, arranquen, I may pull out, etc.

b. MADRUGAR, to rise early.

Preterit, madrugué, I rose early.

Subj. Pres., madrugue, madrugues, madrugue, madruguemos, madruguéis, madruguen, I may rise early, etc.

c. AMENAZAR, to threaten.

Preterit, amenacé, I threatened.

Subj. Pres., amenace, amenaces, amenacemos, amenacemos, amenaceis, amenacen, I may threaten, etc.

199. Verbs ending in guar have a dieresis over the u in the same position—that is, when the u occurs before e:

AVERIGUAR, to ascertain.

Preterit, averigüé, I ascertained.

Subj. Pres., averigüe, averigües, averigüemos, averigüés, averigüemos, I may ascertain, etc.

Imperative, averigua, ascertain (thou).

200. Verbs in cer and cir, preceded by a consonant, change c to z when, in the course of inflection, it encounters a or e—that is, in the first person singular of the indicative present and throughout the subjunctive present.

a. VENCER, to vanquish.

Indicative Pres., venzo, I vanquish.

Subj. Pres., venza, venza
s, venza, venzamos, venza
is, venzan, \boldsymbol{I} may vanquish, etc.

b. UNCIR, to yoke.

Indicative Pres., unzo, I yoke.

Subj. Pres., unza, unza
s, unza, unzamos, unzáis, unzan, \boldsymbol{I} may yoke, etc.

201. Verbs terminating in cer and cir, preceded by a vowel, insert z before c when the latter meets a or o:

a. NACER, to be born.

Ind. Pres., nazeo, (other forms of the present regular).

Subj. Pres., nazca, nazcas, nazca, nazcamos, nazcais, nazcan.

b. CARECER, not to have, to be without.

Ind. Pres., carezco.

Subj. Pres., carezca, carezcas, carezca, carezcamos, carezcáis, carezcan.

c. CONOCER, to know, to become acquainted with.

Ind. Pres., conozeo, I know, am acquainted with.

Subj. Pres., conozca, conozcas, conozca, conozcamos, conozcais. conozcan, I may know, be acquainted with.

d. LUCIR, to shine, to display.

Ind. Pres., luzco.

Subj. Pres., luzca, luzcas, luzca, luzcamos, luzcáis, luzcan.

c. The exceptions to this rule, which are as follows, will be explained in another section:

Hacer, to do, to make. Escocer, to smart.

Cocer, to boil, to cook, Mecer, to shake.

f. YACER, to lie (as one dead).

Ind. Pres., yazco yazeo yaces yace yacemos yacéis yace yacen. Subj. Pres., yazca yazca yazcamos yazcais yazcan. yazga yazgas yazga yazgamos yazgais yazgan. yaga yagas yaga yagamos yagais yagan. yace, or yaz vaced. yacía; yací, yaciera, yaciese, yaciere; yaceré, -ía.

202. When the radical g, of verbs in ger and gir, would come before a or o, it changes into j:

a. ESCOGER, to select, to choose.

Ind. Pres., escojo, I choose.

Subj. Pres., escoja, escojas, escojamos, escojáis, escojan, I may select, etc.

b. AFLIGIR, to afflict.

Ind. Pres., aflijo, I afflict.

Subj. Pres., aflija, aflijas, aflija, aflijamos, aflijais, aflijan, I may afflict, etc.

203. When verbs ending in guir and quir (only one), encounter a or o in process of inflection, they drop the u, it being unnecessary:

a. DISTINGUIR, to distinguish.

Ind. Pres., distingo, I distinguish.

Subj. Pres., distinga, distingas, distinga, distingamos, distingais, distingan, I may distinguish, etc.

b. DELINQUIR, to transgress.

Ind. Pres., delinco, I transgress.

Subj. Pres., delinca, delincas, delinca, delincamos, delincáis, delincan, I may transgress, etc.

204. Verbs whose stem-ending contains either of the ligatured consonants ch, ll, fi, drop the i of the diphthongs ie, io, when they meet in the conjugation—namely, in the present participle, the preterit third person, singular and plural, in the two forms of the imperfect subjunctive, and in the future subjunctive:

a. MULLIR, to beat up.

Pres. Part., mullendo, beating up.

Preterit, mull6, mulleron, he beat up, they beat up (past).

Subj. Imp., mullera, etc., mullese, etc., I might beat up, etc.

Subj. Fut., mullere, etc., I should beat up, etc.

b. TANER, to play, (as upon an instrument).

Pres. Part., tañendo.

Preterit, tano, taneron.

Subj. Imp., teñera, etc., tañese, etc.

Subj. Fut., tañere, etc.

c. PLANIR, to lament.

Pres. Part., planendo.

Ind. Pret., plano, planeron.

Subj. Imp., planera, etc., planese, etc.

d. HENCHIR, to fill up, (irregular).

Pres. Part., hinchendo, hinchiendo.

Preterit, hinchó, hinchió, hincheron, hinchieron.

Subj. Imp., hinchiera, hinchera, etc., hinchese, hinchiese, etc.

Subj. Fut., hinchere, hinchiere, etc.

205. Verbs in **uir**, including those in **tiir**, insert **y** instead of **i**, as will be seen in the following paradigms:

a. CONSTRUIR, to construct. Pres. Part., construyendo.

Ind. Pres., construyo, -yes, -ye, construimos, -is, construyen.

Subj. Pres., construya, -yas, -ya, -yamos, -yáis, -yan.

Impv., — -ye, construid.

Ind. Pret., construí, -iste, -yó, -imos, -isteis, -yeron.

Imp. Subj. (*first form*), construyera, -yeras, -yera, -yéramos, -yerais, -yeran.

Imp. Subj. (second form), construyese, -yeses, -yese, -yésemos, -yeseis, -yesen.

Subj. Fut., construyere, -yeres, -yere, -yéremos, -yereis, -yeren.

b. Verbs ending in guir lose the dieresis when, in the course of inflection, the u precedes a consonant y:

ARGUIR, to argue. Pres. Part., arguyendo.

Ind. Pres., arguyo, -yes, -ye, argüimos, -is, arguyen.

Subj. Pres., arguya, -yas, -ya, arguyamos, -yais, arguyan.

Impv., —— -ye, argüid.

Ind. Pret., arguí, -iste, arguyó, arguimos, -isteis, arguyeron.

Imp. Subj. (*first form*), arguyera, -yeras, -yera, -yeramos, -yerais, yeran.

Imp. Subj. (second form), arguyese, -yeses, -yese, -yésemos, -yeseis, -yesen.

Subj. Fut., arguyere, -yeres, -yere, -yéremos, -yereis, -yeren.

c. Verbs in eer, such as leer, to read, creer, to believe, are similar to the above, in that they substitute y for i when, in the course of conjugation, it meets e or e—that is, in the indicative preterit, third person, singular and plural; in the two forms of the imperfect subjunctive, in the future subjunctive, and in the present participle:

LEER, to read. Pres. Part., leyendo.

Ind. Pret., leyó, leyeron.

Subj. Imp. $(first\ form)$, leyera, leyeras, leyera, leyeranos, leyerais, leyeran.

Subj. Imp. (second form), leyese, leyeses, leyese, leyésemos, leyeseis, leyesen.

Subj. Fut., leyere, leyeres, leyere, leyeremos, leyereis, leyeren.

206. Since the Spanish verb employs few auxiliaries, such as those used in English in the emphatic and progressive forms, it is commonly necessary to reduce the verb to its simple form before putting it into Spanish:

207. The progressive form may be expressed by the use of estar, to be; ir, to go; hallarse or encontrarse, to find one's self, to be; quedar, to remain; andar, to go, to walk; seguir, to continue, to go on; verse, to see one's self:

Estoy comprando, I am buying. V. está comprando, you are buy-Voy vendiendo, I am selling. ing.

Me hallé comprando, I was buy- Quedó viviendo, he went on living, (I found myself buying). ing, continued to live.

Está viviendo, he is living.

208. The verb ser, to be, is never used as an auxiliary to construct the progressive form of an active verb. This function is always performed by estar, to be.

209. Ser, to be, as has been said, is used to build up the passive voice, it being joined to the past participle of the verb to be inflected, whatever be its conjugation, and whether regular or irregular :

Soy amado de Margarita.

I am loved by Margaret.

PASSIVE CONJUGATION

210. The paradigm ser amado, to be loved.

Simple Tenses

INFINITIVE MODE.

PRESENT PARTICIPLE.

Ser amado-a, to be loved. Siendo amado-a, being loved.

INDICATIVE MODE.

SUBJUNCTIVE MODE.

Present.

PRESENT.

SINGULAR

Soy amado-a,
 Eres amado-a,
 Es amado-a,

I am loved,
etc.

Somos amado-as.

Sois amados-as.

8. Son amados-as.

- Sea amado-a,
 Seas amado-a,
 Sea amado-a,

 I may be loved, etc.

PLURAL

- 1. Seamos amados-as.
- Seáis amados-as.
- 3. Sean amados-as.

IMPERFECT.

IMPERFECT (first form).

SINGULAR

Era amado-a,
 Eras amado-a,
 Era amado-a,

- Fuera amado-a,
 Fueras amado-a,
 Fuera amado-a,

PLURAL

- 1. Eramos amados-as.
- 2. Erais amados-as.
- Eran amados-as.

- 1. Fuéramos amados-as
- 2. Fuerais amados-as.
- 3. Fueran amados-as.

PRETERIT. IMPERFECT (second form). SINGULAR Fuí amado-a, Fuiste amado-a, Fué amado-a, Fué amado-a, Fué amado-a, Fuese amado-a, I might be loved. Fuese amado-a, PLURAL 1. Fuimos amados-as. Fuésemos amados-as. 2. Fueseis amados-as. 2. Fuisteis amados-as. 3. Fueron amados-as. 3. Fuesen amados-as. FUTURE. FUTURE. SINGULAR Seré amado-a, Serás amado-a, Será amado-a, Fuere amado-a, Fueres amado-a, I should be loved, etc. Fuere amado-a, Fuere amado-a, PLUBAL 1. Seremos amados-as. 1. Fuéremos amados-as. Seréis amados-as. 2. Fuereis amados-as. Serán amados-as. 3. Fueren amados-as. CONDITIONAL SINGULAR. PLURAL. Sería amado-a, Serías amado-a, Sería amado-a, Sería amado-a, Sería amado-as, Sería amado-as, Sería amados-as, Sería amados-as, Sería amados-as, IMPERATIVE MODE SINGULAR. PLURAL. 2. Sé amado-a, be (thou) loved. 2. Sed amados-as, be (ye) loved. Compound Tenses PERFECT PARTICIPLE. PERFECT INFINITIVE. Terrect infinitive. to have been loved. Habiendo amado-a, amado-a, amado-a, loved. having been loved. INDICATIVE MODE PERFECT SINGULAR 1. He sido amado-a, Has sido amado-a, Ha sido amado-a,

PLURAL

- 1. Hemos sido amados-as.
- 2. Habéis sido amados-as.
- 3. Han sido amados-as.

PAST PERFECT

SINGULAR

- 1. Había sido amado-a,
- 2. Habías sido amado-a,
- 8. Había sido amado-a,

I had been

PLUBAL

- 1. Habíamos sido amados-as.
- 2. Habíais sido amados-as.
- 3. Habían sido amados-as.

PRETERIT PERFECT

SINGULAR

- 1. Hube sido amado-a,
- 2. Hubiste sido amado-a, 1
- 8. Hubo sido amado-a,

loved

PLURAL

- 1. Hubimos sido amados-as.
- 2. Hubisteis sido amados-as.
- 3. Hubieron sido amados-as.

FUTURE PERFECT

SINGULAR

- 1. Habré sido amado-a,
- 2. Habrás sido amado-a,
- Habrá sido amado-a,

PLURAL

- 1. Habremos sido amados-as.
- 2. Habréis sido amados-as.
- 8. Habrán sido amado-a.

CONDITIONAL

SINGULAR

- 1. Habría sido amado-a,
- 2. Habrias sido amado-a,
- 8. Habría sido amado-a,

I should have been loved.

SUBJUNCTIVE MODE

PERFECT

- 1. Haya sido amado-a,
- 2. Hayas sido amado-a.
- 3. Haya sido amado-a,

PLURAL

- 1. Hayamos sido amados-as.
- 2. Hayáis sido amados-as.
- 3. Hayan sido amados-as.

PAST PERFECT (second form)

SINGULAR

- 1. Hubiera sido amado-a,
- Hubieras sido amado-a,
 Hubiera sido amado-a,

PLURAL

- 1. Hubiéramos sido amados-as.
- 2. Hubierais sido amados-as.
- 3. Hubieran sido amados-as.

PAST PERFECT (second form)

SINGULAR

- 1. Hubiese sido amado-a, Hubiese sido amado-a,
 Hubiese sido amado-a,
 Hubiese sido amado-a,
 been loved.
- 3. Hubiese sido amado-a,

PLURAL

- Hubiésemos sido amados-as.
- Hubieseis sido amados-as.
- 3. Hubiesen sido amados-as.

FUTURE PERFECT

SINGULAR

- 1. Hubiere sido amado-a, 2. Hubieres sido amado-a,
- 3. Hubiere sido amado-a,

PLURAL

- Hubiéremos sido amados-as.
- 2. Hubiereis sido amados-as.
- Hubieren sido amados-as.

CONDITIONAL

PLURAL

- Habríamos sido amados-as.
- 2. Habríais sido amados-as.
- 3. Habrían sido amados-as.
- 211. A reflexive verb is one whose action reflects or reacts upon the subject in the form of an accusative or objective pronoun:

V. se engaña.

You deceive yourself.

212. A transitive verb becomes intransitive by taking the reflexive form:

Él no sabe lo que se hace. Se cerró la puerta. He does not know what is doing. The door closed.

213. The paradigm lavarse, to wash one's self.

Simple Tenses

INFINITIVE.

PRESENT PARTICIPLE.

Lavarse, to wash one's self.

Lavándose, washing one's self.

INDICATIVE MODE.

SUBJUNCTIVE MODE.

PRESENT.

SINGULAR

PRESENT.

 Me lavo,),,
2. Te lavas,	I wash my-
3. Se lava,	self, etc.

1. Me lave,
2. Te laves,
3. Se lave,

I may we myself,

PLI

- PLURAL

 1. Nos lavemos.
- Nos lavamos.
 Os laváis.

Os lavéis.
 Se laven.

3. Se lavan.

s. Se laven.

IMPERFECT.

IMPERFECT (first form).

SINGULAR

Me lavaba,
 Te lavabas,
 Se lavaba,

I was washing myself, etc.

Me lavara,
 Te lavaras,
 Se lavara.

I might w
myself,

PLURAL

- 1. Nos lavábamos,
- 2. Os lavabais.
- 3. Se lavaban.

- Nos laváramos.
 - 2. Os lavarais.
 - 3. Se lavaran.

PRETERIT.

IMPERFECT (second form).

SINGULAR

1.	Me lavé,	1	1.
2.	Te lavaste,	I washed my-	2.

Me lavase,

- 3. Se lavó,
- Te lavases,
 Se lavase,

PLUBAL

1. Nos lavamos.

Nos lavásemos.

2. Os lavasteis. 8. Se lavaron.

2. Os lavaseis. 8. Se lavasen.

FUTURE.

FUTURE.

SINGULAR

- I shall wash myself, etc. 2. Te lavarás,
- 1. Me lavare, Te lavares,
 Se lavare,
- 3. Se lavará,

PLUBAL

1. Nos lavaremos.

Nos laváremos.

2. Os lavaréis.

2. Os lavareis.

3. Se lavarán.

3. Se lavaren.

CONDITIONAL

SINGULAR.

PLUBAL.

- Me lavaría,)
- 1. Nos lavariamos. 2. Os lavaríais.
- Me lavaria,
 Te lavarias,
 Sa lavaria
 I should wash myself, etc. 8. Se lavaría.
- 3. Se lavarian.

IMPERATIVE MODE

SINGULAR.

PLUBAL.

2. Lávate, wash (thou) thyself. 2. Lavaos, wash (ye) yourselves.

Compound Tenses

Perfect Infinitive.

PERFECT INFINITIVE.

Haberse lavado, to have washed Habiéndose lavado. one's self. washed one's self.

INDICATIVE MODE

PERFECT

SINGULAR

- 1. Me he lavado,
- 2. Te has lavado.
- 3. Se ha lavado,

PLURAL

- 1. Nos hemos lavado.
- 2. Os habéis lavado.
- 3. Se han lavado.

PAST PERFECT

SINGULAR

- Me había lavado,
- 2. Te habías lavado,
- 3. Se había lavado,

I had washed myself, etc.

PLURAL

- 1. Nos habíamos lavado.
- 2. Os habíais lavado.
- 8. Se habían lavado.

PRETERIT PERFECT

SINGULAR

- 1. Me hube lavado,
- 2. Te hubiste lavado, I had washed
- 8. Se hubo lavado,

myself, etc.

PLURAL

- 1. Nos hubimos lavado.
- 2. Os hubisteis lavado.
- 3. Se hubieron lavado.

FUTURE PERFECT

SINGULAR

- 1. Me habré lavado,
- 2. Te habrás lavado,

I shall have washed myself, etc.

3. Se habrá lavado,

PLURAL

- 1. Nos habremos lavado.
- 2. Os habréis lavado.
- 3. Se habrán lavado.

SUBJUNCTIVE MODE

PERFECT

SINGULAR

- Me haya lavado,
 Te hayas lavado,
- 8. Se haya lavado,

I may have washed myself, etc.

PLUBAL

- 1. Nos hayamos lavado.
- 2. Os hayáis lavado.
- 8. Se hayan lavado.

PAST PERFECT (first form) SINGULAR

- 1. Me hubiera lavado,
- 2. Te hubieras lavado,
- 3. Se hubiera lavado,

I might have washed myself, etc.

I might have washed

PLURAL

- 1. Nos hubiéramos lavado.
- 2. Os hubierais lavado.
- 3. Se hubieran lavado.

PAST PERFECT (second form)

- 1. Me hubiese lavado,
- 2. Te hubieses lavado,
- 3. Se hubiese lavado, myself, etc.

PLURAL

- 1. Nos hubiésemos lavado.
- 2. Os hubieseis lavado.
- 3. Se hubiesen lavado.

FUTURE PERFECT SINGULAR

- 1. Me hubiere lavado,
- Te hubieres lavado,
 Se hubiere lavado,

I should have washed myself, etc.

I should have washed

PLURAL

- 1. Nos hubiéremos lavado.
- 2. Os hubiereis lavado.
- 8. Se hubieren lavado.

CONDITIONAL

SINGULAR

- 1. Me habría lavado,
- 2. Te habrías lavado,
- 8. Se habría lavado. myself, etc.

PLURAL

- 1. Nos habríamos lavado.
- 2. Os habriais lavado.
- 2. Se habrian lavado.

214. A reflexive verb may be conjugated negatively by the use of no, no, taking care to place it before the objective pronoun:

Ellos no se lavan, or no se han They do not wash themselves, or have not washed themselves. lavado.

IMPERSONAL VERBS

215. Impersonal verbs are used in the third person singular only; their subject can not be expressed when it applies to an operation of Nature, corresponding to the English it; otherwise, if intensity be desired or emphasis required, the neuter ello, it, that, may be employed:

Llueve, it rains, it is raining.

Nieva, it snows, it is snowing.

216. The most common impersonal verbs are:

Amanecer, to grow light. Anochecer, to grow dark.

Diluviar, to pour in torrents. Granizar, to hail.

Helar, to freeze. Lloviznar, to drizzle. Llover, to rain.

Nevar, to snow.

Relampaguear, to lighten.

Tronar, to thunder.

Bastar, to suffice, to be enough, Convenir, to suit, to be proper.

Parecer, to seem, to appear.

217. The conjugation of impersonal verbs is determined by the ending of their infinitive.

218. Paradigm nevar, to snow.

INDICATIVE MODE.

Nieva, it snows. Nevaba, it was snowing. Nevó, it snowed. Nevará, it will snow.

SUBJUNCTIVE MODE.

Nieve, it may snow, let it snow. Nevara, it might snow. Nevase, it might snow. Nevare, it should snow.

CONDITIONAL

Nevaría, it would snow.

Compound Tenses

INDICATIVE MODE

Ha nevado, it has Había nevado, it had Hubo nevado, it had Habrá nevado, it will have

SUBJUNCTIVE MODE

Haya nevado, it may Hubiera nevado, it might Hubiese nevado, it might Hubiere nevado, it should

have snowed.

CONDITIONAL

Habria nevado, it would have snowed.

219. Paradigm llover, lloviendo, llovido; to rain, raining rained.

INDICATIVE MODE. Llueve, it rains. Llovía, it was raining. Llovió, it rained. Lloverá, it will rain.

SUBJUNCTIVE MODE. Llueva, it may rain, let it rain. Lloviera, it might rain, Lloviese, it might rain. Lloviere, it should rain.

CONDITIONAL

Llovería, it would rain.

The compound forms are constructed by the union of the third person singular of the various modes and tenses of haber and the past participle llovido.

220. Some verbs which are impersonal may be given a personal meaning and may take a personal inflection:

Madrugaremos mañana por la We shall rise by daybreak tomañana.

morrow morning (the day will be breaking when we arise tomorrow morning).

221. Bastar, to suffice; convenir, to suit; parecer, to seem, are used in the plural also:

No bastan excusas.

Excuses are not enough.

Las objectiones me parecen estú- The objections appear to me to pidas.

be stupid.

No me convienen tales reglas.

Such rules do not suit me.

222. A few verbs are used only in the third persons, singular and plural. They may be deemed defective verbs:

Acontece, acaece.

It happens.

228. The verb hacer, to do, to make, is used in an impersonal sense in referring to the weather or temperature:

Hace mal tiempo.

It is bad weather.

Hace calor, hace frio.

It is warm, it is cold.

Hace mucho tiempo que no lo I have not seen him for a long veo.

224. Instead of the English expressions it is I, it is thou, it is he, the nominative pronoun with the first person of the verb is employed in Spanish:

Yo sov, tú eres, él es.

It is I, it is thou, it is he.

IRREGULAR VERBS

225. An irregular verb is one which varies in any respect from the inflection of the paradigms comprar, vender, vivir. Of these there are about eight hundred and fifty; but most of them deviate only slightly, and such departures are according to certain general rules, and are made for the sake of harmony of sound.

226. Irregular verbs are conjugated on four stems—the original (infinitive), the present, preterit, and future:

I. THE ORIGINAL (INFINITIVE) III. PRETERIT STEM.

STEM. Pres. Part. (sometimes).

Inf. Ind. Pret.

Pres. Part. (sometimes). Subj. Imp. (first form).
Past Part. Subj. Imp. (second form).

Ind. Imp. Subj. Fut.

ing, imp. Subj. Fut.

Impv. Sing. (second person) (sometimes).

Imp. Plur. (second person).

II. Present Stem. IV. Future Stem.

Ind. Pres. Ind. Fut.
Subj. Pres. Conditional.

Impv. Sing. (second person) (sometimes).

227. If these four stems of even the most irregular verb are known, it is comparatively easy to build up the forms of the entire conjugation:

a. TENER, to have, to possess, to hold.

ORIGINAL STEM. PRESENT STEM.

ten-Inf., tener. Ind. Pres., tengo.

Pres. Part., teniendo. Subj. Pres., tengo.

Past Part., tenido.

Ind. Imp., tenía. Imp. Sing., ten.

Imp. Plur., tened.

PRETERIT STEM. tuv-

Ind. Pret., tuvo.

Subj. Imp. (first form), tuviera.

Subj. Pret. (second form), tuviese.

Subj. Fut., tuviere.

b. DECIR, to say, to tell.

ORIGINAL STEM.

dec-

decir.

Inf... Pres. Part., diciendo (irregular).

Past Part., dicho (irregular).

Ind. Imp., decia. Imp. Plur., decid.

PRETERIT STEM.

dij-

Ind. Pret., dije. Subj. Imp. (first form), dijera.

Subj. Imp. (second form), dijese.

Subj. Fut., dijere.

c. CABER, to hold, to contain.

ORIGINAL STEM. cab-

caber.

Pres. Part., cabiendo.

Past Part., cabido.

Ind. Imp., cabía.

Imp. Sing., cabe. Imp. Plur., cabed.

PRETERIT STEM.

cup-

Ind. Pret., cupe. Subj. Imp. (first form), cupiera.

Subj. Imp. (second form), cupiese.

Subj. Fut., cupiere.

FUTURE STEM. tend-

Ind. Fut., tendré.

Cond.. tendría.

PRESENT STEM. dig-

Ind. Pres., digo. Subj. Pres., diga,

Imp. Sing., di.

FUTURE STEM. dir-

Ind. Fut., diré. Cond.. diría.

PRESENT STEM. quep-

Ind. Pres., quepo. Subj. Pres., quepa.

FUTURE STEM. cabr-Ind. Fut., cabré.

Cond., cabría.

228. Eight verbs have an abbreviated form in the imperative second person singular:

IMPERATIVE. INFINITIVE. INFINITIVE. IMPERATIVE. Decir. to say. Di. say (thou). Salir, to go out. Sal, goout (thou). Hacer, to make. Haz, make. Tener, to have. Ten, have. **V6.** ao. Valer, to be Val. and vale, be Ir, to go. Poner, to place. Pon, place. worth. worth. Venir, to come. Ven, come.

229. Six verbs make an indicative present, first person singular, which terminates irregularly; that is, otherwise than in o:

INFINITIVE. IND. PRES. INFINITIVE. IND. PRES. Dar, to give. Doy, I give. Ir, to go. Voy, I go. Haber, to have. He, I have. Ser, to be. Soy, I am. Saber, to know. Sé, I know.

230. Fourteen verbs have indicative preterits, first and third persons singular, which are not accented on the last syllable:

Infinitive. Andar, to go, to walk.

Caber, to contain.

Decir, to say, to tell. Dije, dijo, ladicir (used in compound verbs -duje, dujo, only).

Estar, to be.
Haber, to have.
Hacer, to do, to make.
Poder, to be able.

Poner, to put. Querer, to wish. Saber, to know. Tener, to have. Traer, to bring. Venir, to come.

281. Ten verbs have irregular future stems:

Indicative Preter
Anduve, anduve, I walked, he walked.

Cupe, cupo, I contained, he contained.

Dije, dijo, I told, he told.
-duje, dujo.

Estuve, estuvo, I was, he was. Hube, hubo, I had, he had. Hice, hizo, I made, he made. Pude, pudo, I was able, he was

Puse, puso, I put, he put.
Quise, quiso, I wished, he wished.
Supe, supo, I knew, he knew.
Tuve, tuvo, I had, he had.
Traje, trajo, I brought, he brought.
Vine, vino, I came, he came.

IND. FUTURE.	Infinitive.	IND. FUTURE.
Cabré.	Saber.	Sabré.
Diré.	Salir.	Saldré.
Habré.	Valer.	Valdré.
Haré.	Poner.	Pon dr é.
Podré.	Tener.	Ten dré.
Querré.	Venir.	Ven dré.
	Cabré. Diré. Habré. Haré. Podré.	Cabré. Saber. Diré. Salir. Habré. Valer. Haré. Poner. Podré. Tener.

REGULAR IRREGULAR VERBS

232. Besides the truly irregular verbs, which will be given later, there are seven classes of verbs which may be said to be regularly irregular, since their irregularities proceed according to certain general rules, that have grown out of a desire to secure euphony.

FIRST CLASS

233. Those verbs that change the vowel e, which occurs before the termination, into ie throughout the indicative and subjunctive present, when it receives the accent, and in the imperative singular (one person only):

a. ACERTAR, to hit the mark.

INDICATIVE PRESENT

1.	Acierto.	1.	Acertamos
9	Aniartes	9	Acortóic

8. Acierta. 3. Aciertan.

Imperative

2. Acierta. 2. Acertad.

SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT

1.	Acierte.	1.	A	certemos.
_		_		

2. Aciertes. 2. Acertéis. 3. Acierte. 3. Acierten.

b. The following verbs, and their compounds, are conjugated like the verb acertar:

Acrecentar.	To increase.	Concertar.	To agree.
Adestrar.	To render skillful.	Confesar.	To confess.
Alentar.	To breathe.	Decentar.	To taste for the
Apacentar.	To feed.	December.	first time.
Apretar.	To squeeze.	Derrengar.	To break the back.
Arrendar.	To hire.	Despernar.	To cut off the legs.
Asentar.	To place.	Despertar.	To awake.
Aserrar.	To saw.	Desterrar.	To banish.
Aterrar.	To throw down.	Empedrar.	To pave.
Atestar.	To stuff.	Empezar.	To begin.
Atravesar.	To cross.	Encerrar.	To lock up.
Aventar.	To winnow.	Encomendar.	To recommend.
Calentar.	To warm.	Enterrar.	To bury.
Cegar.	To blind.	Escarmentar.	To take warning.
Cerrar.	To shut.	Fregar.	To rub.
Comenzar.	To commence.	Gobernar.	To govern.

Helar.	To freeze.	Regar.	To water.
Herrar.	To shoe.	Reventar.	To burst.
Invernar.	To winter.	Segar.	To cut down.
Mentar.	To mention.	Sembrar.	To sow.
Merendar.	To take a colla-	Sentar.	To set.
	tion.	Sosegar.	To quiet.
Negar.	To deny.	Soterrar.	To bury.
/ Nevar.	To snow.	Temblar.	To tremble.
Pensar.	To think.	Tentar.	To tempt.
Quebrar.	To break.	Trasegar.	To rake.
Recomendar.	To recommend.	Tropezar.	To stumble.

SECOND CLASS

234. Those verbs of the first conjugation which change the stem vowel o into ue throughout the indicative and subjunctive present, when it receives the accent, and in the singular of the imperative:

a. ACOSTAR, to go to bed, to put some one to bed.

INDICATIVE PRESENT

- 1. Acuesto, I put or go to bed.
- 1. Acostamos.

2. Acuestas.

2. Acostáis. 3. Acuestan.

8. Acnesta.

IMPERATIVE

2. Acuesta.

2. Acostad.

SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT

1. Acueste.

1. Acostemos.

2. Acuestes.

2. Acostéis.

8. Acueste.

- 3. Acuesten.
- b. The following verbs, and their compounds, are inflected like acostar:

, Acordar.	To agree.	Colar.	To strain.
Agorar.	To divine.	Colgar.	To hang.
Almorzar.	To breakfast.	Comprobar.	To verify.
Amolar.	To grind.	Consolar.	To console.
Aporcar.	To hoe.	Contar.	To count.
Apostar.	To bet.	Costar.	To cost.
Aprobar.	To approve.	Degollar.	To behead.
Asolar.	To waste.	Demostrar.	To demonstrate.
Atronar.	To thunder.	Descollar.	To surpass.
Avergonzar.	To shame.	Desconsolar.	To discourage.

	Desolar.	To desolate.	Renovar.	To renew.
	Desollar.	To skin.	Reprobar.	To reprove.
	Desvergonzarse.	To be impudent.	Rescontar.	To compensate
	Emporcar.	To dirty.	Resollar.	To breathe.
	Encordar.	To string.	Rodar.	To roll.
	Encontrar.	To meet.	Rogar.	To entreat.
	Engrosar.	To engross.	Soldar.	To solder.
	Forzar.	To force.	Soltar.	To loose.
	Holgar.	To rest.	Sonar.	To sound.
	Hollar.	To tread.	Soñar.	To dream.
١	Mostrar.	To show.	Tostar.	To toast.
	Poblar.	To people.	Trocar.	To barter.
	Probar.	To prove.	Tronar.	To thunder.
	Recordar.	To remind.	Volar.	To fly.
	Recostar.	To lie down.	Volcar.	To overturn.
	Regoldar.	To belch.		

THIRD CLASS

235. Those verbs of the second conjugation which change the stem vowel o into ue throughout the indicative and subjunctive present, when it receives the accent, and in the imperative singular:

a. MOVER, to move.

*	INDICATIVE PRESENT		
1. Muevo.		1.	Movemos.
2. Mueves.		2.	Movéis.
3. Mueve.		8.	Mueven.
	Imperative		
2. Mueve.		2.	Moved.
	SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT		
1. Mueva.		1.	Movamos.
2. Muevas.		2.	Mováis.
3. Mueva.		3.	Muevan.

b. The following verbs, and their compounds, are conjugated like mover:

Absolver.	To absolve.	Morder.	To bite.
Disolver.	To dissolve.	Retorcer.	To twist again.
Doler.	To grieve.	Solver.	To solve.
Llover.	To rain.	Torcer.	To twist.
Moler.	To grind.	Volver.	To turn.

FOURTH CLASS

236. Verbs of the second conjugation which change the stem vowel a into ie throughout the indicative and subjunctive present, when it receives the accent, and in the imperative singular:

4. ATENDER, to attend.

INDICATIVE PRESENT

1. Atiendo.	1.	Atendemo
2. Atjendes.	2.	Atendéis.

3. Atjende. 3. Atjenden.

IMPERATIVE

2. Atjende. 2. Atended.

SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT

1. Atienda.	1. Atendamos
2. Atiendas.	2. Atendáis.
3. Atienda.	3. Atiendan.

b. The following verbs, and their compounds, are conjugated like atender:

Ascender.	To ascend.	Entender.	To understand.
Cerner.	To sift.	Extender.	To extend.
Condescender.	To condescend.	Heder.	To stink.
Contender.	To contend.	Hender.	To split.
Defender.	To defend.	Perder.	To lose.
Desatender.	To neglect.	Tender.	To stretch out.
Descender.	To descend.	Trascender.	To transcend.
Encender.	To kindle.	Verter.	To pour out.

FIFTH CLASS

237. Those verbs of the third conjugation that change the ewhich immediately precedes the termination into ie in the indicative and subjunctive present, when it receives the accent, and in the imperative singular; and change e into i whenever in the course of inflection it stands before a diphthong in the termination—that is, in the present participle, the indicative preterit, third persons, singular and plural, and throughout the first and second forms of the imperfect subjunctive, and in the future subjunctive. These verbs also change e to i in the first and second persons plural of the present subjunctive:

a. SENTIR, to feel.

INDICATIVE PRESENT

- 1. Siento.
 1. Sentimos.

 2. Sientes.
 2. Sentís.

 3. Siente.
 3. Sienten.
 - IMPERATIVE
- 2. Siente. 2. Sentid.

SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT

 1. Sienta.
 1. Sintamos.

 2. Sietas.
 2. Sintáis.

 3. Sienta.
 3. Sientan.

INDICATIVE PRETERIT

3. Sintió. 3. Sintieron.

SUBJUNCTIVE IMPERFECT (first form)

- Sintiera.
 Sintiéramos.
 Sintierais.
 Sintierais.
- 3. Sintiera. 3. Sintieran.

SUBJUNCTIVE IMPERFECT (second form)

- Sintiese.
 Sintiesenos.
 Sintieseis.
 Sintieseis.
- 3. Sintiese. 3. Sintiesen.

Subjunctive Future

- Sintiere.
 Sintierenos.
 Sintiereis.
- 3. Sintiere. 3. Sintieren.

b. The following verbs, and their compounds, are conjugated like sentir:

Adherir.	To adhere.	Digerir.	To digest.
Advertir.	To advert.	, Herir.	To wound.
Arrepentirse.	To repent.	Hervir.	To boil.
Asentir.	To assent.	Ingerir.	To ingraft.
Conferir.	To confer.	Invertir.	To invert.
Consentir.	To consent.	Pervertir.	To pervert.
Controvertir.	To controvert.	Preferir.	To prefer.
Convertir.	To convert.	Referir.	To refer.
Deferir.	To defer.	Requerir.	To require.
Diferir.	To differ.	•	•

SIXTH CLASS

238. Verbs that change the e which immediately precedes the ending into i in the indicative present, with the exception of the first and second persons plural, and throughout the subjunctive present, in the indicative preterit, third persons, singular and plural, in the imperative singular, and in the subjunctive imperfect, first and second terminations, in the future subjunctive, and in the present participle:

a. PEDIR, to ask for, to petition.

INDICATIVE PRESENT

1.	Pido.	1. Pedi	mo
2.	Pides.	2. Pedí	s.
8.	Pide.	8. Pide	n.

INDICATIVE PRETERIT

8.	Pidió.	3.	Pidieron.
v.	I IUIO.	U .	I Idioi on

IMPERATIVE

2. Pide. 2. Pedid.

SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT

1. Pida.	1. Pidamos.
2. Pidas.	2. Pidáis.
8. Pida.	3. Pidan.

SUBJUNCTIVE IMPERFECT (first form)

1. Pidiera.	 Pidiéramos.
2. Pidieras.	2. Pidierais.
8. Pidiera.	3. Pidieran.

SUBJUNCTIVE IMPERFECT (second form)

1. Pid	iese. 1.	Pidiésemos.
2. Pid	ieses. 2.	Pidieseis.
R. Pid	iege S.	Pidiesen.

SUBJUNCTIVE FUTURE

1.	Pidiere.	1.	Pidiéremos.
2.	Pidieres.	2.	Pidiereis.
8.	Pidiere.	8.	Pidieren.

b. The following verbs, and their compounds, are conjugated like pedir:

Arrecir.	To benumb.	Gemir.	To groan,
Ceñir.	To belt.	Medir.	To measure.
Colegir.	To collect.	Regir.	To rule.
Competir.	To contend.	Rendir.	To render.
Concebir.	To conceive.	Reñir.	To quarrel.
Constreñir.	To constrain.	Repetir.	To repeat.
Derretir.	To melt.	Seguir.	To follow.
Desleir.	To dissolve.	Servir.	To serve.
Elegir.	To elect.	Teñir.	To dye.
Embestir.	To attack.	Vestir.	To dress.

SEVENTH CLASS

239. A few verbs which end in cir and whose irregularities follow the paradigm:

a. CONDUCIR, to conduct.

Ind. Pres., conduzeo, conduces, etc. (The rest is regular.)

Ind. Pret., conduje, conjudiste, condujo, condujimos, condujisteis, condujeron.

Subj. Pres., conduzca, etc. (So throughout.)

Subj. Imp. (first form), condujera, etc. (So throughout.)

Subj. Imp. (second form), condujese, etc. (So throughout.)

Subj. Fut., condujere, etc. (So throughout.)

b. The following verbs are conjugated like conducir:

Aducir, to adduce.

Deducir, to deduce.

Introducir, to introduce.

Producir, to produce. Reducir, to reduce. Traducir, to translate.

240. There are many verbs whose irregularities may not be classified, but may be considered as peculiar to each verb. These must be learned individually. In the following list only those forms are given which vary from the three regular paradigms comprar, vender, and vivir.

241. ADQUIRIR, to acquire.

Ind. Pres., adquiero, adquieres, adquiere, adquirimos, adquirís, adquieren.

Impv., adquiere, adquirid.

Subj. Pres., adquiera, adquieras, adquiera, adquiramos, adquiráis, adquieran.

242. ANDAR, to go, to walk.

Ind. Pret., anduve, anduviste, anduve, anduvimos, anduvisteis, anduvieron.

Subj. Imp. (first form), anduviera, anduvieras, anduviera, anduvierans, anduvierans, anduvieran.

Subj. Imp. (second form), anduviese, anduvieses, anduviese, anduviesemos, anduvieseis, anduviesen.

Subj. Fut., anduviere, anduvieres, anduviere, anduvieremos, anduviereis, anduvieren.

243. ASIR, to seize.

Ind. Pres., asgo, ases, ase, asimos, asís, asen.

Subj. Pres., asga. asgas, asga, asgamos, asgáis, asgan.

244. BENDECIR, to bless. Past Par., bendecido and bendito.

Ind. Pres., bendigo, bendices, bendice, bendecimos, bendecís, bendicen.

Ind. Pret., bendije, bendijiste, bendijo, bendijimos, bendijisteis, bendijeron.

Subj. Pres., bendiga, bendigas, bendiga, bendigamos, bendigais, bendigan.

Subj. Imp. (first form), bendijera, bendijeras, bendijera, bendijeramos, bendijerais, bendijeran.

Subj. Imp. (second form), bendijese, bendijeses, bendijeses, bendijeseis, bendijeseis.

Subj. Fut., bendijere, bendijeres, benijere, bendijeremos, bendijereis, bendijeren.

245. CABER, to hold, to contain.

Ind. Pres., quepo, cabes, cabe, cabemos, cabéis, caben.

Ind. Pret., cupe, cupiste, cupo, cupimos, cupisteis, cupieron.

Ind. Fut., cabré, cabrás, cabré, cabremos, cabréis, cabrán.

Subj. Pres., quepa, quepas, quepa, quepamos, quepais, quepan. Cond., cabría, cabrías, cabría, cabríamos, cabríais, cabrían.

Subj. Imp. (first form), cupiera, cupieras, cupiera, cupiéramos, cupierais, cupieran.

Subj. Imp. (second form), cupiese, cupieses, cupiese, cupiésemos, cupieseis, cupiesen.

Subj. Fut., cupiere, cupieres, cupiere, cupiéremos, cupiereis, cupieren.

246. COCER, to cook, to boil.

Ind. Pres., cuezo, cueces, cuece, cocemos, cocéis, cuecen.

Impv., cnece, coced.

Subj. Pres., cueza, cuezas, cueza, cozamos, cozáis, cuezan.

Likewise all the compounds of decir, except antedecir, the past participle of which is antedicho.

247. DAR, to give.

Ind. Pres., doy, das, da, damos, dais, dan.

Ind. Pret., dí, diste, dió, dimos, disteis, dieron.

Subj. Imp. (first form), diera, dieras, diera, diéramos, dierais, dieran.

Subj. Imp. (second form), diese, dieses, diese, diesemos, dieseis, diesen.

Subj. Fut., diere, dieres, diere, diéremos, diereis, dieren.

248. DECIR, to say, to tell. Pres. Part., diciendo; Past Par., dicho.

Ind. Pres., digo, dices, dice, decimos, decis, dicen.

Ind. Pret., dije, dijiste, dijo, dijimos, dijisteis, dijeron.

Impv., di, decid.

Subj. Pres., diga, digas, diga, digamos, digáis, digan.

Cond., diría, dirías, diría, diríamos, diríais, dirían.

Subj. Imp. (first form), dijera, dijera, dijera, dijeramos, dijerais, dijeran.

Subj. Imp. (second form), dijese, dijeses, dijese, dijésemos, dijeseis, dijesen.

Sub. Fut., dijere, dijeres, dijere, dijeremos, dijereis, dijeren.

249. DORMIR, to sleep. Past. Part., durmiendo.

Ind. Pres., duermo, duermes, duerme, dorminos, dormis, duermen.

Ind. Pret., dormí, dormiste, durmió, dormimos, dormisteis, durmieron.

Impv., duerme, dormid.

Subj. Pres., duerma, duermas, duerma, durmamos, durmáis, duerman.

Subj. Imp. (first form), durmiera, durmieras, durmiera, durmiéramos, durmierais, durmieran.

Subj. Imp. (second form), durmiese, durmieses, durmieses, durmiesens, durmieseis, durmiesen.

Subj. Fut., durmiere, durmieres, durmiere, durmiéremos, durmiereis, durmieren.

250. ERGUIR, to erect, to hold upright. Pres. Part., Irguiendo.

Ind. Pres., yergo, yergues, yergue, erguimos, erguis, yerguen. Ind. Pret., erguí, erguiste, irguió, erguimos, erguisteis, irguieron.

Impv., yergue, erguid.

Subj. Pres., yerga, yergas, yerga, irgamos, irgais, yergan.

¹ Morir, to die, is conjugated like dormir.

Subj. Imp. (first form), Irguiera, Irguieras, Irguiera, Irguieramos, Irguierais, Irguieran.

Subj. Imp. (second form), irguiese, irguiese, irguiese, irguiese, mos, irguieseis, irguiesen.

Subj. Fut., irguiere, irguieres, irguiere, irguiéremos, irguiereis, irguieren.

251. ERRAR, to err.

Ind. Pres., yerro, yerras, yerra, erramos, erráis, yerran.

Impv., yerra, errad.

Subj. Pres., yerre, yerres, yerre, erremos, erréis, yerren.

252. HACER, to do, to make. Past. Part., hecho.

Ind. Pres., hago, haces, hace, hacemos, haceis, hacen.

Ind. Pret., hice, hiciste, hizo, hicimos, hicisteis, hicieron.

Ind. Fut., haré, harás, hará, haremos, haréis, harán.

Impv., haz, haced.

Subj. Pres., haga, hagas, haga, hagamos, hagais, hagan.

Subj. Imp. (*first form*), hiciera, hiciera, hiciera, hicierano, hicieran.

Subj. Imp. (second form), hiciese, hiciese, hiciese, hiciesen, hiciesen, hiciesen.

Subj. Fut., hiciere, hicieres, hiciere, hicieremos, hiciereis, hicieren.

253. IR, to go. Pres. Part., yendo.

Ind. Pres., voy, vas, va, vamos, vais, van.

Ind. Imp., iba, ibas, iba, ibamos, ibais, iban.

Ind. Pret., fui, fuiste, fué, fuimos, fuisteis, fueron.

Impv., vé, id.

Subj. Pres., vaya, vayas, vaya, vayamos, vayais, vayan.

Subj. Imp. (first form), fuera, fueras, fuera, fueramos, fuerais, fueran.

Subj. Imp. (second form), fuese, fueses, fuese, fueses, fueses, fueses.

Subj. Fut., fuere, fueres, fuere, fueremes, fuereis, fueren. 254. JUGAR, to play.

Ind. Pres., juego, juegas, juega, jugamos, jugáis, juegan.

Ind. Pret., jugué, jugaste, jugó, jugamos, jugasteis, jugaron.

Impv., juega, jugad.

Subj. Pres., juegue, juegues, juegue, juguemos, juguéis, jueguen.

255. OIR, to hear. Pres. Part., oyendo.

Ind. Pres., oigo, oyes, oye, oimos, ois, oyen.

Ind. Pret., oí, oíste, oyó, oímos, oísteis, oyeron.

Impv., oye, oid.

Subj. Pres., oiga, oigas, oiga, oigamos, oigáis, oigan.

Subj. Imp. (first form), oyera, oyera, oyera, oyeramos, oyerais, oyeran.

Subj. Imp. (second form), oyese, oyese, oyese, oyesen, oyeseis, oyesen.

Subj. Fut., oyere, oyere, oyere, oyeremos, oyereis, oyeren.

256. OLER, to smell.

Ind. Pres., huelo, hueles, huele, olemos, oléis, huelen.

Impv., huele, oled.

Subj. Pres., huela, huela, huela, olamos, oláis, huelan.

257. PODER, to be able. Pres. Part., pudiendo.

Ind. Pres., puedo, puedes, puede, podemos, podéis, pueden.

Ind. Pret., pude, pudiste, pudo, pudimos, pudisteis, pudieron.

Ind. Fut., podré, podrás, podrá, podremos, podréis, podrán.

Subj. Pres., pueda, puedas, pueda, podamos, podáis, puedan.

Subj. Imp. (first form), pudiera, pudieras, pudiera, pudiéramos, pudierais, pudieran.

Subj. Imp. (second form), pudiese, pudieses, pudiese, pudiésemos, pudieseis, pudiesen.

Subj. Fut., pudiere, pudieres, pudiere, pudiéremos, pudiereis, pudieren.

258. PONER, to put, to place. Past. Part., puesto.

Ind. Pres., pongo, pones, pone, ponemos, ponéis, ponen.

Ind. Pret., puse, pusiste, puso, pusimos, pusisteis, pusieron.

Ind. Fut., pondré, pondrás, pondrá, pondremos, pondréis, pondrán.

Impv., pon, poned.

Subj. Pres., ponga, pongas, ponga, pongamos, pongáis, pongan.

Cond., pondría, pondrías, pondría, pondríamos, pondríais, pondrían.

Subj. Imp. (*first form*), pusiera, pusieras, pusiera, pusieramos, pusierais, pusieran.

Subj. Imp. (second form), pusiese, pusieses, pusiese, pusiesenos, pusieseis, pusiesen.

Subj. Fut., pusiere, pusieres, pusiere, pusiéremos, pusiereis, pusieren.

259. QUERER, to wish.

Ind. Pres., quiero, quieres, quiere, queremos, queréis, quieren.

Ind. Pret., quise, quisiste, quiso, quisimos, quisisteis, quisieron.

Ind. Fut., querré, querrás, querra, querremos, querréis, querran. Subj. Pres., quiera, quieras, quiera, queramos, queráis, quieran.

Cond., querría, querrías, querría, querríamos, querríais, querrían.

Subj. Imp. (first form), quisiera, quisieras, quisiera, quisiéramos, quisierais, quisierau.

Subj. Imp. (second form), quisiese, quisieses, quisiese, quisiésemos, quisieseis, quisiesen.

Subj. Fut., quisiere, quisieres, quisiere, quisiéremos, quisiereis, quisieren.

260. REIR, to laugh. Pres. Part., riendo.

Ind. Pres., río, ríes, ríe, reimos, reís, ríen.

Ind. Pret., reí, reíste, rió, reímos, reísteis, rieron.

Impv., rie, reid.

Subj. Pres., ría, rías, ría, riamos, riáis, rían.

Subj. Pres. (first form), riera, rieras, riera, riéramos, rierais, rieran.

Subj. Pres. (second form), riese, rieses, riese, riésemos, rieseis, riesen.

Subj. Fut., riere, rieres, riere, riéremos, riereis, rieren.

261. SABER, to know.

Ind. Pres., sé, sabes, sabe, sabemos, sabéis, saben.

Ind. Pret., supe, supiste, supo, supimos, supisteis, supieron.

Ind. Fut., sabré, sabrás, sabrá, sabremos, sabréis, sabrán.

Subj. Pres., sepa, sepas, sepa, sepamos, sepáis, sepan.

Cond., sabría, sabrías, sabría, sabríamos, sabríais, sabrían.

Subj. Imp. (first form), supiera, supieras, supiera, supieramos, supierais, supieran.

Subj. Imp. (second form), supiese, supieses, supiese, supieseis, supieseis, supieseis.

Subj. Fut., supiere, supieres, supiere, supiéremos, supiereis, supieren.

262. SALIR, to go out.

Ind. Pres., salgo, sales, sale, salimos, salís, salen.

Ind. Fut., saldré, saldrás, saldrá, saldremos, saldréis, saldrán.

Impv., sal, salid.

Subj. Pres., salga, salgas, salga, salgamos, salgáis, salgan.

Cond., saldría, saldrías, saldría, saldríamos, saldríais, saldrían.

263. TRAER, to bring. Pres. Part., trayendo.

² Caer like traer in the indicative and subjunctive present, like leer elsewhere,

Ind. Pres., traigo, traes, trae, traemos, traéis, traen.

Ind. Pret., traje, trajiste, traje, trajimos, trajisteis, trajeron.

Subj. Pres., traiga, traigas, traiga, traigamos, traigáis, traigan.

Subj. Imp. (first form), trajera, trajera, trajera, trajeranos, trajerans, trajeran.

Subj. Imp. (second form), trajese, trajeses, trajese, trajesens, trajesens.

Subj. Fut., trajere, trajeres, trajere, trajeremos, trajereis, trajeren.

264. VALER, to be worth.

Ind. Pres., valgo, vales, vale, valemos, valéis, valen.

Ind. Fut., valdré, valdrás, valdrán, valdremos, valdréis, valdrán.

Subj. Pres., valga, valgas, valga, valgamos, valgáis, valgan.

Cond., valdría, valdrías, valdría, valdríamos, valdríais, valdrían. 265. VENIR, to come. Pres. Part., viniendo.

Ind. Pres., vengo, vienes, viene, venimos, venís, vienen.

Ind. Pret., vine, viniste, vino, vinimos, vinisteis, vinieron.

Ind. Fut., vendré, vendrás, vendrémos, vendréis, vendrán. Impv., ven, venid.

Subj. Pres., venga, vengas, venga, vengamos, vengais, vengan.

Cond., vendría, vendrías, vendría, vendríamos, vendríais, vendrían.

Subj. Imp. (first form), viniera, viniera, viniera, vinieramos, vinierais, vinieran.

Subj. Imp. (second form), viniese, vinieses, vinieses, vinieses, vinieses, vinieses.

Subj. Fut., viniere, vinieres, viniere, viniéremos, viniereis, vinieren.

266. VER, to see. Past Part., visto.

Ind. Pres., veo, ves, ve, vemos, veis, ven.

Ind. Imp., veia, veias, veia, veiamos, veiais, veian.

Subj. Pres., vea, veas, vea, veamos, veáis, vean.

DEFECTIVE VERBS

267. Defective verbs are those which are wanting in most of their forms.

a. Placer, to please; placiendo, pleasing, pleased, is now used ordinarily in certain ejaculations only:

Plegue & Dios que se salve! God grant that he may be saved!

¹ The compounds of placer are conjugated like verbs in cer and cir. (Section 201.)



The following forms are the only ones in use:

Ind. Pres., place.

Sub. Pres., plazca.

Impv., plegue.

Imp., placía.

Ind. Pret., plugo.

Imp. Subj. (first form), pluguiera.

Imp. Subj. (second form), pluguiese.

Subj. Fut., pluguiere.

Ind. Fut., placerá.

Cond., placería.

b. Reer, to gnaw, has the following forms:

Ind. Pres., roo, roigo, and royo; roes, roe, etc.

Subj. Pres., roa, roiga, and roya; roas, roigas, and royas, etc.

c. Concernir, to concern, has both participles and the following forms:

Ind. Pres., concierne, conciernen.

Subj. Pres., concierna, conciernan.

Ind. Imp., concernía, concernían.

Ind. Pret., concernió, concernieron.

Subj. Imp. (first form), concerniera, concernieran.

Subj. Imp. (second form), concerniese, concerniesen.

Subj. Fut., concerniere, concernieren.

Ind. Fut., concernerá, etc.; all little used.

d. Soler, to be accustomed to, has the following forms in common use:

Ind. Pres., suelo, sueles, suele, solemos, soléis, suelen.

Ind. Imp., solía, solías, solía, solíamos, solíais, solían.

THE ADVERB

268. Adverbs qualify verbs, adjectives, and other adverbs.

269. They admit of no inflection, and are invariable in form-

270. Adverbs are classified according to their form and meaning.

271. As to form, an adverb is either simple or compound.

272. Simple adverbs are of two kinds: original or primitive and derivative.

278. An original or primitive adverb is a single word, without an affix:

Bien, mal, luego.

Well, badly, presently, then.

274. Derivative adverbs are formed from adjectives by affixing

to them the termination -mente (corresponding to the English ly) in accordance with the following rules:

a. Common adjectives, ending in o, change this vowel to the feminine form a and attach the affix:

Verdadero, verdaderamente.

True, truly.

Cierto, ciertamente.

Certain, certainly.

b. If the adjective does not vary for gender, the affix is attached directly and without alteration:

Frecuente, frecuentemente.

Frequent, frequently.

Fácil, fácilmente.

Easy, easily.

275. The affix -mente does not in any way change the accent or general structure of the adjective:

Práctico, prácticamente.

Practical, practically.

Útil, útilmente.

Useful, usefully.

276. When two or more adverbs in -mente follow one another, the affix is attached to the last adjective only; but the adjective or adjectives (now become adverbs) which go before, and which have the force of adverbs, always take the feminine form, if the adjectives out of which they grow are capable of variation for gender:

Honesta y cariñosamente.

Honestly and affectionately.

277. Adverbs in -mente, which usually express manner, may in this sense be changed into adverbial phrases by the use of the adjective and either of the nouns manera or mode, way, manner:

Tiernamente, de una manera Tenderly, or in a tender way. tierna.

278. Adverbial phrases may be constructed by the use of the definite article with the feminine of adjectives derived from the names of countries, some such words being understood as manera, manner, or usanza, usage:

Á la americana.

In the American style.

279. So also may an adverbial phrase be constructed by the use of al estilo de and a proper noun, or al estilo de and an adjective:

Al estilo de México.

After the manner of Mexico.

Al estilo francés.

In the French style.

280. A few derivative adverbs have the affix s:

Antes, formerly, rather. Después, afterwards, after. Entonces, then. Lejos, far, far away.
Mientras. while.

Mientras, while. Quizás, quizá, perhaps. 281. A compound adverb is one which is composed of two or more words, such as substantives, adjectives, or adverbs with prepositions. or adverbs with adverbs. etc.

a. With an article:

Á la moda, in the fashion. En lo sucesivo, henceforth, in the A la verdad, truly. future. Al contado, for cash. Por lo más. at most. Por lo menos, at least. Al punto, immediately. Al revés, contrariwise. Por lo pronto, for the present. En el acto, instantly.

b. Without the article, and in the singular:

A caballo. on horseback. De pronto, quickly. Á menudo. often. De seguro. surely. Á pie, De vista, by sight. on foot. notwithstanding. Con todo. En fin, finally. De buena gana, willingly. in short. En resumen, De día, by day. En seguida, at once. suddenly. certainly. De golpe, Por cierto, at wholesale. De molde, perfectly. Por mayor, by night. at retail. De noche. Por menor, De nuevo. anew. Por supuesto, of course. lightly, briefly. Sin novedad, as usual, without De paso, De prisa, hastily. anything new.

c. Without the article, and in the plural:

blindly. Á secas. plainly, plain. Á ciegas, at one's own ex- A solas, alone. A costas, A voces. aloud. pense. De rodillas, on one's knees. A gatas, on all-fours. in the dark. De veras, truly. Á obscuras. A ojos cerrados, blindly.

282. Classified according to their meaning, adverbs are considered as:

a. Temporal.

Ahora, now. Entonces. then. to-day. A menudo, often. Hoy, Anoche. last night. Mañana, to-morrow. Nunca. never. Anteayer, the day before yes-Raras veces, seldom. terday. Siempre, always, Anteanoche, the night before last. late. Antes. before. Tarde, early. yesterday. Temprano, Ayer, Después, afterward.

b. Adverbs of location:

Adelante, atrás. Á derecha, á izquierda. Aqui, alli, acá, allá. Arriba, abajo, encima, debajo. Cerca, lejos, dentro, fuera.

c. Adverbs of manner:

Así, como, alto, bajo, bien, mal. Mejor, peor.

d. Quantitative adverbs:

Mucho, muy, poco, menos, más. Por lo más, por lo menos. Demasiado, bastante, harto.

Algo, como, apenas.

Forward, backward. On the right, on the left. Here, there, hither, thither. Up, down, above, below. Near, far, within, without.

So, as, aloud, low, well, badly. Better, worse.

Much, very, little, less, more. At most, at least. Too, too much, enough, sufficiently. Somewhat, rather, about, scarce-

ly.

e. Affirmative and negative adverbs:

Sí, eso sí, justo, claro. Por supuesto, por cierto. Ciertamente, verdaderamente. Sin duda. No, eso no, nada, tampoco. Ni vo tampoco.

Yes, indeed so, straitly, clearly. Of course, certainly. Certainly, truly. Undoubtedly. No, not that, not at all, no, nor. Nor I either. Never, never (intensive).

f. Adverbs expressive of doubt or possibility:

Acaso, tal vez or quizás, apenas. Perchance, perhaps, scarcely. Probablemente, dificilmente.

Nunca, jamás, nunca jamás.

Probably, difficulty.

283. The Spanish language contains many adverbial phrases. such as the following:

Á más no poder, with all one's En alguna parte, somewhere. might. A más tardar, at the latest. Cuando menos, at least. Cuanto antes, as soon as possible. De cuando en cuando,) now and De vez en cuando, then. De hito en hito, through and Poco a poco, little by little. through.

En cualquiera parte, anywhere. En ninguna parte, | nowhere. En parte alguna, Hoy día,) at the present day. Hoy en dia, (nowadays. Paso á paso, step by step, slowly. 284. Adverbial phrases may be constructed by the combination of con, with, and an appropriate noun, to take the place of adverbs in -mente.

Honestamente, or con honestidad. Honestly, or with honesty.

PECULIAR USE OF CERTAIN ADVERBS

285. Certain adverbs may be employed after nouns in a sense similar to the English use of prepositions, to express up, down, out, in, before, after, etc.:

Escalera arriba, upstairs. Escalera abajo, downstairs. Mar afuera, seaward. Camino adelante, onward.

286. Aqui, ahi, and alli are used with verbs indicating rest, or location, in the same relation to each other as the demonstratives este, ese, and aquel. (See Section 133.) With verbs of motion they assume the forms acá, ahí, allá:

Aquí están, acá vienen. Ahí están, ahí van. Allí están, allá iban. Here they are, here they come. There they are, there they go. There they are yonder, they were going there.

287. Por aqui, hereabouts, meaning in the location of the speaker, and por ahi, thereabouts, in a location more remote from the speaker, are used in an indefinite sense, as when one does not wish to declare where a person or thing is:

¿ Dónde está Carlos ? Está por ahí. Where is Charles?
He is around there somewhere.

288. **Donde**, where, becomes more specific by connecting it with the prepositions **á**, to; **en**, in; **de**, from; and **por**, through, and is used either as an interrogative or a relative. When used as an interrogative adverb it must always bear the graphic accent:

Donde vive V. ?
Adónde lo llevan ?
De dónde han venido Vds. ?

Por dónde camina V. !
La casa en donde reside.
El estado por donde pasa el río.

Where do you live?
Where are they carrying him?
Where have you come from?
(plural).
By which road do you travel?
The house where he resides.

The state through which the river passes.

289. Since and ago may not be expressed by temporal adverbs, but by the third person singular of hacer and haber, in certain tenses:

Hace cinco años, cinco años ha. Five years ago.

Hace mucho tiempo, mucho tiempo ha.

290. Mismo may be placed after adverbs of time and location to make them more pointed:

Hoy mismo, aquí mismo.

This very day, this very place.

291. Muy, very, very much, as has already been said, qualifies adjectives, adverbs, and adverbial phrases in the positive degree:

Muy fiel, muy grande. Muy odiado, muy gozosamente. Muy á la moda. Very faithful, very large. Very much hated, very joyfully. Very much in fashion.

292. In the same way, mucho, much, and muchisimo, very much, qualify adjectives, adverbs, and adverbial phrases in the comparative degree:

Mucho más sabio.

Much wiser.

Mucho mejor, mucho peor.

Much better, much worse.

293. Muy, very, may never stand alone without an adjective or an adverb, but in such cases must be replaced by mucho, with the same meaning:

Es bueno i sí, mucho.

Is it good ? yes, very.

294. Si, with the graphic accent, means yes, and without it it means if. When it means yes, it may be strengthened by the addition of tal or que, or by the repetition of the verb:

295. After verbs of thinking, declaring, believing, hearing, and suspecting, si and no are preceded by que, and are to be translated yes or so, and not:

Creo que sí, que no.

I think so, I think not.

296. Negation is effected by no, not, standing before the verb, or with the nominative pronoun, the verb being understood; by ni,

neither, nor, by nunca or jamás, or nunca jamás (emphatic), never; nada, nothing, not anything. As has been said (Section 165), the Spanish language usually requires two negatives, one before and one after the verb; but if jamás, nada, or nunca stands before the verb, another negative is not needed:

No veo, i no veo yo?

No poseo nada, nada poseo.

Nunca la he castigado.

Lo haré nunca jamás.

I do not see, do I not see?

I possess nothing.

I have never punished her.

I shall never do it (emphatic).

297. Tampoco, nor—either, no, at the beginning of a sentence may be employed without a negative, or may be used with no at the close of a negative sentence:

Ni ellos tampoco.

Nor they either.

Tampoco me gustan.

Nor do they please me.

298. Ya, which means now, already, when used without a negative, becomes no longer, not any longer, with a negative:

Ya vienen, ya lo hizo.

They are coming now, he has already done it.

299. Again may be translated into Spanish by the use of the verb volver, followed by the preposition â:

Vuelve á leer este libro.

He is reading this book again.

300. Just, in the phrase to have just, is rendered by the verbal phrase acabar de, acabar meaning to finish:

Acabo de entrar.

I have just entered.

COMPARISON OF ADVERBS

301. Adverbs have the three degrees of comparison, positive, comparative, and superlative, without variation for gender or number:

Positive.	COMPARATIVE.	Superlative.	
Cerca, near.	Más cerca, nearer.	Lo más cerca, the nearest.	
Lejos, far.	Más lejos, farther.	Lo más lejos, the farthest.	
Fielmente, faithfully.	Más fielmente, more faithfully.	Lo más fielmente, th most faithfully.	

802. Four adverbs have an organic comparison:

Positive.	COMPARATIVE.	SUPERLATIVE RELATIVE.	Superlative Absolute.
Mucho, much.	Más, more.	Lo más, the most.	Muchísimo, very much.
Poco, little.	Menos, less.	Lo menos, the least.	Poquísimo, very little.
Bien, well.	Mejor, better.	Lo mejor, the best.	
Mal, badly.	Peor, worse.	Lo peor, the worst.	Malisimo, very badly.

303 The superlative absolute may be constructed by the employment of muy, bien, very; bastante, harto, quite, sufficiently; sumamente, exceedingly, etc.

Muy lejos, bien claro.

que su amigo.

Very far, very clearly.

304. Comparison is effected by the use of the adverbs:

a. Of equality: tan-como, as; no-menos-que, not-lessthan:

El lo sabe tan bien como V. He knows it as well as you.

El no espera con menos ansiedad He does not wait with less anxiety than his friend.

b. Tanto como, or tanto cuanto, as much as, and no-menos que, not-less than:

Ejerce tanto como, or tanto cuan- He exercises as much as his to su hermano. brother.

c. Superiority is expressed by mas-que, more than; mejor que, better than:

Viaja más lejos que el sastre. He travels farther than the tailor. Les verdad que no entiendo me- Is it true that I do not underjor que V. ? stand better than you?

d. Inferiority is expressed by menos—que, less—than; no—tan -como, no-so-as, no-tanto como, or no-tanto cuanto, peor que:

No escribe tan corrientemente He does not write as rapidly as como el maestro. his teacher.

No me da tanto cuanto pueda He does not give me as much as comer. I can eat.

PREPOSITIONS

305. Prepositions are simple or complex in form, according as they immediately precede their object, or are used in combination with other words:

306. The simple prepositions are:

Á, to. Mediante, through, by means of. Ante, before. Menos. except, but. under. for, to, in order to. Bajo, Para. Con, with. Por. for, by, through. against. Salvo. save, excepting. Contra, Dě. of, from. Según, according to. Desde, from, since. Sin, without. Durante, during. Sobre. on, upon, about, concerning. En. in, at, on. between, among. Tras. after. Entre. Atrás. after. Excepto, except. Hacia. toward.

807. The complex prepositions are:

about, concern- A causa de, on account of. Acerca de. A excepción de, with the exceping. Además de. besides. tion of. Á fuerza de, around. by dint of. Alrededor de. Antes de. before. A la vista de. within sight of. near, about. Al cabo de. at the expiration Cerca de. under. Debajo de, of. Al lado de, Delante de. before. by the side of. within. Al través de. Dentro de. across, through. Después de, after. A pesar de, in spite of. Detrás de. behind. A razón de. at the rate of. Encima de. on, over. De parte de, on the part of. Fuera de. outside, beyond. En frente de. opposite. Lejos de, far, from. En lugar de, instead of. Conforme á. according to. En medio de, in the midst of. Contrario á, contrary to. instead of. En vez de. opposite, Frente á, En virtud de. by virtue of. front of. En vista de. in view of. near, close by. Junto á, Más allá de, beyond. with respect to. Respecto á, Por causa de. on account of. touching. on the side of. Tocante á. Por el lado de. Juntamente con, together with. by reason of. Por razón de. with respect to. Sin embargo de, notwithstanding, En cuanto á, toward, to. Para con,

308. A. to, is used with verbs of motion; on, in, at, on, with verbs indicating rest in a place; de, from, out of, sometimes by, to denote origin, source, ownership, material, etc.:

Voy á Madrid. Están en Inglaterra.

En el suelo. Vuelvo de España. Es de madera.

I am going to Madrid. They are in England. On the floor. I return from Spain.

It is of wood.

309. A has the further use:

a. Of a dative relation in the sense of to:

A la casa, al hombre.

To the house, to the man.

b. Of a sign of a personal accusative, to make the object of a verb more specific:

No temo al enemigo.

I do not fear the enemy.

c. Of a connective between certain verbs and their infinitives: Fué á verlo. He went to see him.

d. Of the English at in such cases as the following:

Á la puerta, á la mesa.

At the door, at the table.

e. Of at in expressing time, price, rate, distance:

Á las seis, á mediodía.

At six o'clock, at mid-day.

Á dos chelines la vara.

Á una milla.

At two shillings a yard. At the distance of a mile.

f. Of the distributive by:

Poco á poco.

One by one.

310. Ante, before, signifies in the presence of an authority: Before the judge.

Ante el juez.

311. Delante de indicates situation in front of in an informal sense:

Delante de la mesa.

Before the table.

312. Antes de indicates priority of time, order, rank:

Antes de las cuatro. Un rey es antes de un principe. A king is before a prince.

Before four o'clock.

818. Tras. after, indicates what immediately follows: detrás de signifies what is behind, as to place, situation, or order, being the opposite of delante de; después de, after, is descriptive of time or order, and is the opposite of antes de:

Tras él andaba su hijo.

After him walked his son.

Detrás de un árbol.

Behind a tree.

Después de tres días se marchó.

After three days he went away.

314. Bajo, below, beneath, underneath, indicates a situation just under : debajo de, under, denotes material situation :

Bajo el mar.

Beneath the sea.

Debajo de la cama.

Under the bed.

315. Sobre and encima de, on, upon, of location, have this difference: sobre means on in the common sense, while encima indicates what is higher than we are, or over, above:

Sobre la mesa.

On the table.

Encima de la casa.

On the housetop.

316. Con, with, indicates accompaniment or instrument:

Llegó con su padre.

Lo mató con una espada.

He arrived with his father.

He killed him with a sword.

317. Desde, from, denotes the starting point, and is used either of time or place:

Desde el principio.

From the beginning. Since yesterday.

Desde aver.

318. Hacia, toward, indicates material or temporal direction:

Corrió hacia el muelle.

He ran toward the quay.

Hacia la mañana.

Toward morning.

Hacia el fin del siglo.

Toward the end of the century.

319. Hasta, as far as, to, up to, till, until, even, is indicative of place, time, degree:

Hasta el puerto.

Up to the port.

Hasta Barcelona. Hasta que pueda. As far as Barcelona.

Hasta la vista.

Until we meet (until the view).

As far as I can.

320. Para means for in the sense of destination, end, purpose:

Esta carta es para su padre de V. This letter is for your father. Este palo no sirve para bastón.

This stick will not answer for a

walking-cane.

321. Por means for, in behalf of, for the sake of, by, through, along, on account of:

Lo digo por mi padre.

I say it for my father (in behalf

Paso por la calle.

I go through the street.

CONJUNCTIONS

322. There are very few simple conjunctions, though adverbe and prepositions may be utilized as conjunctions, with or without que.

323. The true conjunctions are:

Pero, mas, sino, but.

Que, that.

Ni, nor.

Si, if, whether.

Ó (ú before another o-sound), or. Y (é before an i-sound), and.

324. Pero, mas, and sino signify but, pero and mas being found at the beginning of a sentence or paragraph, and in adversative sentences; while sino occurs only in an adversative sentence, the first clause of which contains a negation that is contrasted with an affirmation in the second:

Pero el conde rehusa declararlo.

But the count refuses to declare

it.

El mantiene que es la verdad, He maintains that it is the truth, mas i qué me importa á mí ?

but what does it matter to me? No tiene padre ni madre sino tres He has neither father nor mother. but three brothers.

hermanos.

325. The conjunction y, and, takes the form e when the word which follows it begins with i or hi:

Algodón é hilo.

Cotton and thread.

Fuerte é invencible.

Strong and invincible.

326. The conjunction 6, or, becomes a before words beginning with o or ho:

Estos ú otros, mujer ú hombre.

These or others, woman or man.

327. The following are the common conjunctions, formed with que and certain adverbs or prepositions:

Á fin de que, in order that. Como quiera que, however. A menos que, so, therefore, se Con que, unless. A no ser que, then. Antes que, before. Con motivo que, so that. Así que, so that, so. Con tal que, provided that. Aunque, Cuanto más que, the more since, although. Bien que, Dado que, in case that. Dado caso que, supposing that. Caso que, in case that.

De manera que, De modo que,	so that.	Para que, Por — que,	in order that. however.
De suerte que,		Porque,	because, in or-
Desde que,	since	•	der that.
Después que,	after.	Por más que,	however much.
En tanto que,	while, in case that.	Por menos que, { Por poco que, {	however little.
En vez de que,	instead of.	Pues que,	since.
Entre tanto que,	while.	Puesto que,	strice.
Excepto que,	excepting.	Sea que,	whether, while.
Hasta que,	until.	Siempre que,	whenever.
Luego que,	as soon as.	Sin que,	without.
Mientras que,	while.	Supuesto que,	since.
No obstante que,	notwithstand-	Tanto que,	so that.
	ing.	Ya que,	since.

THE INTERJECTION

828. The true interjections are those which are expressive of strong emotion:

¡Oh! ah! oh! ah!	¡Ola! or ¡hola! (recognition or
Ay! oh! alas! ah!	discovery), ah! oh!
¡ Ha! (exultation), ha! eh!	Puf! (aversion), ugh!
Ile! (shock, start), eh!	Uf! (weariness), oh!
¡ Ea! (encouragement), come!	; Ca! and ; quia! (expressive of
Ea! (impatience), come now!	indignant negation or doubt).
Huy! (pain, shock), oh! dear	¡Cáspita! zounds!
me!	Chiton! hist! hush!
	Ojalá! would that! Oh that!

329. There are certain idle or profane terms which are very common among all the Spanish classes, but which need not be included in a work of this kind.

330. The principles of syntax are amply stated and illustrated in the Method. To it the student is directed for further elucidation of the rules laid down in the Elements.

ALPHABETICAL REFERENCE LIST OF ALL THE IRREGULAR VERBS

	A	Section	[Section.
abastecer	like carecer,	201, b.	afollar	like acostar,	234, a.
abnegar	" acertar,	232, a.	aforar	" acostar.	234, a.
aborrecer	" carecer,	201, b.	agorar	" acostar.	234, a.
absolver	" mover,	235, a.	agradecer	" carecer.	201, b.
absonar	" acostar,	234, a.	aguerrir	" pedir.	238, a.
a batemerse	" tener,	182.	alebrarse	" acertar.	232, a.
abstraer	" traer,	263.	alentar	" acertar.	232, a.
abuñolar	" acostar,	234, a.	aliquebrar	" acertar,	232, a.
acaecer	201, b;	222.	almorsar	200, a;	234, a.
acertar		232, a.	alongar	198, b;	234, a.
aclocar	" acostar,	234, a.	amanecer	" carecer,	201, b.
acollar	" acostar,	234, a.	amoblar	" acostar,	234, a.
acontecer	201, b;	222.	amolar	" acostar,	234, a.
acordar	" acostar,	234, a.	amollecer	" carecer,	201, b.
acornar	" acostar,	234, a.	amorecer	" carecer,	201, b.
acostar		234, a.	amortecer	" carecer,	201, b.
acrecentar	" acertar,	232, a.	amover	" mover,	235, a.
acrecer	" carecer,	201, b.	andar		242.
adecentar	" acertar,	232, a.	anochecer	" carecer,	201, b.
adestrar	" acertar,	232, a.	antedecir	" decir,	248.
adherir	" sentir,	237, a.	anteponer	" poner,	258.
adolecer	" carecer,	201, b.	antever	" ver,	266.
adormecer	" carecer,	201, b.	apacentar	" acertar,	232, a.
adormir	" dormir,	249.	aparecer	" carecer,	201, b.
adquirir		241.	apercollar	" acostar,	234, a.
aducir	" conducir,	239, a.	apernar	" acertar,	282, a.
advertir	" sentir,	237, a.	apetecer	" carecer,	201, ð.
				442	

		Section	1	C	Section
apostar	like acostar,	234, a.	caber		245.
apretar	" acertar,	232, a.	caer	see traer,	263.
aprobar	" acostar,	234, a.	calentar	like acertar,	232, a.
argüír	. *	205, b.	canecer	" carecer,	201, b.
arrecirse	" pedir,	238, a.	CATCCCT		201, b.
arrendar	" acertar,	232, a.	cegar	" acertar,	232, a.
arrepentirse	" sentir,	237, a.	ceñir	" pedir,	238, a.
ascender	" atender,	286, a.	cerner	" atender,	236, a.
asentar	" acertar,	232, a.	certar	" acertar,	232, a.
asentir	" sentir,	237, a.	cimentar	" acertar,	232, a.
aserrar	" acertar,	232, a.	circuir	" construi	r, 205, a.
asir		243.	clarecer	" carecer,	201, b.
asolar	" acostar,	234, a.	clocar	" acostar,	234, a.
asoldar	" acostar,	234 , <i>a</i> .	cocer		246 .
asonar	" acostar,	234, a.	colar	" acostar,	234, a.
asosegar	" acertar,	232, a.	colegir	202, b	
atañer	" tañer,	204, b.	colgar	" acostar,	234, a.
atender		236, a.	comedir	" pedir,	238, a.
atenerse	" tener,	182.	comenzar	" acertar,	232, a.
atentar	" acertar,	232, a.	compadecer	" carecer,	201, b.
aterirse	" pedir,	238, a.	comparecer	" carecer,	201, b.
aterrar	" acertar,	232, a.	competir	" pedir,	238, a.
atestar	" acertar,	232, a.	complacer	" placer,	267, a.
atraer	" traer,	263.	complañir	" plañir,	204, c.
atravesar	" acertar,	232, a.	componer	" poner,	258.
atribuir	" construit		comprobar	" acostar,	234, a.
atronar	" acostar,	234, a.	concebir	" pedir,	238, a.
avalentar	, " acertar,	232, a.	concernir		267, c.
avanecerse	" carecer,	201, b.	concertar	" acertar,	232, a.
avenir,	" venir,	265.	concluir	" construi	
aventar	" acertar,	232, a.	concordar	" acostar,	284, a.
avergonsar	" acostar,	234, a.	condescender	•	236, a.
azolar	" acostar,	234, a.	condolerse	" mover,	235, a.
			conducir	u	239, a. 238, a.
1 1 <i>t</i>	В	044	conferir	" pedir, " acertar.	•
bendecir	1:1	244.	confesar	" acertar, " construi	282, a.
bienquerer	like querer,	249.	confluir	" mover.	285, a.
blanquecer	<i>car cccr</i> ,	201, b.	conmover	THU VET,	201, c.
bregar benäin	acci tai,	282, a.	concoer	" distingui	
bruñir b-114-	" plañir, " mullir.	204, c.	conseguir	" sentir,	237, a.
bullir	- muutr,	204, a.	COURCILITY	8674177,	201,04

		•	Section	,			Section
consolar	lika	acostar.	234. a.	denostar	like	acostar,	234, a.
CODEGRAT		acostar,	234, a.	dentar		acertar,	232, a.
constituir		construir.	'	deponer		poner,	25 8.
oenstrežir		pedir,	238, a.	derrenegar	46	acertar.	282, a.
oenstruir		pour,	205, a.	derrengar	66	acertar.	282, a.
contar	66	acostar,	284. a.	derretir		pedir,	238, a.
contender		atender,	236, a.	derrocar		acostar,	284, a.
contener		tener.	182.	derruir	"	construir.	
contorograe		200, a;		desabastecer	66	carecer.	201, b.
contracordar	"	acostar,	234, a.	desacertar		acertar.	282, a.
contradecir		decir,	248.	desacollar	66	acostar,	234, a.
contract		traer.	263.	desacordar		acostar,	234, a.
contrahacer		hacer,	252.	desadormecer		carecer,	201, b.
contraponer		poner,	258.	desadvertir		sentir,	237, a.
contravenir		venir.	265.	desaferrar	66	acertar,	232, a.
contribuir		construir,	205, a.	desaforar	66	acostar,	234, a.
controvertir	"	sentir.	237, a.	desagradecer		carecer,	201, b.
convalecer	66	carecer,	201, b.	desalentar	66	acertar,	232, a.
convenir	46	venir,	265.	desamoblar		acostar,	234, a.
convertir	66	sentir,	237, a.	desandar	"	andar,	242.
corregir		202, b;	238, a.	desaparecer	66	carecer,	201, b.
COLLOGI	66	roer,	267, b,	desapretar		acertar,	232, a.
costar	"	acostar,	234, a.	desaprobar		acostar,	234, a.
crecer		carecer,	201, b.	desarrendar		acertar,	232, a.
creer	"	leer,	205, c.	desasentar		acertar,	232, a.
				desasir	"	asir,	243.
	I)		desasosegar		acertar,	232, a.
dar			247.	desatender		atender,	236, a.
decaer	like	traer,	263.	desatentar		acertar,	232, a.
decentar	. "	acertar,	232, a.	desaterrar		acertar,	232, a.
decir			248.	desatraer		traer,	263.
decrecer			201, b.	desatravesar		acertar,	232, a.
deducir		conducir,		desavenir		venir,	265.
defender	66	atender,	236, a.	desaventar		acertar,	232, a.
defenecer	"	carecer,	201, b.	desbastecer		carecer,	201, b.
deferir	66	pedir,	238, a.	desbravecer		carecer,	201, b.
degollar	"	acostar,	234, a.	descabullirse		mullir,	204, a.
demoler		mover,	235, a.	descaecer		carecer,	201, b.
demostrar		acostar,	234, a.	descender		atender,	236, a.
denegar		acertar,	282, a.	desceñir		pedir,	238, a.
denegreeer	•	carecer,	201, b.	descolgar	••	acostar,	284, a

	Section	1	Section
descoliar like acostar,	234, a.	desflocar like acostar,	234, a.
descomedirse " pedir,	238, a.	desflorecer " carecer,	201, b.
descomponer " poner,	258.	desfortalecer " carecer,	201, b.
desconcertar " acertar,	232, a.	desgobernar " acertar,	232, a.
desconocer " conocer,	201, c.	desguarnecer " carecer,	201, b.
desconsentir " sentir,	237, a.	deshacer " hacer,	252.
desconsolar " acostar,	234, a.	deshelar " acertar,	232, a.
descontar " acostar,	234, a.	desherbar " acertar,	232, a.
desconvenir " venir,	265.	desherrar " acertar,	232, a.
descordar " acostar,	234, a.	deshombrecerse " carecer,	201, b.
descornar " acostar,	234, a.	deshumedecer " carecer,	201, b.
descrecer " carecer,	201, b.	desimponer " poner,	258.
desdar " dar,	247.	desinvernar " acertar,	232, a.
desdecir " decir,	248.	desleir " reir,	26 0.
desdentar " acertar,	232, a.	deslendrar " ucertar,	232, a.
desembebeoarse " carecer,	201, b.	,	201, d.
desembellecer "carecer,	201, b.		234, a.
desembravecer " carecer,	201, b.		238, a.
desempedrar " acertar,	232, a.	desmelar " acertar,	232, a.
desempobrecer " carecer,	201, b.	1	232, a.
desencarecer " carecer,	201, b.	,	237, a.
desencerrar " acertar,	232, a.	desmerecer " carecer,	201, b.
desencordar " acostar,	234, a.	1	204, a.
desencrudecer " carecer,	20 1, b.	, ,	232, a.
desencruelecer " carecer,	201, b.	desnevar " nevar,	218.
desenfurecerse " carecer,	201, b.	,,	201, b.
desengrosar " acostar,	234, a.		255.
desenmohecer "carecer,	201, b.		234, a.
desenmudecer " carecer,	201, b.	, ,	234, a.
desensoberbecer" carecer,	201, b.	desollar "acostar,	234, a.
desentenderse " atender,	236, a.	desobstruir "construir,	
desenterrar " acertar,	232, a.	desosar "acostar,	234, a.
desentorpecer " carecer,	201, b.		234, a.
desentristecer " carecer,	201, b.		201, b.
desentumecer " carecer,	201, b.	despedir " pedir,	238, a.
desenvolver " mover,	235, a.	,	232, a.
deservir " sentir,	237, a.		201, b.
desfallecer "carecer,	201, b.	despernar "acertar,	232, a.
desfavorecer " carecer,	201, b.	despertar decrear,	282, a.
desferrar " acertar,	232, a.	despezar "acertar,	232, <i>a</i> .
desflaquecerse " carecer,	201, b.	desplacer " hacer,	201, a.

				Section	ı	1	2	Section	
	desplogar l	iba	acertar.	232, a.	educir	lika	conducir,		
	despoblar		acostar.	234, a.	elegir	11110	202, b;		,
	desproveer	"	leer,	205, c.	embarbecer	44		201, b.	
	destentar	"	acertar.	232, a.	embastecer	46	carecer.	201, b.	
	desteñir		pedir.	238, a.	embebecer	"	carecer.	201, b.	
	desterrar	66	acertar.	232, a.	embellecer	66	carecer,	201, b.	
	destituir	66	construir,		embermejecer	. "	carecer,	201, b.	
	destoreer	66	mover,	235, a.	embestir	"	sentir,	287, a.	
	destrocar	66	acostar.	234, a.	emblandecer	66	carecer.	201, b.	
	destruir	66	construir,	•	emblanquecer	. "	carecer,	201, b.	
	desvanecer	66	carecer,	201, b.	embobecer	66	carecer,	201, b.	
	desventer	66	acertar.	232, a.	embosquecer	"	carecer.	201, b.	
	desverdecer	"	carecer.	201, b.	embravecer	66	carecer.	201, b.	
	desvergonzars	"	acostar.	234, a.	embrutecer	66	carecer.	201, b.	
	desvolver	66	mover,	235, a.	emparentar	66	acertar.	232, a.	
	detener	66	tener,	182.	empedernir	66	sentir,	237, a.	
	detraer	66	traer,	263.	empedrar	66	acertar,	232, a.	
	devolver	"	mover,	235, a.	empellar	66	acertar,	232, a.	
	dezmar	66	acertar,	232, a.	empequeñecer	"	carecer,	201, b.	
	diferir	"	pedir,	238, a.	empezar	"	acertar,	232, a.	
	difluir	"	construir,	205, a.	emplastecer	"	carecer,	201, b.	
	digerir	"	sentir,	237, a.	emplumecer	′"	carecer,	201, b.	
	diluir	"	construir,		empobrecer	"	carecer,	201, b.	
	discerner	66	atender,	236, a.	empodrecer	"	carecer,	201, b.	
	discernir	"	sentir,	237, a.	empoltroneces		carecer,	201, b.	
	disconvenir	66	venir,	265.	emporcar	"	acostar,	234, a.	
	discordar	66	acostar,	284, a.	enaltecer	"	carecer,	201, b.	
	disentir	"	sentir,	237, a.	enardecer	"	carecer,	201, b.	
	disminuir	"	construir,		encabellecers	-	carecer,	201, b.	
	disolver	"	mover,	235, a.	encalvecer	"	carecer,	201, b.	
	disonar	"	acostar,	234, a.	encallecer	"	carecer,	201, b.	
	dispertar	"	acertar,	232, a.	encandecer	"	carecer,	201, b.	
	displacer	"	nacer,	201, a.	encanecer	"	carecer,	201 , <i>b</i> .	
	disponer	"	poner,	258.	encarecer		carecer,	201, b.	
	distander	"	atender,	236, a.	encarnecer	"	carecer,	201, b.	
	distraer distribuir	"	traer,	263.	encender		atender,	236, a.	
	divertir	"	construir,	,	encentar	"	acertar,	232, a.	
1	doler	"	sentir,	237, a.	encerrar	"	acertar,	232, a.	
	dormir		mover,	235, a.	enclocar	"	acostar,	234, a.	
	MAT HITTE			249.	encloquecer	"	carecer,	201, L	

		Section	I		Section
encomendar like	acertar,	282, a.	ennoblecer	like carecer,	201, b.
encontrar "	acostar,	234, a.	ennudecer	" carecer,	201, b.
encorar "	acostar,	234, a.	enorgullecer	" carecer,	201, b.
encordar "	acostar,	234, a.	entarecer	" carecer,	201, b.
encorecer "	carecer,	201, b.	enriquecer	" carecer,	201, b.
encornar "	acostar,	234, a.	enrobustecer	" carecer,	201, b.
encovar "	acostar,	234, a.	enrodar	" acostar,	234, a.
encrudecer "	carecer,	201, b.	enrojecer	" carecer,	201, b.
encruelecer "	carecer,	201, b.	enronquecer	" carecer,	201, b.
encubertar "	acertar,	282, a.	enroñecer	" carecer,	201, b.
endentar "	acertar,	232, a.	enruinecerse	" carecer,	201, b.
endentecer "	carecer,	201, b.	ensalmorar	" acostar,	234, a.
endurecer "	carecer,	201, b.	ensandecer	" carecer,	201, b.
enflerecerse "	carecer,	201, b.	ensangrentar	" acertar,	232, a.
enflaquecer "	carecer,	201, b.	ensoberbecer	" carecer,	201, b.
enfranquecer "	carecer,	201, b.	ensoñar	" acostar,	234, a.
enfurecer "	carecer,	20 1, b.	ensordecer	" carecer,	201, b.
engorar "	acostar,	234, a.	entallecer	" carecer,	201, b.
engrandecer "	carecer,	201, b.	entender	" atender,	236, a.
engreirse "	reir,	260.	entenebrecer	" carecer,	201, b.
engrosar "	acostar,	234, a.	enternecer	" carecer,	201, b.
engrumecerse "	carecer,	201, b.	enterrar	" acertar,	232, a.
engullir "	mullir,	204, a.	entigrecerse	" carecer,	201, b.
enhambrecer "	carecer,	201, b.	entontecer	" carecer,	201, b.
enhambrentar "	acertar,	232, a.	entorpecer	" carecer,	201 , b.
enhestar "	acertar,	232, a.	entortar	" acostar,	234, a.
enlenzar "	acertar,	232, a.	entredecir	" decir,	248 .
enloquecer "	carecer,	201, b.	entregerir	" pedir,	238, a.
enlucir "	lucir,	201, d.	entrelucir	" lucir,	201, đ.
enllentecer "	carecer,	201, b.	entremorir 1	" dormir,	249.
enmagrecer "	carecer,	201, b.	entreoir	" oir,	255.
enmalecer "	carecer,	201, b.	entreparecers	,	201, b.
enmarillecerse "	carecer,	201, b.	entrepernar	" acertar,	232, a.
enmelar "	acertar,	232, a.	entreponer	" poner,	258.
enmendar "	acertar,	232, a.	entretener	" tener,	182.
enmohecer "	carecer,	201, b.	entrever	" ver,	266.
enmollecer "	carecer,	201, b.	entristecer	" carecer,	201, b.
enmudecer "	carecer,	201, b.	entullecer	" carecer,	201, b.
ennegreeer "	carecer,	201, b.	entumecer	" carecer,	201, b.

¹ Except that the past participle is irregular, entremuerto.

		Section	Ī		Section
envanecer	like carecer,	201, b.	fregar	like acertar,	232, a.
envejecer	" carecer,	201, b.	freir	" reir,	260.
enverdeeer	" carecer,	201, b.		_	
envestir	" sentir,	237, a.		G	
envilecer	" carecer,	201, b.	gañir	like <i>plaftir</i> ,	204, c.
envolver	" mover,	235, a.	gemeeer	" carecer,	201, b.
ensurdecer	" carecer,	201, b.	gemir	" pedir,	238, a.
equivaler	" valer,	264.	gobernar	" acertar,	232, a.
erguir		250.	gruir	" construit	
ertar		251.	gruñir	" plañir,	204, c.
escabullirse	" mullir,	204, a.	guañir	" plañir,	204, c.
escandecer	" carecer,	201, b.	guarecer	" carecer,	201, b.
escarmentar	" acertar,	232, a.	guarnecer	" carecer,	201, b.
escarnecer	" carecer,	201, b.			
esclarecer	" carecer,	201, b.		H	
escocer	" cocer,	246.	haber		182.
escolar	" acosta r ,	234, a.	hacendar	like <i>acertar</i> ,	232, a.
esforzar	" acostar,	234, a.	hacer		252.
establecer	" carecer,	201, b.	heder	" atender,	236, a.
estar		182.	helar	" acertar,	232, a.
estatuir	" construi		henchir		237, a.
estregar	" acertar,	232, a.	hender	" atender,	236, a.
estremecer	" carecer,	201, b.	heñir	" pedir,	238, a.
estreñir	" pedir,	238, a.	herbar	" acertar,	232, a.
excluir	" construi		herbecer	" carecer,	201, <i>b</i> .
expedir	" pedir,	238, a.	herir	" pedir,	238, a.
exponer	" poner,	258.	herrar	" acertar,	232, a.
extender	" atender,		hervir	" sentir,	237, a.
extraer	" traer,	263.	holgar	" acostar,	234, a.
extreñir	" pedir,	238, a.	hollar	" acostar,	234, a.
	72		huir	" construi	
		004 7	humedecer	" carecer,	201, b.
fallecer	like carecer,	201, b.		I	
favorecer	" carecer,	201, b.	1		
fenecer	" carecer,	201, b.	imbuir	like construir	
ferrar	" acertar,	232, a.	impedir	" pedir,	238, a.
florecer	" carecer,	201, b.	imponer	" poner,	258.
fluir	" construi		improbar	" acostar,	284, a.
follar	" acostar,		incensar	" acertar,	232, a.
fortalecer	" carecer,	201, b.	incluir	" construi	
formar	" acostar,	234, a.	indisponer	" poner,	258.

Section inducir like conducir, 239, a.	managemen like	section
• •	mancornar like ac	ostar, 234, a.
inferir " pedir, 238, a.		ertar, 232, a.
infernar " acertar, 232, a.		ner, 182.
influir " construir, 205, a.		ncer, 200, a.
ingerir " pedir, 238, a.		dir, 238, a.
inhestar "acertar, 232, a.	melar "ac	ertar, 232. a.
inquirir " adquirir, 241.		ertar, 232, a.
inseguir "distinguir, 203, a.	mentir " se	ntir, 237, a.
instituir " construir, 205, a.	merecer " ca	recer, 201, b.
instruir " construir, 205, a.		ertar, 232, a.
interdecir " decir, 248.	moblar " ac	ostar, 234, a.
interponer "poner, 258.		recer, 201, b.
intervenir "venir, 265.	moler " me	over, 235, a.
introducir " conducir, 239, a.		over, 235, a.
invernar " acertar, 232, a.	morir 1 " do	rmir, 249.
invertir " sentir, 237, a.	mostrar " ac	ostar, 234, a.
investir "sentir, 237, a.	mover	235, a.
ir 253.	muir " con	nstruir, 205, a.
1	mullir	204, a.
jimensar like acertar, 232, a.	muñir " plo	añir, 204, c.
jugar 254.	n ·	
L		
-	nacer	201, a.
languidecer like carecer, 201, b.	negar like acc	
leer 205, c.		recer, 201, b.
liquefacer "hacer, 252.	nevar	218.
lobreguecer "carecer, 201, b.	. 0	
luir 201, d.	obedecer like can	
luir " construir, 205, a.		recer, 201, b.
~ 1	obstruir " coa	nstruir,205, a.
· 11	obtener " ter	
llover 219.		recer, 201, b.
×	oir	255.
-	oler	256.
	oponer " po	ner, 258.
power, 200, a.	_	
2 1 200.	P	
\$ \$00 to tall, \$ \$0.50 to tall.	pacer like na	
maltraer "traer, 263.	padecer " can	recer, 201, b.

¹ Except that the past participle is irregular, muerto.

		Section	1	Section
palidecer	like carecer,	201, b.	prostituir	like construir, 205, a.
parecer	" carecer,	201, b.	proveer	" leer, 205, c.
pedir	·	238, a.	provenir	" venir, 265.
pensar	" acertār,	232, a.	pudrir, p. p.	only irr., podrido.
perder	" atender,	236, a.		
perecer	" carecer,	201, b.		Q
permanecer	" carecer,	201, b.	quebrar	like acertar, 232, a.
perniquebrar	" acertar,	232, a.	querer	259.
perseguir	203, a;	238, a.		
pertenecer	" carecer,	201, b.		R
pervertir	" sentir,	237, a.	reer	like traer, 263.
pimpellecer	" carecer,	201, b.	rarefacer	" hacer, 252.
placer		267, a.	reagradecer	" carecer, 201, b.
plañir		204, c.	reaparecer	" carecer, 201, b.
plastecer	" carecer,	201, b.	reapretar	" acertar, 232, a.
plegar	" acertar,	232, a.	reaventar	" acertar, 232, a.
poblar	" acostar,	234, a.	rebendecir	" bendecir, 244.
poder		257.	reblandecer	" carecer, 201, b.
podrecer	" carecer,	201, b.	rebullirse	" mullir, 204, a.
poner		258.	recaer	" traer, 263.
poseer	" leer,	205, c.	recalentar	" acertar, 232, a.
posponer	" poner,	258.	recentar	" acertar, 232, a.
preconocer	" conocer,	201, c.	receñir	" pedir, 238, a.
predecir	" decir,	248 .	recluir	" construir, 205, a.
predisponer	" poner,	258.	recocer	" cocer, 246.
preferir	" pedir,	238, a.	recolar	" acostar, 234, a.
prelucir	" lucir,	201, d.	recolegir	202, b; 238, a.
premorir	" dormir,	249.	recomendar	" acertar, 232, a.
preponer	" poner,	258.	recomponer	" poner, 258.
presentir	" sentir,	237, a.	reconducir	" conducir, 239, a.
presuponer	" poner,	258.	reconcer	" conocer, 201, c.
prevalecer	" carecer,	201, b.	reconstruir	" construir,205, a.
prevaler	" valer,	264.	recontar	" acostar, 234, a.
prevenir	" venir,	265 .	reconvalecer	" carecer, 201, b.
prever	" ver,	26 6.	reconvenir	" venir, 265.
probar	" acostar,	234, a.	recordar	" acostar, 234, a.
producir	" conducir	, ,	recostar	" acostar, 284, a.
proferir	" pedir,	238, a.	recreoer	" carecer, 201, b.
promover	" mover,	235, a.	recrudecer	" carecer, 201. b.
proponer	" poner,	258.	redargüir	" argūir, 205. b.
proseguir	203, a ;	238, a,	redoler	" mover, 285, a

- mover, 385, Digitized by Google

			Section	1			Section
reducir l	ike	conducir,	•	repedir		pedir,	238, a.
reelegir		202, b;	238, a.	repensar		acertar,	282, a.
reencomendar		acertar,	232, a.	repetir		pedir,	288, a.
referir		pedir,	238, a.	replegar		acertar,	282, a.
reflorecer	"	carecer,	201, b.	repoblar	"	a costar,	284, a.
refluir	66	construir		reponer		poner,	25 8.
reformar		198, c;		reprobar		acostar,	284, a.
refregar		acertar,	232, a.	reproducir	44	conducir,	239, a.
refreir		reir,	260.	repudrir, reg	g. exc	. p. p., <i>rep</i> e	odrido.
regañir		plañir,	204, c.	requebrar	like	acertar,	232, a.
regar	46	acci iai,	232, a.	requerer		querer,	259.
regimentar	66	acertar,	232, a.	requerir		pedir,	238, a.
regir		202, b;	238, a.	resaber		saber,	261.
regeldar	"	acostar,	234, a.	resalir		salir,	261,
regruñir		plañir,	204, c.	resegar	"	acertar,	282, a.
rehacer	"	hacer,	252.	resembrar	"	acertar,	232, a.
rehenchir	66	henchir,	204, d.	resentirse	66	sentir,	237, a.
reherir	"	pedir,	238, a	resolver	66	mover,	235, a.
reherrar	66	acertar,	232, a.	resollar		204, a;	234, a.
rehervir	66	sentir,	237, a.	resonar	"	acostar,	234, a.
rehollar		204, a;	234, a.	resplandecer	66	carecer,	201, b.
rehuir	"	construir,	205, a.	resquebrar	66	acertar,	232, a.
rehumedecer	. "	carecer,	201, b.	restablecer		carecer,	201, b.
reir			260.	restituir		construir	,205, a.
rejuvenocer	"	carecer,	201, b.	restregar	"	acertar,	232, a.
relentecer	66	carecer,	201, b.	restriñir		204, c;	241.
relucir	"	lucir,	201, d.	retallecer		carecer,	201, b.
/ remendar	"	acertar,	232, a.1	retemblar		acertar,	232, a.
rementir	66	sentir,	237, a.	retener		tener,	182.
remolar	"	acostar,	234, a.	retentar	"	acertar,	232, a.
remoler	"	mover,	235, a.	reteñir		204, c;	
remorder	66	mover,	235, a.	retiñir		204 , c;	
remover	"	mover,	235, a.	retonecer	66	carecer,	201, b.
remullir	"	mullir,	204, a.	retorcer		201, c;	
renacer	"	nacer,	201, a.	retostar		acosta r ,	234, a.
rendir	"	sentir,	237, a.	retract		traer,	268.
renegar	"	acertar,	232, a.	retribuir	"	0074001 4177	
renovar	"	acostar.	234, a.	retronar		costar,	284, a.
reñir		204. c;	238, a.	retrotraer		traer,	268.
repacer	66	nacer,	201, a.	revejecer		carecer,	201, b.
repadeoer	"	carecer,	201, b.	revenirse	- "	venir,	265,

 $\mathsf{Digitized} \ \mathsf{by} \ Google$

			•	Section	•			Section
	reventar	lika	acertar,	232, a.	sobrevestir	like	sentir.	237, a.
	TOVOIL CALL		ver,	266.	sofreir		reir,	260.
	reverdecer		carecer,	201, b.	solar		acostar,	234, a.
	reverter		atender,	236, a.	soldar		acostar,	234, a.
	revestir	"	sentir.	237, a.	soler		,	267, d.
	revolar	66	acostar,	234, a.	soltar	"	acostar,	234, a.
	revolcarse		198, a;		(solver)		mover,	235, a.
	revolver	44	mover,	235, a.	sollar		204, a:	234, a.
	robustecer		carecer.	201, b.	somever	"	mover,	235, a.
	rodar		acostar,	234, a.	soñar		acostar,	234, a.
	roer		,	267, a.	sonreir		reir,	260.
	rogar		\ 198, b;	234, a.	sonrodarse	"		234, a.
				•	sonar	"	acostar,	234, a.
		•	,		sorregar		acertar,	232, a.
	saber			261.	sosegar	66	acertar,	232, a.
	salir			262.	sostener	"	tener,	182.
	salpimentar	like	acertar,	232, a.	soterrar	66	acertar,	232, a.
	salpullir	66	mullir,	204, a.	subarrendar	46	acertar,	232, a.
	sarmentar	66	acertar,	232, a.	subentender	"	atender,	236, a.
	sarpullir	66	mullir,	204, a.	subseguir		203, a;	
	satisfacer	66	hacer,	252.	substituir		construir,	,205, a.
	segar	66	acertar,	232, a.	substraer		traer,	263.
X	seguir		203, a;	238, a.	subtender		atender,	236, a.
	sembrar	"	acertàr,	232, a.	subvenir		venir,	265.
	sementar		acertar,	232, a.	subvertir		sentir,	237, a.
	sontar	"	acertar,	232, a.	sugerir		pedir,	238, a.
	sentir			237, a.	superponer		poner,	258.
	ser			182.	supervenir		venir,	265.
	SETTAT	"	acertar,	232, a.	suponer		poner,	258.
	servir		sentir,	237, a.	sustituir	••	construir,	,205, a.
	simensar		acertar,	232, a.		9	,	
	sobrecrecer	" "	carecer,	201, b.	4-33		-	001 1
	sobreentende	•	atender,	236, a.	tallecer	IIKe	carecer,	201, b.
	sobrentender		atender,	236, a.	tañer	"		204, b.
	sobreponer	"	poner,	258.	temblar		acertar,	232, a.
	sobresalir		salir,	262.	tender		atender,	286, a. 182.
	sobresembras	•	acertar,	232, a.	tener	66	acertar,	232, a.
	sobresolar sobrevenir		acostar,	234, a.	tentar teñir		204, c;	
	sobrevenir		venir,	265.	-		201, c;	
	sobreventar		acertar, atender,	232, a. 236, a.	toreer tostar	"	acostar,	234, a.
	MANUAL MOLEN	, "	wenuer,	200, a.	CONTRACT.	.•	ucostur,	~UZ, W

		ection	İ		.
traduoir	like conducir, 2	89, a.		▼	Section
traer	20	6 3.	valer		264 .
transcender	" atender, 2	36, a.	venir		26 5.
transfregar	" acertar, 2	82, a.	ventar	like acertar,	232, a.
transponer	" poner, 2	58.	ver		266 .
trascender	" atender, 2	8 6 , a.	verdecer	" carecer,	201, b.
trascolar	" acostar, 2	84, a.	verter	" atender,	236, a.
trascordarse	" acostar, 2	84, a.	vestir	" sentir,	237, a.
trasegar	" acertar, 2	32, a.	volar	" acostar,	234, a.
traslucirse	" lucir, 2	01, d.	volcar	198, a;	234, a.
trasoir	" oir, 2	55.	Aojael	" mover,	235, a.
trasoñar	" acostar, 2	84, a.	1		
trasponer	" poner, 2	58.		¥	
trastrocar	198, a; 2	84, a.	•	1	
trasverter	" atender, 2	8 6 , a.	yacer		201, f.
trasvolar	" acostar, 2	34, a.	yuxtaponer	like <i>poner</i> ,	25 8.
travecar	" acertar, 2	32, a.			
trocar	198, a; 2	34, a.		Z	
tronar	" acostar, 2	84, a.		4	
tropesar	" acertar, 2	32, a.	zabullir	like <i>mullir</i> ,	204, a.
tullir	" mullir, 2	0 4 , a.	zaherir	" pedir,	238, a.
tumefacerse	" hacer, 2	52.	sambullir	" mullir,	204, a.

INDEX

347. A : un, una, 38, 185, 846. Abbreviation of usted, 10, 25, 367. 847. About; cerca de, como, 114. Above; arriba, 124, 487. 124. ACCENTUATION, 7. Adjectives: Agreement, 27, 854. ADJECTIVES: APOCOPATION, 856. ADJECTIVES: COMPARISON, 95, 96, 858-862. ADJECTIVES: Position, 86, 857, 858. ADVERBS: COMPARISON, 96, 485, 486. ADVERBS: COMPLETE LIST, 431, 482. ADVERBS: POSITION, 98. After: después, después de, después que, 188, 487, 488. Afternoon; tarde, 78. Afterward; después, 146. 258. Again; otra vez, de nuevo, volver á, 240. Ago: 170. A good deal; muchisimo, 41, 484. A great deal; muchisimo, 41, 484. All; todo, 75, 882. Almost; casi, 114. Back of : detrás de, 167, 438. Alone; solo, 256. Bad: mal, malo, 11, 98, 862, Already; ya, 99. Badly : mal, malamente, 98. Always; siempre, 189, 481. Amid; entre, 280, 487. Among; entre, 230, 487. An; un, una, 38, 135, 346. And; y (changing to é before i or hi), 122. **Another**; otro, 44, 881. Any; algún, alguno, cualquiera, 36, 378, 379. Any: not translated, 85. Anybody; alguno, alguien, 22, 379. Both; ambos, uno y otro, los dos, 47, Any one: alguno, alguien, 22, 879.

Any other; algún otro, 45.

Anything; alguna cosa, algo, 18, 879.

ARTICLE: DECLENSION OF DEFINITE, ARTICLE: DECLENSION OF INDEFINITE. ARTICLE: DEFINITE: GENERAL USES. ARTICLE: INDEFINITE: WHEN OMIT-TED, 86. As; como, tan, 90, 182, 858. As—as ; tan—como, 90, 858. As far as ; hasta, 124. As for ; en cuanto á, 225. At last; al fin, al cabo, finalmente, 147. As many; tantos, 50, 436. As many as; tantos como, 50, 436. As much; tanto, 50, 486. As much as; tanto como, 50, 436. As soon as; luego que, así que, 146, As to; en cuanto á, 225. As well as ; tan bien como, 281. At home ; en casa, 58. B

Because; porque, 117, 441. Before ; antes, antes de, antes que, delante, delante de, por, 92, 172, 438. Behind; atrás, detrás, detrás de, 167, Below : bajo, abajo, debajo, debajo de, 111, 489. Beneath; bajo, debajo de, 111, 489. Besides ; además, además de, 207. Between; entre, 280, 487.

But (in the sense of only); sino, no más que or de, 40.

But: sino, pero, 24, 440. But little; sólo un poco, 42. By; por, junto á, 145, 489. By and by; luego, 167. By no means : de ningún modo, 240. By one's self; solo, por si solo, 256.

CAPITAL LETTERS, 7. CASE, 845. Concerning; en cuanto á, 225. CONJUNCTIONS, 440, 441. CONJUNCTIONS GOVERNING THE SUB-JUNCTIVE MODE, 292. Cuál more specific than qué, 129, 878.

D

Days of the week, 120. DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS: NEUTER, 104, 875. Determinative lo. 857. DIPHTHONGS, 6. DIRECT OBJECTIVE PRONOUNS, 67, 369. Distant; lejos, 175. DOUBLE LETTERS, 6. During; durante, mientras, 118.

Each; cada, todo, 150, 380. Each one; cada uno, 150, 380. Early; temprano, 99, 481. Enough: bastante, 41, 482. Even; aun, 940. Evening; noche, 105. Every; todo, cada, 75, 882. EXCLAMATORY PHRASES, 234.

Fairly well; bastante bien, tal cual, 194. Far; lejos, distante, 175, 432. Fast: ligero, 182. Few; unos pocos, unos cuantos, 41. Fewer; menos, 51, 859. Fewer than; menos que or de, 51, 859. Final: final, 98. Finally; finalmente, 98. For; por, para, 118, 489. Former; aquél, aquéllos, 31, 375. Formerly; anteriormente, 105. FRACTIONALS, 864.

From ; de, 9, 439. From the ; del, de la, de los, de las, 9. FUTURE PERFECT TENSE, 206. FUTURE TENSE, 159, 160, 412.

GENDER OF NOUNS INDICATED BY DIS-SIMILAR FORMS, 198, 852. Good; bueno, 11, 862.

H

Half; medio, mitad, 62. Hardly; apenas, 114. Have; haber, tener, 9, 101, 102, 388-387. He; 6l, 21, 66, 365. Her; le, la, su, su or el, la, lo, los or las de ella, suyo, 28, 66, 872. Here; aquí, acá, 75, 171, 488. Him; le, lo, 61, 66, 865. His; su, or el, la, lo, los or las de él, suyo, 22, 28, 372. His own; suyo propio, 22, 873. Hither: acá, 171, 483. Hour of the day, 62. How ? ¿ cómo ? 118. How far ? ¿ cuánta distancia ? ¿ hasta donde ? 124, 175. How long? ¿ cuánto tiempo? 118. How many? ¿ cuántos? 40. How much? ¿ cuánto? 40. How: not translated, 90.

How old? ¿ qué edad? ¿ cuántos años?

How often? ¿ cuántas veces? 105.

118.

I: yo, 10, 66, 365. IDIOMATIC EXPRESSIONS, 825-830. IDIOMS FORMED WITH Hacer, 208. If; si, 148, 440. IMPERATIVE MODE, 258, 259. IMPERFECT SUBJUNCTIVE, 215-217. IMPERFECT TENSE, 181, 211. IMPERSONAL USE OF Se, 121, 870. IMPERSONAL VERBS, 156, 247, 411, 412. In; en, &, 70, 487.

INDIRECT OBJECTIVE PRONOUNS, 67, 369. INFINITIVES USED AS SUBSTANTIVES, 100.

Inquiry after health, 165. Inside; dentro, interior, 111, 487. In spite of ; & pesar de, 254.

Instead of; en vez de, en lugar de, 84, 487.

In this manner; de este modo, 113. Into; en, á, 90, 438.

J

Just the same; cabalmente lo mismo, 98.

1

Last night; anoche, 182. Late; tarde, 76, 481. Lately; últimamente, 264.

Latter; éste, éstos, 81, 875.

Less; menos, 51, 858.

Less than; menos que or de, 51, 858,

359.

Little (a); un poco, 85.

Little by little; poco á poco, 122. Long time; largo tiempo, 119.

Loud: alto, 182.

M

Many; muchos, 41, 484.

Many times; muchas veces, 105.

MASOULINE ARTICLE WITH FEMININE Nouns, 204, 846.

Me ; me, mí, 64, 865.

Midday; mediodía, 62. Midnight; media noche, 62.

Mine; mío, 16, 872.

Models of Letters, 881-841.

More; más, 41, 485, 436.

Moreover; además, además de, 267.

More than; más que or de, 41, 486.

Morning; mañana, 78. Much; mucho, 41, 484. MULTIPLICATIVES, 865.

Must; haber de, tener que, deber de, 118.

My; mi, mio, 10, 28, 372.

N

Near; cerca, cerca de, junto á, 180, 482. Nearly; cerca de, como, 114. Neither; ni, 17, 440. Neither—nor; ni—ni, 17, 31. Night, noche, 105. No; no, ninguno, 11, 36, 381, 482. Nobody: ninguno, nadie, 22, 381.

None; ninguno, nadie, nada, 86, 881.

No one; ninguno, nadie, 22, 881.

No other; ningún otro, 44.

Nor; ni, 17, 440.

Not; no, 12, 482.

Not any; ninguno, 86, 881.

Not anybody; ninguno, nadie, 317, 381. Not any one; ninguno, nadie, 381.

Not anything; nada, ninguna cosa, 18, 381.

Not at all ; de ningún modo, 240.

Not even; ni aun, 240.

Nothing; ninguna cosa, nada, 13, 381.

Not many; no muchos, 42.

Not much; no mucho, 42.

Notwithstanding; sin embargo, no

obstante, 254.

Not yet; todavía no, aun no, 81, 99.

Nouns: Augmentative, 82, 88.

Nouns: Diminutive, 32, 33.

Nouns: Formation of the Plural, 26, 352-354.

20, 302-304

Nouns: Gender, 347.

Nouns terminating in ion, 204.

Now; ahora, ya, 78, 481.

NUMERAL ADJECTIVES, 38, 39, 42, 362-365.

0

O'clock; hora, 62.

Of; de, 4, 9, 84.

Often; & menudo, frecuentemente, 90, 481.

Oftener; más á menudo, 90.

Of the; del, de la, de lo, de los, de las, 9.

Omission of Nominative Personal Pronouns, 13, 42.

On ; en, sobre, 437.

Once; una vez, 105. One; uno, 38, 185, 346, 362, 382.

One's; uno, 88, 185, 846, 862, 882. One's; not translated, 189.

Only; sólo, solamente, 40. On purpose; & propósito, 276.

On that side; de or por aquel lado, 124

On the contrary; al contrario, 153.

On this side; de or por este lado, 194.

Or; 6, ú, 16, 440.

ORDINALS, 45, 363, 364. Other; otro, 44, 381.

Ought; deber, 128.

Our; nuestro, 28, 372.

Ours; nuestro, el nuestro, 31, 372. Over; sobre, encima de, 110, 487.

P

Participles, 78.
Passive Construction, 102, 408.
Passive Voice, 145, 408.
Past Participles, 101.
Past Perfect Subjunctive, 218.
Past Perfect Tense, 250.
Perfect Tense, 107.

Perhaps; quizá, acaso, tal vez, 235.
Personal Objective Case Preceded

By at, 59, 488.

Position of Negatives, 17. Possessive Case, 12.

Possessive Pronouns, 183, 184, 872-874.
Possessive Pronouns replaced by

THE DEFINITE ARTICLE, 87, 874.
PRESENT PARTICIPLES, 201.

PRETERIT TENSE, 215.

Pronouns: Emphatic Forms ending in self and selves, 239, 371.

PROPER ADJECTIVES, 85, 86.

PROPER NOUNS OF LATIN OR GREEK

PROPER NOUNS OF LATIN OR GREEK ORIGIN, 288, 289.

ч

Quarter; cuarto, 62. Quick; pronto, presto, ligero, 183. Quite as many; tantos, 51. Quite as much; tanto, 51.

R

Rather; más bien, antes, mejor que, 223.

Rather than; más bien que, antes que, 223.

Ready; pronto, listo, 189.

REFLEXIVE PRONOUNS, 75, 149, 870, 871.

REFLEXIVE VERBS, 148, 407.

Reflexive Verbs: Perfect Tense, 152.

RELATIVE PRONOUNS, 57, 69, 375-377.

9

SALUTATIONS, 196.
Same; mismo, 93, 130, 380.
Scarcely; apenas, 114.
Several; varios, algunos, 50, 383.
Several times; varias veces, 105.
She; ella, 66, 365.
Shortly; pronto, presto, 118.

Since; ya que, desde, pues que, puesto que, 70, 238, 441.

Sir; señor, caballero, 9.

Slow; despacio, lento, 182.

Slowly; despacio, lentamente, 182. So; tan, tanto, así, 113, 182, 432.

Some; algún, alguno, unos, unos cuantos, 36, 379.

Somebody; alguno, alguien, 22, 379. Some: not translated, 85.

Some one; alguno, alguien, 22, 379. Something; alguna cosa, algo, 18, 380, 381.

So much the less than; tanto menos que, 95.

So much the more than; tanto más que, 95.

Soon; temprano, pronto, 99, 118.

So so ; así así, 118.

So that; de modo que, de suerte que. 113.

Still; todavía, aun, 48, 54. Still more; todavía or aun más, 48. Subjunctive Mode: Future, 303, 304. Subjunctive Mode: Present, 291, 295.

296, 299-301. Such; tal, 212.

T

Than; que, 41, 51.
That; ese, aquel, que, 15, 25, 154, 374-

877, 440.

That of; el or la de, 15. That one; aquél, 24, 875.

That one that or which : el que, 25, 376, 877.

That which; el que, la que, 25, 376, 377. The; el, la, lo, los, las, 9, 26, 62, 132, 345-347.

Thee; te, ti, 365.

Their; su, sus, el, la, lo, los or las de ellos or ellas, suyo, 28, 872.

Theirs; suyo, el suyo, 81, 872.

Them; los, las, 34, 365.

Then; entonces, pues, 120, 481.

The ones that or which; los or las de, 28, 376, 377.

There: ahí, allí, allá, 61, 438.

Therefore; por tanto, por eso, 264. There to be; haber, 104, 164, 885.

These; estos, 28, 374, 375.

They; ellos, ellas, 85, 865. Thine: tuyo, el tuyo, 74, 872.

Thing; cosa, 212, This; este, 22, 374, 375. This one; éste, 24, 875. Thither; allá, 61, 433.

Those; esos, aquellos, los or las de, 28, 374-377.

Thou; tú, 9, 66, 865.

Through; por, por entre, 145, 489.

Thus: asi, 118, 482. Thy; tu, tuyo, 74, 872. Till; hasta, 120.

To ; á, para, 9, 68, 488. To be; ser, estar, 57, 58, 79.

To be able; poder, 64, 80. To be afraid; tener miedo, 16.

To be ashamed; tener verguenza, 14.

To be cold; tener frío, 16. To be hot; tener calor, 16.

To be hungry; tener hambre, 14.

To be necessary; ser menester, ser necesario, 127.

To be right; tener razón, 19.

To be sleepy; tener sueño, 14. To be thirsty; tener sed, 14.

To be willing; querer, 56.

To be wrong; no tener razón, hacer mal, 19.

To-day; hoy, hoy dia, 61, 481.

To do: hacer, 55, 79. To go; ir, 58, 75.

To have just; acabar de, 172.

To have made; mandar hacer, 111.

To have to; haber de, tener que, 67, 117, 385.

To her ; le, á ella, 64, 865.

To him; le, & él, 64, 365.

To know; saber, conocer, 64, 89, 108,

To like; gustar, 80.

To make; hacer, 55, 79. To me; me, & mí, 64. 865.

To-morrow; mañana, 61, 431.

Too many; demasiados, 41, 432. Too much; demasiado, 41, 482.

To please; gustar, 80.

To take place; celebrarse, 104.

To tell the age, 114.

To the ; al, á la, á lo, á los, á las, 9. Toward: hacia, á, para con, 136, 437.

To will; querer, 57.

To wish; querer, 56.

TRIPHTHONGS, 6. True; verdadero, 98.

Truly; verdaderamente, 98, 432.

Twice; dos veces, 105.

Under ; debajo, debajo de, 111, 489.

Until; hasta, 120.

Until when ? ¿ hasta cuándo ? 120. Upon ; sobre, encima, en, 110, 487.

Us; nos or nosotros preceded by a preposition, 365.

Verbs: Conjugation, 77, 78, 387.

Very ; muy, 97, 436.

We; nosotros, 42, 66, 865.

Well: bien, 93.

What? ; qué? ; cuál? 10, 878.

What; que, el que, el cual, lo que, 875.

What time? ¿qué hora? 62.

Whence; de dónde, 129, 483.

Where; donde, en donde, 59, 438.

Which ? ; qué ? ; cuál ? 28, 877, 878. Which; que, el que, el cual, lo que, 25,

28, 375, 377.

Which ones ? ¿ cuáles ? 28, 877, 878.

Who; quien, que, 21, 875-877. Who ? ¿ quién ? 21, 877, 878.

Whom ; que, quien, or el cual preceded by any preposition, 376, 877.

Whose ; de quien, cuyo, 58, 377.

Why ? ; por qué ? 117.

With: con, 115, 489.

Within; dentro, 111, 437.

With me; conmigo, 115.

Yes; si, 9, 432.

Yesterday; ayer, 105, 431.

You; usted, vosotros, os, le, la, lo, 9,

55, 66, 365.

Your; su, el, la, lo, los or las de usted, vuestro, 10, 28, 872.

Yours ; su, suyo, el suyo, vuestro, el vuestro, de usted, 16, 81, 372.



